

THE  
SECOND  
PART OF THE  
HISTORY OF THE  
Valorous and witty KNIGHT-  
ERRANT,

*Don Quixote of the Mancha.*

Written in Spanish by *Michael*  
*Cervantes* : And now Translated  
into English.



LONDON,  
Printed for *Edward Blount.*

1620.



TO THE RIGHT  
HONORABLE, GEORGE  
Marquesse Buckingham, Viscount  
VILLIERS, Baron of Whaddon, Lord High  
Admirall of England; Iustice in Eyre of all his Maie-  
sties Forrests, Parkes, and Chases beyond Trent, Master of the  
Horse to his Maiestie, and one of the Gentlemen of his Ma-  
iesties Bed-chamber, Knight of the most noble Order of the  
Garter, and one of his MAIESTIES most Honourable Privy  
Counsell of England and Scotland.

Right Noble Lord,



OVR humble ser-  
uant hath obseru'd  
in the multitude  
of books that haue  
past his hands, no  
small varietie of  
Dedications; and those seuerally sor-  
ted to their Presenters ends: Some,  
for the meere ambition of Great  
names; Others, for the desire, or need  
A 2 of

The Epistle Dedicatorie.

*of Protection; Many, to win Friends,  
and so fauour, and opinion; but Most,  
for the more sordid respect, Gaine.  
This humbly offers into your Lo: pre-  
sence, with none of these deformities:  
But as a bashfull stranger, newly ar-  
riued in English, 'hauing originally  
had the fortune to be borne commen-  
ded to a Grande of Spaine; and, by  
the way of translation, the grace to  
kisse the hands of a great Ladie of  
France, could not despaire of lesse  
courtesie in the Court of Great Brit-  
taine, then to bee receiued of your  
Lo: delight; his study being to swee-  
ten those short starts of your retire-  
ment from publique affaires, which  
so many, so vnseasonably, euen to mo-  
lestation trouble.*

By him who most truly honours,  
and humbly professes all duties  
to your Lordship.

Ed. Blount.



THE AVTHORS  
PROLOGVE TO THE  
READER.



NOW God defend! Reader, Noble or  
Plebeyan, what ere thou art: how  
earnestly must thou needs by this  
time expect this Prologue, suppo-  
sing that thou must find in it nothing  
but reuenge, brawling, and rayling  
vpon the Authour of the second *Don Quixote*, of  
whom I onely say as others say, that he was begot in  
*Tordesillas*, and borne in *Tarragona*? the truth is, here-  
in I meane not to giue thee content. Let it be neuer  
so generall a rule, that iniuries awaken and rouse vp  
choler in humble breasts, yet in mine must this rule ad-  
mit an exception: Thou, it may be, wouldst haue mee  
be-Asse him, be-madman him, and be-foole him, but  
no such matter can enter into my thought; no, let his  
owne rod whip him; as hee hath brewed, so let him  
bake; else where he shall haue it: and yet there is some-  
what which I cannot but resent, and that is, that he ex-  
probrates vnto me my age, and my<sup>a</sup> mayme, as if it<sup>a</sup> Helolt one  
had been in my power, to hold Time backe, that so it<sup>a</sup> of his hands.  
should not passe vpon mee, or if my mayme had be-  
A 3 false

*The Authors Prologue*

At the Battell of Lepanto.

falne me in a Tauerne, and not vpon the most famous  
<sup>b</sup> occasion which either the ages past or present haue  
 scene, nor may the times to come looke for the  
 like: If my wounds shine not in the eyes of such as  
 behold them; yet shall they be esteemed at least in  
 the iudgement of such as know how they were got-  
 ten. A Souldiour had rather be dead in the battell,  
 then free by running away: and so is it with me, that  
 should men set before me and facilitate an impossibi-  
 litie, I should rather haue desired to haue beene in  
 that prodigious action; then now to bee in a whole  
 skinne, free from my skarres, for not hauing been  
 in it. The skarres which a Souldiour shewes in his  
 face and brest, are starres which leade others to the  
 Heauen of Honor, & to the desire of iust praise: and  
 besides it may be noted, that it is not so much mens  
 pens which write, as their iudgements; and these vse  
 to be better'd with yeeres. Nor am I insensible of  
 his calling me Enuious, and describing me as an ig-  
 norant. What Enuy may be, I vow seriously, that  
 of those two sorts, that are; I skill not but of that Ho-  
 ly, Noble, and ingenuous Enuy, which being so, as  
 it is, I haue no meaning to abuse any Priest; especial-  
 ly, if he hath annexed vnto him the Title of *FAMILIAR*  
 of the Inquisition: and if he said so, as it seemes  
 by this second Author, that he did, he is viterly decei-  
 ued: For I adore his wit, admire his workes, and his  
 continuall vertuous employment; and yet in effect I  
 cannot but thanke this sweet Senior Author, for say-  
 ing that my Nouelles are more Satyrick, then Exem-  
 plar; and that yet they are good, which they could  
 not be, were they not so quite thorow. It seemes, thou.

tel-

*to the Reader.*

tellect me, that I write somewhat limited, and obscure-  
 ly, and containe my selfe within the bounds of my  
 modestie, as knowing, that a man ought not adde mi-  
 sery to him that is afflicted, which doubtlesse must  
 needs be very great in this Senior, since he dares not  
 appeare in open field, in the light, but conceales his  
 Name, faines his Countrey, as if hee had committed  
 some Treason against his King. Well, if thou chance  
 to light vpon him, and know him, tell him from mee,  
 that I hold my selfe no whit aggriued at him: for I  
 well know what the temptations of the Diuell are;  
 and one of the greatest is, when hee puts into a mans  
 head, that he is able to compose and print a booke,  
 whereby he shall gaine as much Fame as money, and  
 and as much money as Fame. For confirmation here-  
 of, I intreat thee, when thou art disposed to be merry  
 and pleasant, to tell him this Tale.

There was a Mad-man in Scuill, which hit vpon  
 one of the prettiest absurd tricks that euer mad-man  
 in this world lighted on, which was: Hee made him a  
 Cane sharpe at one end, and then catching a Dogge  
 in the street, or elsewhere, hee held fast one of the  
 Dogges legges vnder his foot, and the other hee held  
 vp with his hand. Then fitting his Cane as well as  
 he could, behinde, he fell a blowing till hee made the  
 Dogge as round as a Ball: and then, holding him  
 still in the same manner, hee gaue him two clappes  
 with his hand on the belly, and so let him goe, Say-  
 ing to those which stood by (which alwayes were ma-  
 ny) how thinke you, my Masters, Is it a small matter to  
 blow vp a Dogge like a Bladder? and how thinke  
 you, Is it a small labour to make a Booke? If this

A 4

Tale



*The Authors Prologue*

Tale should not fit him: then, good Reader, tell him this other; for this also is of a Mad-man and a Dog. In *Cordova* was another Mad-man, which was wont to carry on the top of his head, a huge piece of Marble, not of the lightest, who meeting a masterlesse Dogge, would stalke vp close to him: and on a sudden, downe with his burden vpon him: the Dogge would presently yearne, and barking and yelling run away, three streets could not hold him. It fell out afterwards among other Dogges (vpon whom hee let fall his load) there was a Cappers Dogge, which his Master made great account of, vpon whom hee let downe his great stone, and tooke him full on the head: the poore batter'd Currie cries pittifully. His Master spies it, and affected with it, gets a meat-yard, assaults the mad-man, and leaues him not a whole bone in his skinne; and at euery blow that he gaue him, he cries out, Thou Dogge, Thou Thiefe, my Spaniell! Saw'st thou not, thou cruell Villaine, that my Dogge was a Spaniell? And euer and anon repeating still his Spaniell, he sent away the Mad-man all blacke and blue. The Mad-man was terribly skarred herewith, but got away, and for more then a moneth after neuer came abroad: At last out hee comes with his inuention againe, and a bigger load then before: and comming where the Dogge stood, viewing him ouer and ouer againe very heedily; he had no minde, he durst not let goe the stone, but onely said, Take heed, this is a Spaniell. In fine, whatsoeuer Dogges he met, though they were Mastiffs or Fyting-Hounds, hee still said they were Spaniels. So that after that, he neuer durst throw his great Stone any more. And who knowes  
but

*to the Reader.*

but the same may befall this our Historian, that hee will no more let fall the prize of his wit in Bookes? for in being naught, they are harder then Rockes: tell him too, that for his menacing, that with his booke he will take away all my gaine; I care not a straw for him: but betaking my selfe to the famous Interlude of *Perendenga*: I answered him, Let the Old man my Master liue, and Christ bee with vs all. Long liue the great *Conde de Lemos* (whose Christianity and well-knowne Liberalitie against all the blowes of my short fortune, keepes me on foote) and long liue that eminent Charitie of the Cardinall of *Toledo*, *Don Bernardo de Sandoval y Rojas*. Were there no printing in the world, or were there as many Bookes printed against mee, as there are letters in the Rimes of *Mingo Revulgo*; these two Princes, without any sollicitation of flatterie, or any other kinde of applause, of their sole bounty haue taken vpon them to doe me good, and to fauour me, wherein I account my selfe more happy and rich, then if fortune, by some other ordinary way, had raised me to her highest: Honour, a Poore man may haue it, but a Vicious man cannot: Pouerty may cast a mist vpon Noblenes, but cannot altogether obscure it: but as the glimmering of any light of it selfe, though but thorow narrow chinkes and Cranyes, comes to be esteemed by high and Noble spirits, and consequently fauoured. Say no more to him; nor will I say any more to thee: but onely aduertise that thou consider, that this Second part of *Don Quixote*, which I offer thee, is framed by the same Art, and cut out of the same cloth that the first was: in it I present thee with *Don Quixote* enlarged, & at last dead and buried,  
that

*The Authors Prologue*

Tale should not fit him: then, good Reader, tell him this other; for this also is of a Mad-man and a Dog. In *Cordoba* was another Mad-man, which was wont to carry on the top of his head, a huge piece of Marble, not of the lightest, who meeting a masterlesse Dogge, would stalker vp close to him: and on a sudden, downe with his burden vpon him: the Dogge would presently yearne, and barking and yelling run away, three streets could not hold him. It fell out afterwards among other Dogges (vpon whom hee let fall his load) there was a Cappers Dogge, which his Master made great account of, vpon whom hee let downe his great stone, and took him full on the head: the poore batter'd Currie cries pittifully. His Master spies it, and affected with it, gets a meat-yard, assaults the mad-man, and leaues him not a whole bone in his skinn; and at euery blow that he gaue him, he cries out, Thou Dogge, Thou Thiefe, my Spaniell! Saw'st thou not, thou cruell Villaine, that my Dogge was a Spaniell? And euer and anon repeating still his Spaniell, he sent away the Mad-man all blacke and blue. The Mad-man was terribly skarred herewith, but got away, and for more then a moneth after neuer came abroad: At last out hee comes with his inuention againe, and a bigger load then before: and coming where the Dogge stood, viewing him ouer and ouer againe very heedily; he had no minde, he durst not let goe the stone, but onely said, Take heed, this is a Spaniell. In fine, whatsoeuer Dogges he met, though they were Mastifs or Fysting-Hounds, hee still said they were Spaniels. So that after that, he neuer durst throw his great Stone any more. And who knowes  
but

*to the Reader.*

but the same may befall this our Historian, that hee will no more let fall the prize of his wit in Bookes? for in being naught, they are harder then Rockes: tell him too, that for his menacing, that with his booke he will take away all my gaine; I care not a straw for him: but betaking my selfe to the famous Interlude of *Perendenga*: I answered him, Let the Old man my Master liue, and Christ bee with vs all. Long liue the great *Conde de Lemos* (whose Christianity and well-knowne Liberalitie against all the blowes of my short fortune, keepes me on foote) and long liue that eminent Charitie of the Cardinall of *Toledo*, *Don Bernardo de Sandoval y Rojas*. Were there no printing in the world, or were there as many Bookes printed against mee, as there are letters in the Rimes of *Mingo Revulgo*; these two Princes, without any sollicitation of flatterie, or any other kinde of applause, of their sole bounty haue taken vpon them to doe me good, and to fauour me; wherein I account my selfe more happy and rich, then if fortune, by some other ordinary way, had raised me to her highest: Honour, a Poore man may haue it, but a Vicious man cannot: Pouerty may cast a mist vpon Noblenes, but cannot altogether obscure it: but as the glimmering of any light of it selfe, though but thorow narrow chinkes and Cranyes, comes to be esteemed by high and Noble spirits, and consequently fauoured. Say no more to him; nor will I say any more to thee: but onely aduertise that thou consider, that this Second part of *Don Quixote*, which I offer thee, is framed by the same Art, and cut out of the same cloth that the first was: in it I present thee with *Don Quixote* enlarged, & at last dead and buried,  
that

*The Authors Prologue, &c.*

that so no man presume to raise any farther reports of him; those that are past are enow: and let it suffice that an honest man may haue giuen notice of these discreet follies, with purpose not to enter into them any more. For plenty of any thing, though neuer so good, makes it lesse esteemed: and scarcitie (though of euill things) makes them somewhat accounted of. I forgot to tell thee that thou mayst expect *Perfiles*, which I am now about to finish; as also the *Second part of Galatea*.



A  
SUMMARY TABLE  
of that, which this second part of  
the famous History of the valourous  
*Don Quixote de la Mancha* doth  
containe.

CHAP. I.

**H**ow the Vicar and the Barber passed their time with Don Quixote, touching his infirmitie.

Chap. 2. Of the notable fray that Sancho Panfa had with the Neece & the old Woman, and other delightful passages.

Chap. 3. [The ridiculous discourse that passed betwixt Don Quixote, Sancho, and the Bachelor Samson Carrasco.

Chap. 4. How Sancho Panfa satisfies the Bachelor Samson Carrasco's doubts and demands; with other accidents worthy to be knowne and related.

Chap. 5. Of the wise and pleasant discourse, that passed betwixt Sancho Panfa and his wife Teresa Panfa, and other accidents worthy of happy remembrance.

Chap. 6. What passed betwixt Don Quixote, his Neece, and the old Woman: and it is one of the most materiall Chapters in all the History.

Chap. 7. What passed betwixt Don Quixote and his Squire, with other famous accidents.

Chap. 8. What befell Don Quixote, going to see his Mistress Dulcinea del Toboso.

Chap. 9. Where is set downe as followeth.

Chap.

## The Contents.

- Chap. 10. *How Sancho cunningly enchanted the Lady Dulcinea, and other successes, as ridiculous as true.*
- Chap. 11. *Of the strange Adventure that befell Don Quixote, with the Cart or Waggon of the Parliament of Death.*
- Chap. 12. *Of the rare Adventure that befell Don Quixote, with the Knight of the Looking-Glasses.*
- Chap. 13. *Where the Adventure of the Knight of the Wood is prosecuted, with the discreet, rare, and sweet Colloquy, that passed betwixt the two Squires.*
- Chap. 14. *How the Adventure of the Knight of the Wood is prosecuted.*
- Chap. 15. *Who the Knight of the Looking-glasses and his Squire were.*
- Chap. 16. *What befell Don Quixote with a discreet Gentleman of Mancha.*
- Chap. 17. *Where is shewed the last and extremest hazard, to which the unheard of courage of Don Quixote did or could arrive, with the prosperous accomplishment of the Adventure of the Lyons.*
- Chap. 18. *What happened to Don Quixote in the Castle, or Knight of the Greene Cassocke his house, with other extravagant matters.*
- Chap. 19. *Of the Adventure of the enamoured Shepherd, with other, indeed, pleasant Accidents.*
- Chap. 20. *Of the Marriage of the rich Camacho, and the success of poore Basilius.*
- Chap. 21. *Of the prosecution of Camacho's marriage, with other delightfull accidents.*
- Chap. 22. *Of the famous Adventure of Montefino's Cane, which is in the heart of Mancha, which the valourous Don Quixote happily accomplished,*
- Chap. 23. *Of the admirable things, that the unapparel'd Don Quixote recounted, which hee had seene in Montefino's profound Cane, whose strangeness and impossibility makes this Chapter to be held for Apocrypha.*
- Chap. 24. *Where are recounted a thousand slim-flams, as impertinent, as necessary to the understanding of this famous History.*
- Chap.

## The Contents.

- Chap. 25. *Of the Adventure of the Braying, and the merry one of the Puppet-man, with the memorable southsaying of the prophesying Ape.*
- Chap. 26. *Of the delightfull passage of the Puppet-play, and other pleasant matters.*
- Chap. 27. *Who Master Peter and his Ape were, with the ill success that Don Quixote had in the Adventure of the Braying, which ended not so well, at he would, or thought for.*
- Chap. 28. *Of the things that Benengeli relates, which hee that reades shall know, if he reade them with attention.*
- Chap. 29. *Of the famous Adventure of the Enchanted Barke.*
- Chap. 30. *What hapned to Don Quixote with the faire Huntresse.*
- Chap. 31. *That treats of many and great affaires.*
- Chap. 32. *Of Don Quixotes answers to his Reprehender, with other successes as wise as witty.*
- Chap. 33. *Of the wholesome discourse that passed betwixt the Duchesse and her Damozels with Sancho Panfa, worthy to be read and noted.*
- Chap. 34. *How notice is given for the dis-enchanting of the peevlesse Dulcinea del Toboso, which is one of the most famous Adventures in all this booke.*
- Chap. 35. *Where is prosecuted the notice that Don Quixote had, of dis-enchanting Dulcinea, with other admirable accidents.*
- Chap. 36. *Of the strange and unimagined Adventure of the afflicted Matron, alias, the Countesse Trifaldi, with a letter that Sancho Panfa wrote to his wife Teresa Panfa.*
- Chap. 37. *Of the Prosecution of the famous Adventure of the Afflicted Matron.*
- Chap. 38. *The Afflicted Matron recounts her ill Errantry.*
- Chap. 39. *Where the Trifaldi prosecutes her stupendious and memorable History.*
- Chap. 40. *Of matters that touch and pertain to this Adventure, and most memorable History.*
- Chap. 41. *Of Clauilenos arrivall, with the end of this dilated Adventure.*
- Chap. 42. *Of the advice that Don Quixote gave Sancho Panfa, before hee should goe to governe the Island, with other matter well digested.*
- Chap.

## The Contents.

- Chap. 43. *Of the second aduice that Don Quixote gaue Sancho Panfa.*  
 Chap. 44. *How Sancho Panfa was carried to his Gouernment, & of the strange Aduenture that befel Don Quixote in the Castle.*  
 Chap. 45. *How the Grand Sancho Panfa tooke possession of his Island, and the manner of his beginning to gouerne.*  
 Ch. 46. *Of the feareful Low-Bell-Cally horror that Don Quixote receiued in Processe of his Loue, by the enamor'd Altisidora.*  
 Chap. 47. *How Sancho demeaned himselfe in his Gouernment.*  
 Chap. 48. *What hapned to Don Quixote with Donna Rodriguez, the Duchesses waiting-woman; with other successes, worthy to be written, and had in eternall remembrance.*  
 Ch. 49. *What hapned to Sancho in walking the Round in his Island.*  
 Ch. 50. *Where is declared, who were the Enchanters and Executioners, that whipped the Matron, pincht and scracht Don Quixote, with the successe the Page had that carried the Letter to Teresa Panfa, Sancho's wife.*  
 Chap. 51. *Of Sancho's proceeding in his Gouernment, with other successes, as good as Touch.*  
 Chap. 52. *The Aduenture of the second Afflicted or straightned Matron, alias, Donna Rodriguez.*  
 Chap. 53. *Of the troublesome end and up-shot that Sancho Panfa's Gouernment had.*  
 Chap. 54. *That treats of matters concerning this History, and no other.*  
 Chap. 55. *Of matters that befell Sancho by the way, and others the best in the world.*  
 Chap. 56. *Of the vnmercifull and neuer scene battell that passed betweene Don Quixote and the Lackey Tosilos, in defence of the Matron Donna Rodriguez Daughter.*  
 Chap. 57. *How Don Quixote tooke his leaue of the Duke, and what befell him with the witty wanton Altisidora, the Duchesses Damozell.*  
 Chap. 58. *Of Aduentures that came so thicke and threefold on Don Quixote, that they giue no respite one to the other.*  
 Chap. 59. *Of an extraordinary accident that befell Don Quixote, which may be held for an Aduenture.*

Chap.

## The Contents.

- Chap. 60. *What happened to Don Quixote going to Barselona.*  
 Chap. 61. *What hapned to Don Quixote at his entrance into Barselona, with other euents more true, then witty.*  
 Chap. 62. *The Aduenture of the Enchanted head, with other flim-flams that must be recounted.*  
 Chap. 63. *Of the ill chance that befell Sancho at his seeing the Gallies, with the strange Aduenture of the Morisca.*  
 Chap. 64. *Of an Aduenture that most perplext Don Quixote, of any that hitherto befell him.*  
 Chap. 65. *Who the Knight of the White Moone was, with Don Gregorio's liberty, and other passages.*  
 Chap. 66. *That treats of what the Reader shall see, and hee that hearkens heare.*  
 Chap. 67. *Of the resolution Don Quixote had to turne Shepheard, and to lead a Country life, whilest the promise for his yeere was expired, with other accidents truly good, & sauoury.*  
 Chap. 68. *Of the Bristled Aduenture that befell Don Quixote.*  
 Chap. 69. *Of the newest and strangest Aduenture, that in all the course of this History befell Don Quixote.*  
 Chap. 70. *Of diuers rare things, which serue for the better illustration and cleering of this History.*  
 Chap. 71. *Of what befell Don Quixote and his Squire Sancho Panfa, in their trauel towards their Village.*  
 Chap. 72. *How Don Quixote and Sancho arrined at their Village.*  
 Chap. 73. *Of the presages and fore-boadings, which hapned to Don Quixote, at the entrance into his Village; with other Aduentures, which serue for grace and ornament vnto this famous History, and which giue credit vnto it.*  
 Chap. 74. *How Don Quixote fell sicke: of the will hee made, and of his death.*

### ERRATA.

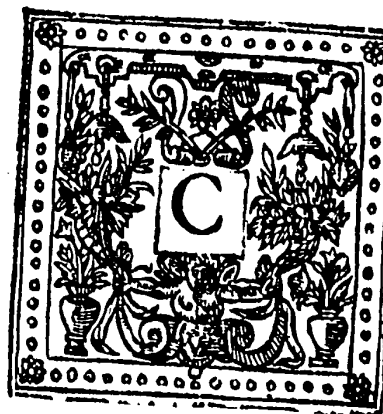
Page 4. line 22. *for* of a briefe tale, *read* a briefe tale, p. 12. l. 16. *for* flight, *r.* flight. Ibid. l. 22. *for* at it were. *r.* as it were. p. 40. l. 5. *for* reduct, *r.* reduc'd. p. 65. l. 10. *for* direct, *r.* diuers. p. 77. l. 35. *for* Don Quixote, *r.* Sancho. p. 78. l. 31. *for* you, *r.* your. Ibid. l. 33. *for* like no vafortunate, *r.* not like me vafortunate. p. 106. l. 34. *for* Branados, *r.* Bravados. p. 156. l. 29. *deleeue*, *r.* beleue. p. 173. l. 24. *for* out by, *r.* out Boy. p. 281. l. 9. *for* nor to be, *r.* to be. p. 229. l. 1. *for* former, *r.* Farmer. pag. 410. l. 26. *for* Rogue, *r.* Rogue.



## THE SECOND PART of *Don Quixote.*

### CHAP. I.

*How the Vicar and the Barber passed their time with Don Quixote, touching his infirmity.*



*I*D Hamet Benengeli tells vs in the second part of this History, and *Don Quixote* his third sally, that the Vicar and Barber were almost a whole moneth without seeing him, because they would not renew and bring to his remembrance things done and past. Notwithstanding, they forbore not to visit his Neece and the olde woman, charging them they should bee carefull to cherish him, and to giue him comforting meats to eat, good for his heart and braine, from whence in likeli-hood all his ill proceeded. They answered,

## The Second Part

red, that they did so, and would doe it with all possible loue and care: For they perceiued that their Master continually gaue signes of being in his entire iudgement; at which the two receiued great ioy, and thought they tooke the right course, when they brought him inchaunted in the *Oxe-Waine* (as hath beene declared in the first part of this so famous, as punctual History.) So they determined to visit him, and make some triall of his amendment, which they thought was impossible; and agreed not to touch vpon any point of Knight Errantry; because they would not endanger the ripping vp of a fore, whose stiches made it yet tender.

At length they visited him, whom they found set vp in his bed, clad in a Waste-coat of greene bayes, on his head a red *Toledo* bonet, so dried and withered vp, as if his flesh had beene mommied. He welcommed them, & they asked him touching his health: of it and himselfe he gaue them good account, with much iudgement and elegant phrase, and in proesse of discourse, they fell into State-matters, and manner of Government, correcting this abuse, and condemning that; reforming one custome, and reiecting another; each of the three making himselfe a new Law-maker, a moderne *Lycurgus*, and a spicke and span new *Solon*; and they so refined the Common-wealth, as if they had clapped it into a forge, and drawne it out in another fashion then they had put it in. *Don Quixote* in all was so discreet, that the two Examinants vndoubtedly beleueed, he was quite well, and in his right minde. The Neece and the old woman were present at this discourse, and could neuer giue God thanks enough, when they saw their Master with so good vnderstanding: But the Vicar changing his first intent, which was, not to meddle in matters of *Cauallery*, would now make a thorow triall of *Don Quixotes* perfect recovery; and so now and then tels him newes from Court, and amongst others, that it was giuen out for certaine, that the *Turke* was come downe with a powerfull Army, that his designe was not knowne, nor where such a clowd would discharge it selfe: and that all *Christendome* was affrighted with this terrour he puts vs in with his yecrely *Alarme*: Likewise, that his Maiesty had made strong the

## of Don Quixote.

the coasts of *Naples*, *Sicilia*, and *Malta*. To this (sayd *Don Quixote*) his Maiesty hath done like a most politique Warrior, in looking to his Dominions in time, lest the enemy might take him at vnawares: but if my counsaile might preuaile, I would aduise him to vse a preuention, which he is farre from thinking on at present. The Vicar scarce heard this, when hee thought with himselfe; God defend thee, poore *Don Quixote*: for mee thinkes thou fallest headlong from the high top of thy madnesse, into the profound bottome of thy simplicity. But the Barber presently being of the Vicars minde, askes *Don Quixote* what aduice it was he would giue? for peradventure (sayd he) it is such an one as may bee put in the roll of those many idle ones that are vsually giuen to Princes. Mine, Good-man Shauer (quoth *Don Quixote*) is no such. I spoke not to that intent (replied the Barber) but that it is commonly seene, that all or the most of your proiects that are giuen to his Maiesty, are either impossible, or friuolous, either in detriment of the King or Kingdome. Well, mine (quoth *Don Quixote*) is neither impossible, nor friuolous; but the plainest, the iustest, the most manageable and compendious, that may bee contained in the thought of any Proiectour. You are long a telling vs it, Mr. *Don Quixote*, sayd the Vicar. I would not (replied hee) tell it you heere now, that it should bee carely to morrow in the cares of some priuy Councellour, and that another should reap the praise and reward of my labour. For mee (quoth the Barber) I passe my word, heere and before God, to tell neither King nor Keisar, nor any earthly man what you say: an oath I learnt out of the Ballad of the Vicar, in the Preface whereof he told the King of the theefe that robbed him of his two hundred double pistolets, and his gadding mule. I know not your histories (sayd *Don Quixote*) but I presume the oath is good, because I know Mr. Barber is an honest man. If he were not (sayd the Vicar) I would make it good, and vndertake for him, that he shall be dumb in this busines, vnder paine of excommunication. And who shall vndertake for you, Mr. Vicar, (quoth *Don Quixote*?) My profession (answered he) which is to keep counsaile. Body of me, (sayd *Don Quixote*) is there any more to be done

done then, but that the King cause proclamation to bee made, that at a prefixed day, all the Knights Errant that roue vp and downe *Spaine*, repaire to the Court? and if there came but halfe a doozen, yet such an one there might bee amongst them, as would delstroy all the *Turkes* power. Harken to me, Hoe, and let me take you with mee: doe yee thinke it is strange, that one Knight Errant should conquer an army of two hundred thousand fighting men, as if all together had but one throat, or were made of sugar-pellets? But tell me, how many stories are full of those maruels? You should haue braue *Don Belianis* aliue now, with a pox to me, for Ile curse no other; or some one of that inuincible lineage of *Amadis de Gaul*: for if any of these were liuing at this day, and should affront the *Turke*, I'faith I would not be in his coat: but God will prouide for his people, and send some one, if not so braue a Knight Errant as those formerly, yet at least that shall not be inferiour in courage; and God knowes my meaning, and I say no more. Alasse (quoth the Neece at this instant) hang me, if my master haue not a desire to turne Knight Errant againe. Then cryed *Don Quixote*, I must die so, march the *Turke* vp and downe when he will, and as powerfully as he can, I say againe, God knowes my meaning. Then sayd the Barber, Good Sirs, giue me leaue to tell you of a brieife tale of an accident in *Senil*, which because it falls out heere so pat, I must needs tell it. *Don Quixote* was willing, the Vicar and the rest gaue their attention, and thus he began.

In the house of the mad-men at *Senil*, there was one put in there by his kindred; to recouer him of his lost wits, hee was a Bachelour of Law, graduated in the Canons at *Osuna*, and though he had beene graduated at *Salamanca*, yet (as many are of opinion) he would haue beene mad there too; this Bachelour after some yeeres imprisonment, made it appeare that hee was well and in his right wits, and to this purpose writes to the Arch-Bishop, desiring him earnestly, and with forcible reasons, to deliuer him from that misery in which hee liued, since by Gods mercy, he had now recovered his lost vnderstanding: and that his kindred, onely to get his wealth, had kept him there, and so meant to hold him still wrongfully till his death. The

Arch-

Arch-Bishop, induced by many sensible and discreet lines of his, commanded one of his Chaplaines to informe himselfe from the Rector of the house, of the truth; and to speake also with the mad-man, that if he perceiued he was in his wits, hee should giue him his liberty. The Chaplaine did this, and the Rector said that the party was still mad, that although hee had sometimes faire intermissions, yet in the end he would grow to such a rauiing, as might equall his former discretion (as hee told him) he might perceiue by discoursing with him. The Chaplaine would needes make triall, and coming to him, talked with him an houre and more, and in all that time the mad-man neuer gaue him a crosse, nor wilde answer, but rather spoke aduisedly, that the Chaplaine was forced to beleue him to be sensible enough; and amongst the rest he told him, the Rector had an inckling against him, because hee would not lose his hundreds Presents, that hee might say he was made by fittes: withall hee said, that his Wealth was the greatest wrong to him in his euill Fortune, since to enioy that, his enemies defrauded him, and would doubt of GODS mercie to him, that had turned him from a Beast to a Man. Lastly, hee spoke so well, that hee made the Rector to bee suspected, and his kindred thought couetous and damnable persons, and himselfe so discreet, that the Chaplaine determined to haue him with him, that the Arch-Bishop might see him, and be satisfied of the truth of the businesse. With this good beliefe, the Chaplaine required the Rector to giue the Bachelour the clothes hee brought with him thither: who replied; desiring him to consider what he did, for that the party was still made: but the Rectors aduice preuailed nothing with the Chaplaine, to make him leaue him; so hee was forced to giue way to the Arch-bishops order, and to giue him his apparell, which was new and handsome: and when the madde man saw himselfe ciuilly cladde, and his mad-mans weedes off, hee requested the Chaplaine, that in charity he would let him take his leaue of the mad-men his companions. The Chaplaine told him that hee would likewise accompany him, and see the madde-men that were in the house. So vp they went, and with them some o-



thers there present, and the Bachelor being come to a kinde of Cage, where an outrageous mad-man lay, (although as then still and quiet,) he said, Brother, if you will command me ought, I am going to my house; for now it hath pleased God, of his infinite goodnesse and mercy, without my desert, to bring me to my right minde: I am now well and sensible, for vnto Gods power nothing is vnpossible. Be of good comfort, trust in him, that since he hath turned mee to my former estate, he will doe the like to you, if you trust in him. I will be carefull to send you some dainty to eat, and by any meanes eat it; for let me tell you what I know by experience, that all our madnesse proceeds from the emptinesse of our stomacks, that fills our brains vvith aire: Take heart, take heart; for this delecting in misery, lessens the health, and hastens death. Another madde-man in a Cage ouer-against, heard all the Bachelors discourse, and raising himselfe vpon an olde Matresse vpon which hee lay starke naked, asked aloud, who it was that was going away sound and in his wits. The Bachelor replied: It is I, brother, that am going, for I haue no need to stay heere any longer; for which I render infinite thanks to God, that hath done me so great a fauour. Take heed what you say, Bachelor, reply'd the madde-man, let not the Deuill deceiue you; keepe still your foot, and be quiet heere at home, and so you may saue a bringing backe. I know (quoth the Bachelor) I am well, and shall need to walke no more stations hither: You'r well, said the mad-man. The euent will try; God be with you: but I sweare to thee by *Iupiter*, whose Maiesty I represent on earth, that for this dayes offence, I will eat vp all *Seuill*, for deliuering thee from hence, and saying thou art in thy wits; I will take such a punishment on this City, as shall be remembered for euer and euer, *Amen*. Knowest not thou, poore rascall Bachelor, that I can doe it, since (as I say) I am thundering *Iupiter*, that carry in my hands the scorching bolts, with which I can, and vse to threaten and destroy the world? But in one thing onely will I chastise this ignorant Towne; which is, That for three yeers together there shall fall no raine about it, nor the liberties thereof, counting from this time and instant hence forward, that this threat hath beene.

beene made. Thou free? thou sound, thou wise, and I mad, I sicke, I bound? as sure will I raine, as I meane to hang my selfe. The standers by gaue attention to the mad-man: but our Bachelor turning to the Chaplaine, and taking him by the hand, said, Be not afraid, Sir, nor take any heed to this mad-mans words: for if he be *Iupiter* and will not raine, I that am *Neptune* the Father and god of the waters, will raine as oft as I list, and need shall require. To which (quoth the Chaplaine) Nay, Mr. *Neptune*, it were not good angring Mr. *Iupiter*. I pray stay you here still, and some other time, at more leisure and opportunitie, we will returne for you againe. The Rector and standers by began to laugh, and the Chaplaine grew to bee halfe abashed: the Bachelor was vnclothed, there remained, and there the Tale ends.

Well; is this the Tale, Mr. Barber (quoth *Don Quixote*) that because it fell out so pat, you could not but relate it? Ah, goodman Shauester, goodman Shauester, how blind is he that sees not light through the bottome of a Meale-siue? and is it possible that you should not know, that comparisons made betwixt wit, & wit, valour and valour, beauty and beauty, and betwixt birth and birth, are alwayes odious & ill taken? I am not *Neptune*, god of the waters, neither care I who thinks me a wise man, (I being none) onely I am troubled to let the world vnderstand the error it is in, in not renewing that most happy Age, in which the Order of *Knight Errantry* did flourish: But our deprauid times deserue not to enioy so great a happines, as former Ages, when Knights Errant vndertook the defence of Kingdomes, the protection of Damosels, the succouring of Orphans, the chastizing the Proud, the reward of the Humble. Most of your Knights now-a-daies, are such as rusle in their silkes, their cloth of gold and siluer, and such rich stufes as these they weare, rather then Maile, with which they should arme themselves. You haue no Knight now that will lye vpon the bare ground, subiect to the rigour of the ayre, armed *Cap a Pie*: None now that vpriight on his stirrups, & leaning on his Launce, strives to be head sleepe (as they say your Knights Errant did:) You haue none now, that comming out of this wood, enters into that mountaine, and from thence tramples ouer a barren and desert shore of the Sea, most commonly stormy and vquiet; and finding at the brinke of it some little Cock-boat, with-

out Oares, Saile, Mast, or any kinde of tackling, casts himselfe into it with vndanted courage, yeelds himselfe to the implacable waues of the deepe Maine, that now toss him as high as Heauen, and then cast him as low as hell, & he exposed to the ineuitable tempest, when he least dreames of it, findes himselfe at least three thousand Leagues distant from the place where he imbarqued himselfe: and leaping on a remote and vnknowne shore, lights vpon succelles worthy to be written in brasse, & not parchment. But now sloth triumphs vpon industry, idlenesse on labour, vice on vertue, presumption on valour, the Theorie on the Practice of Armes, which onely liued and shined in those golden Ages, and in those Knights Errant. If not, tell me, who was more vertuous, more valiant, then the renowned *Amadis de Gaul*? more discret then *Palmerin* of England? more affable and free, then *Tirante the White*? more gallant then *Lisuart* of Greece? a greater hackster, or more hacked then *Don Belianis*? more vndaunted then *Perian* of *Gaul*? who a greater vndertaker of dangers then *Felismarte* of *Hircania*? who more sincere then *Esplandian*? who more courteous then *Don Cierongilio* of Thracia? who more fierce then *Rodomant*? who wiser then King *Sobrinus*? who more couragious then *Renaldo*? who more inuincible then *Roldan*? who more comely, or more courteous then *Rogero*? from whom the Dukes of Ferrara at this day are descended (according to *Turpin* in his *Cosmography*.) All these Knights, and many more (Master Vicar) that I could tell you, were Knights Errant, the very light and glory of Knight-hood. These, or such as these, are they I wish for, which if it could be, his Maiesty would bee well serued, and might saue a great deale of expence, and the Turke might goe shake his eares. And therefore let me tell you, I scorne to keepe my house, since the Chaplaine deliuers mee not, and his *Iupiter* (as Goodman Barber talkes) raines not; heere am I that will raine when I list: this I speake, that Goodman Bafon may know I vnderstand him.

Truly Mr. *Don Quixote* (saide the Barber) I spoke it not to that end, and so help mee God, as I meant well, and you ought not to resent any thing. I know well enough whether I ought or no, Sir, replied *Don Quixote*. Then (quoth the Vicar) well, goe to: I haue not spoken a word hitherto, I would not willingly

remaine

remaine with one scruple which doth grate and gnaw vpon my conscience, sprung from what Mr. *Don Quixote* hath here told vs. For this and much more you haue full liberty, good Master Vicar (saide *Don Quixote*) and therefore tell your scruple, for sure it is no pleasure to continue with a scrupulous conscience. Vnder correction (quoth the Vicar) this it is, I can by no means be perswaded that all that troope of Knights Errant which you named, were euer true, and really persons of flesh and bone in this world: I rather imagine all is fiction, tales, and lies, or dreames set downe by men waking, or to say trulier, by men halfe asleepe. There's another error (quoth *Don Quixote*) into which many haue falne, who belieue not that there haue beene such Knights in the world: and I my selfe many times in diuers companies, and vpon seuerall occasions, haue laboured to shew this common mistake, but sometimes haue failed in my purpose, at others not, supporting it vpon the shoulders of Truth, which is so infallible, that I may say, that with these very eyes I haue beheld *Amadis de Gaul*, who was a goodly tall man, well complectioned, had a broad beard, and blacke, an equall countenance betwixt milde and sterne, a man of small discourse, slow to anger, and soone appeased: and iust as I haue delineated *Amadis*, I might in my iudgement paint and decipher out as many Knights Errant, as are in all the Histories of the world: for by apprehending, they were such as their histories report them, by their exploits they did, and their qualities; their features, colours, and statures may in good Philosophy be guessed at. How bigge, deare Mr. *Don Quixote* (quoth the Barber) might Gyant *Morgante* be? Touching Gyants (quoth *Don Quixote*) there be different opinions whether there haue beene any or no in the world: but the holy Scripture, which cannot erre a iot in the truth, doth shew vs plainly that there were, telling vs the story of that huge Philistine *Goliath*, that was seuen cubits and a halfe high, which is an vnmeasurable greatnesse. Besides, in the Ile of Sicilia, there haue beene found shanke-bones, and shoulder-bones so great, that their bignesse shewed their owners to haue beene Gyants, and as huge as high towers, which Geometry will make good. But for all this, I cannot easily tell

you:

you how big *Morgante* was, though I suppose he was not very tall; to which opinion I incline, because I finde in his history, where there is particular mention made of his Acts, that many times hee lay vnder a rooffe: And therefore since hee found an house that would hold him, tis plaine, he could not be of extraordinary bignesse. Tis true (quoth the Vicar) who delighting to heare him talke so wildely, asked him what he thought of the faces of *Renaldo* of *Montalban*, *Don Roldan* and the rest of the twelue Peeres of *France*, who were all Knights Errant. For *Renaldo* (quoth *Don Quixote*) I dare boldly say, he was broad-faced, his complexion high, quicke and full eyed, very exceptious and extremely cholericke, a louer of theeues and debauched company. Touching *Rolando*, or *Rotolando*, or *Orlando*, for histories afford him all these names, I am of opinion, and affirme that hee was of a meane stature, broad-shouldred, somewhat bow-legged, Abourne bearded, his body hairie, and his lookes threatening, dull of discourse, but affable and well behaued. If *Orlando* (said the Vicar) was so sweet a youth as you describe him, no sharuall though the faire *Angelica* disdained him, and lefthim, for the handsome, briske and conceited beard-budding *Medor*, and that she had rather haue his softnesse, then tothers roughnesse. That *Angelica* (quoth *Don Quixote*) was a light huswife, a gaddet, and a wanton, and left the world as full of her fopperies, as the reports of her beauty: shee despised a thousand Knights, a thousand both valiant and discrete, and contented herselfe with a poore beardless Page, without more wealth or honour, then what her famous singer *Aristo* could giue her in token of his thankfulness to his friends loue, either because hee durst not in this respect, or because hee would not chaunt what befell this Lady, after her base prostitution, for sure her carriage was not very honest: So he left her when he said,

*And how Carayes scepter she had at will,*

*Perhaps, some one will write with better quill.*

And vndoubtedly this was a kinde of prophesie, for Poets are called *Vates*, that is, South-sayers: and this truth hath beene cleerely seene, for since that time, a famous *Andaluzian* Poet wept, and sung her teares: and another famous and rare Poet of

*Castile*

*Castile* her beauty. But tell mee, Mr. *Don Quixote* (quoth the Barber) was there euer any Poet that wrote a Satyre against this faire Lady, amongst those many that haue written in her praise? I am well perswaded (quoth *Don Quixote*) that if *Sacripant* or *Orlando* had beene Poets, they had trounced the Damoicell: for it is an ordinary thing amongst Poets once disdained, or not admitted by their fained Mistresses, (fained indeed, because they, faine they loue them) to reuenge themselves with Satyres & Libels; a reuenge truely vnworthy noble spirits: but hitherto I haue not heard of any infamatory verse against the Lady *Angelica*, that hath made any hurly burly in the world. Strange, quoth the Vicar. With that they might heare the Neece and the olde woman (who were before gone from them) keep a noyse without in the Court: so they went to see what was the matter.

## CHAP. II.

*Of the notable fray that Sancho Panca had with the Neece and the old woman, and other delightfull passages.*

THE Story sayes, that the noyse which *Don Quixote*, the Vicar and the Barber heard, was of the Neece and the old woman, that were rating *Sancho Panca*, that stroue with them for entrance to see *Don Quixote*, who kept the doore against him. What will this bloud-hound haue heere? sayd they, Get you home to your own house, for you are he & none else, that doth distract and ring-lead our Master, and carry him astray. To which (quoth *Sancho*) Woman of Satan, I am hee that is distracted, ring-led, and carried astray, and not your Master: twas he that led mee vp and downe the world, and you deceiue you selues and vnderstand by halues: he drew me from my house with his conycatching, promising mee an Island, which I yet hope for. A plague of your Islands (replied the Neece) cursed *Sancho*: and what be your Islands? is it any thing to eat, good-man glutton, you cormorant, as you are? Tis not to eat (quoth *Sancho*) but to rule and gouerne, better then foure Cities.

Cities, or foure of the Kings Iudges. For all that (sayd the olde woman) you come not in heere, you bundle of mischief and sacke of wickednesse, get you home and gouerne there, and sow your graine, and leaue seeking after Ilands or Dilands. The Vicar and the Barber tooke great delight to heare this Dialogue betweene the three: But *Don Quixote*, fearing lest *Sancho* should out with all, and should blunder out a company of malicious fooleries, or should touch vpon poynts that might not be for his reputation, he called him to him, and commanded the women to be silent, and to let him in. *Sancho* entred, and the Vicar and Barber tooke leaue of *Don Quixote*, of whose recouery they dispaired, seeing how much he was bent vpon his wilde thoughts, and how much he was besotted with his damned Knights Errant. So (quoth the Vicar to the Barber) you shall quickly, Gossip, perceiue, when we least thinke of it, that our Gallant takes his flight againe by the riuer. No doubt (sayd the Barber) but I wonder not so much at the Knights madnesse, as the Squires simplicity, that believes so in the Ilands, and I thinke all the Art in the world will not driue that out of his noddle. God mend them (sayd the Vicar) and let vs expect what issue the multitude of this Knight and Squires absurdities will haue: for it seemes they were both framed out of one forge, at it were, for the Masters madnes without the Seruants folly, is not worth a chip. Tis true (sayd the Barber) and I should be glad to know their present discourse. I warrant (sayd the Vicar) the Neece and old woman will tell vs all when they haue done, for they are not so mannerly as not to harken. In the *Interim*, *Don Quixote* locked in *Sancho*, & thus discoursed with him: I am very sorry, *Sancho*, you should affirme and make good, that I was hee that drew you from your dog-hole cottage, knowing that I willingly left mine, a Palace in comparison; wee went out ioyntly, so we marched on, & so we held our whole peregrination; both of vs hauing vndergone the same lot, the same fortune; & if once thou wast tolled in a blanket, I haue becne banged an hundred times, and heerein haue I the aduantage of thee. Why, it was very fit (answered *Sancho*) for (as you hold) misfortunes are more annexed to Knights Errant then to their Squires. Thou

art

art deceived, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*: for according to the saying, *Quando caput dolet*, &c. I vnderstand no other language but mine owne, said *Sancho*. Why I mean (replied *Don Quixote*) that when the head akes, all the body is out of tune: so that I being thy Lord and Master, am thy head, and thou a part of me, since thou art my seruant, in which respect, the ill that toucheth me, must concerne and grieue thee, and so thine me. Indeed (quoth *Sancho*) it ought to bee so: but when I was tolled in the blanket, my head stood aloofe, like a part, beholding me fly in the aire, without any feeling my griefe, and since the members are bound to suffer for the head, the head in requitall should also suffer for them. You meane, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) that I had no feeling of your being tolled? And if you meane so, doe not, neither imagine any such thing: for at that time, I was more vext in spirit, then thou couldst bee in body: but leaue we this for the present, for wee shall haue leisure to consider and rectifie it: and tell me, friend *Sancho*, what say the common people of me? In what estimation doe the Gentlemen hold me? In what the Knights and Gallants? What say they of my valour? What of my exploits? What of my affability? What discourse they touching my plot in raising and restoring to the world, the long forgotten order of Knight Errantry? To conclude, I would haue thee tell me all that thou hast heard: and you must tell me, without adding to my praise, or diminishing my dispraise, for it is the part of loyall seruants, to tell the naked truth to their Masters, in its natue colour, without increasing it by flattery, or diminishing it for any other vaine respect; And I would haue thee, *Sancho*, learne by the way, that if the naked truth should come to the eares of Princes, without the apparrell of flattery, we should haue another manner of world, and other ages would be called iron, and not ours; and this would bee the golden age. And let mee aduise thee, *Sancho*, that well and discreetly thou tell me the truth of what thou knowest, concerning my demand. I shall with a very good will, Sir, (quoth *Sancho*) vpon condition that you shall not bee angry at what I shall tell you, since you will haue the naked truth, without any other clothing then what I haue seene herewith. By no meanes will I

be.

be angry (answered *Don Quixote*) thou mayst speake freely, *Sancho*, and without any disguise. Why then, first of all I must tell you, the common people hold you for a notable mad-man, and that I am no lesse Cox-combe. The ordinary Gentle-men say, that not containing your selfe within the limits of Gentrie, you will needs be-*Don* your selfe, and be a man of honour, hauing but three or foure acres of land, and a rag before, and another behinde. The Knights say, they would not haue your poore Squires bee ranked with them, that clout their owne shooes, and take vp a stitch in their owne blacke stockings with greene silke. That concernes not me (quoth *Don Quixote*) for thou seest that I goe alwaies well clad, and neuer patcht: indeed a little torne sometimes, but more with my armour, then by long wearing. Concerning your valour (quoth *Sancho*) your affability, your exploits, and your plot, there bee different opinions: Some say you are a mad-man, but a merry one: others, that you are valiant, but withall vnfortunate: a third sort, that you are affable, but impertinent: and thus they descant vpon vs, that they leaue neither you nor me a sound bone. Why looke thee, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) wherefoeuer vertue is eminent, it is persecuted: few or none of those braue *Hero's* that haue liued, haue scaped malicious calumniation. *Iulius Caesar*, that most couragious, most wise, most valiant Captaine, was noted to be ambitious, and to be somewhat slovenly in his apparel and his conditions. *Alexander*, who for his exploits obtained the title of *Great*, is said to haue beene giuen to drunkenness: *Hercules*, hee with his many labours, was said to haue beene lasciuious and a Striker: *Don Galaor*, brother to *Amadis de Gaul*, was grudged at for being offensive: and his Brother for a sheepe-biter. So that, *Sancho*, since so many worthy men haue beene calumniated, I may well suffer mine, if it haue beene no more then thou tellest me. Why, there's the quiddity of the matter, Body of my father, quoth *Sancho*. Was there any more sayd then, said *Don Quixote*? There's more behinde yet, said *Sancho*: all that was said hitherto, is cakes and white-bread to this: but if you will know all concerning these calumnies, Ile bring you one hither by and by, that shall tell you all with-

out

out missing a scrap; for last night *Bartholomew Carrasco's* Sonne arrived, that comes from study from *Salamanca*, and hath proceeded Bachelour, and as I went to bid him welcome home, he told me that your History was in print, vnder the Title of the most Ingenious Gentle-man *Don Quixote de la Mancha*; and hee tels mee that I am mentioned too, by mine owne name of *Sancho Panza*, and *Dulcinea del Toboso* is in too, and other matters that passed betwixt vs, at which I was amazed, and blessed my selfe how the Historian that wrote them, could come to the knowledge of them. Assure thee, *Sancho* (said *Don Quixote*) the Author of our History is some Sage Enchanter: for such are not ignorant of all secrets they write. Well (said *Sancho*) if hee were wise and an Enchanter, I will tell you according as *Samson Carrasco* told me (for thats the mans name that spoke with me) that the Authors name of this History is *Cid Hamete Berengena*. That is the name of a Moore, sayd *Don Quixote*. It is very like (quoth *Sancho*) for your Moores are great louers of *Berengens*. *Sancho* (said *Don Quixote*) you are out in the Moores surname, which is *Cid Hamete Benengeli*, and *Cide* in the Arabicke signifieth Lord. It may bee so (quoth *Sancho*) but if you will haue the Bachelour come to you, Ile bring him to you flying. Friend (quoth *Don Quixote*) thou shalt doe mee a speciall pleasure, for I am in suspence with what thou hast told me, and will not eat a bit till I am informed of all. Well, I goe for him (sayd *Sancho*;) And leauing his Master, went for the Bachelour, with whom a while after hee returned, and the three had a passing pleasant Dialogue.

<sup>a</sup> It should be *Benengeli*, but *Sancho* simply mistakes, as followeth in the next note. <sup>b</sup> *Berengena* is a fruit in Spain, which they boyle with sod meat, as we do carrats, and here was *Sancho's* simplicity in mistaking, and to thinke that name was giuen the Author for louing the fruit.

## CHAP. III.

*The ridiculous discourse that passed betwixt Don Quixote, Sancho, and the Bachelour Samson Carrasco.*

**D**On *Quixote* was monstrous pensatiue, expecting the Bachelour *Carrasco*, from whom he hoped to heare the newes of himselfe in print (as *Sancho* had told him) and

he.

he could not be perswaded that there was such a History, since yet the blood of enemies, killed by him, was scarce dry vpon his sword blade, and would they haue his noble acts of Chivalry already in the Presse: Notwithstanding, hee thought that some wise man, or friend, or enemy, by way of enchantment, had committed them to the Presse: If a friend, then to extoll him for the most remarkable of any Knight Errant: If an enemy, to annihilate them, and clap vnderneath the basest and meanest that euer were mentioned of any inferior Squire, although (thought he to himselfe) no acts of Squire were euer divulged: but if there were any History, being of a Knight Errant, it must needs be lofty and stately, famous, magnificent, and true. With this he comforted himselfe somewhat, but began to bee discomforted, to thinke that his Author must be a Moore, by reason of that name of *Cide*: and from Moores there could bee no truth expected; for all of them are Cheaters, Impostors, and Chymists.

He feared likewise, that he might treat of his Loue with some indecency, that might redound to the lessening and preiudice of his Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso's* honesty, he desired that he might declare his constancy, and the decorum that hee had euer kept toward her, contemning Queenes and Empresses, and Damo-sels of all sorts, keeping distance with violencies of naturall motions. *Sancho* and *Carrasco* found him thus tossed and turmoyled in these & many such like imaginations, whom *Don Quixote* receiued with much courtesie.

This Bachelour, though his name was *Samson*, was not very tall, but a notable Wag-halter, leane-faced, but of a good vnderstanding; he was about foure and twenty yeeres of age, round-faced, flat-nosed, and wide-mouthed, all signes of a malicious disposition, and a friend to conceits and merriment, as he shewed it when he saw *Don Quixote*; for hee fell vpon his knees before him, saying, Good Mr. *Don Quixote*, giue me your Greatnesse his hand, for by the habit of *St. Peter*, which I weare, you are, Sir, one of the most complete Knights Errant, that hath beene, or shall be vpon the roundnesse of the earth. Well fare, *Cid Hamete Benengeli*, that left the stories of your Greatnesse to posterity, and more then well may that curious Author fare, that

had

had the care to cause them to bee translated out of the Arabicke into our vulgar Castilian, to the generall entertainment of all men.

*Don Quixote* made him rise, and sayd; Then it seemes my History is extant, and that he was a Moore, and a wise man that made it. So true is (quoth *Samson*) that vpon my knowledge, at this day, there bee printed aboue twelue thousand copies of your History: if not, let *Portugal*, *Barcelona*, and *Valencia* speak, where they haue beene printed, and the report goes, that they are now printing at *Antwerp*, and I haue a kinde of gheele, that there is no Nation or Language where they will not bee translated. One of the things then (quoth *Don Quixote*) that ought to giue a man vertuous and eminent content in, is, to see himselfe living, and to haue a good name from euery bodys mouth, to be printed and in the Presse. I said with a good name: for otherwise, no death could bee equalled to that life. If it bee for good name (said the Bachelour) your Worship carries the prize from all Knights Errant: For the Moore in his language, and the Christian in his, were most carefull to paine to the life, your gallantry, your great courage in attempting of dangers, your patience in aduersities, & your sufferance as well in misfortunes, as in your wounds, your honesty and constancy in the so Platonick loues of your selfe, and my Lady *Donna Dulcinea del Toboso*. I neuer (replied *Sancho*) heard my Lady stiled *Don* before, onely the Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, and there the History erreth somewhat. This is no obiection of moment (said *Carrasco*.) No truly (quoth *Don Quixote*) but tell me, Signior Bachelour, which of the exploits of mine are most ponderous in this History?

In this (said the Bachelour) there bee different opinions, as there bee different tastes: Some delight in the aduventure of the winde-mills, that you tooke to be Briareans and Gyants: Others in that of the fulling-hammers: This man in the description of the two Armies, which afterwards fell out to be two flockes of sheepe; That man doth extoll your aduventure of the dead man, that was carried to be buried at *Segovia*: One saith, that that of the freeing of the gally-slaves goes beyond them all: Another, that none comes neere that of the Benitian Gyants, with the

C

combate



combate of the valorous Biscayner. Tell mee (said *Sancho*) Sr. Bachelour, comes not that in of the *Tangnesian* Carriers? when our precious *Rozinante* longed for the forbidden fruit? The wise man (said *Samson*) left out nothing, he sets downe all most punctually, euen to the very capers that *Sancho* fetcht in the blanket. Not in the blanket (replied *Sancho*) but in the aire, more then I was willing.

According to my thought (sayd *Don Quixote*) there is no humane History in the world, that hath not his changes, especially those that treat of Caualery, which can neuer bee full of prosperous succelles. For all that (replied the Bachelour) there be some that haue read your History, that would bee glad the Authors had omitted some of those infinite bastings, that in diuers encounters, were giuen Sr. *Don Quixote*. I, there (quoth *Sancho*) comes in the truth of the Story. They might likewise in equity silence them, (said *Don Quixote*) since those actions that neither change nor alter the truth of the Story, are best left out, if they must redound to the misprizing of the chiefe person of the History. *Aeneas* if faith was ne're so pitifull, as *Virgil* paints him out: Nor *Vlisses* so subtile, as *Homer* describes him. True it is (sayd *Samson*) but it is one thing to write like a Poet, and another like an Historian; the Poet may say or sing things, not as they were, but as they ought to haue beene: And the Historian must write things, not as they ought to bee, but as they haue beene, without adding or taking away ought from the truth.

Well, (said *Sancho*) if you goe to telling of truths, wee shall finde that this Signior Moore hath all the bastings of my Master and mee; for I am sure they neuer tooke measure of his Worships shoulders, but they tooke it of all my body too: but no maruell, for as my Master himselfe saith, the rest of the parts must participate of the heads griefe. *Sancho*, you are a Crack-rope (quoth *Don Quixote*) I saith you want no memory, when you list to haue it. If I would willingly forget those cudgellings that I haue had, the bunches yet fresh on my ribs would not consent. Peace, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) and interrupt not the Bachelour, whom I request to proceede, and tell mee what is

said

said of mee in the mentioned History. And of mee too (said *Sancho*) for it is said, that I am one of the principall Parsonages of it. Parsonages, and not Parsonages, you would say *Sancho* (quod *Samson*.) More correcting of words (quoth *Sancho*?) Goe to this; and we shall not end in all our life-time. Hang me, *Sancho* (said *Samson*) if you be not the second person in the Story, and you haue some, that had as lief heare you speake, as the best there: though others will not sticke to say, you were too credulous to belecue, that your gouernment of the Iland offered by Sr. *Don Quixote* heere present, might be true.

There is yet sun-shine vpon the wals (quoth *Don Quixote*) and when *Sancho* comes to be of more yeeres, with the experience of them, he will be more able and fit then now, to bee a Gouernour. By the Masse (said *Sancho*) if I bee not fit to gouerne an Iland at these yeeres, I shall neuer gouerne, though I come to be as old as *Methusalem*; the mischief is, that the said Iland is delaid I know not how, and not that I want braine to gouerne it. Leauce all to God, *Sancho* (said *Don Quixote*) for all will be well, and perhaps better then you thinke for; and the leaues in the tree mooue not without the will of God.

Tis true indeed (said *Samson*) for if God will, *Sancho* shall not want a thousand Ilands, much lesse one. I haue scene (sayd *Sancho*) of your Gouernours in the world, that are not worthy to wipe my shooes, and for all this, they giue vntitles, and are serued in plate. Those are not Gouernours of Ilands (replied *Samson*) but of other easier Gouernments: for they that gouerne Ilands, must bee at least *Grammarians*. For your Gra, I care not, but your Mare I could like well enough: but leauing this gouernment to Gods hands, let him place me where he pleaseth: I say, Sr. Bachelour *Samson Carrasco*, that I am infinitely glad that the Author of the History hath spoken of me, in such sort, that the things he speakes of me, doe not cloy the Reader, for by the faith of a Christian, if he had spoken any thing of mee not befitting an old Christian as I am, I should make deafe men heare on't. That were to worke miracles, said *Samson*. Miracles or not miracles (quoth *Sancho*) euery man looke how hee speaks or writes of men, and set not down each thing that comes

\* In Spanish. *Christiano viejo*, a name they desire to be distinguished from the Moores by.

into his noddle in a mingle-mangle. One of the faults that they say (saide *Carrasco*) is in that History, is this; that his Author put in it a certaine Nouell or Tale, intituled the *Curious Impertinent*, not that it was ill, or not well contriued, but that it was vnseasonable for that place, neither had it any thing to doe with the History of *Don Quixote*.

He hold a wager (quoth *Sancho*) the Dog-bolt hath made a Gallimawfry. Let me tell you (saide *Don Quixote*) the Author of my Story is not wise, but some ignorant Prater, that at vnawares and without iudgement vnderooke it, hab-nab, as *Orbanes*; the Painter of *Vbea*, who being asked what he painted, answered, As it happens, sometimes he would paint yee a Cocke, but so vnlike, that he was forced to write vnderneath it in Gothith letters, *This is a Cocke*; and thus I beleue it is with my History; that it hath neede of a Comment to make it vnderstood.

No surely (replied *Samson*) it is so conspicuous, and so void of difficulty, that children may handle him, youths may read him, men may vnderstand him, and old men may celebrate him: To conclude, he is so gleaned, so read, and so knowne to all sorts of people, that they scarce see a leane horse passe by, when they say, *There goeth Roimante*: And amongst these, Pages are most giuen to read him: You haue no great mans withdrawing room that hath not a *Don Quixote* in him, some take him, if others lay him downe, these close with him, they demand him: Lastly, the Story is the most pleasing, the least hurtfull for entertainment, that hath hitherto beene scene; for all ouer it, there is not to be scene a dishonest word, or one like one; nor an imagination lesse then Catholike.

He that should write otherwise (quoth *Don Quixote*) should write no truths, but lies, and he that doth so, ought to bee burned, like them that coyne false mony; and I know not what the Author meant, to put in Nouels and strange Tales, my Storie affording him matter enough; belike, he holds himselfe to the prouerbe of chaffe & hay, &c. Well, I tell you, out of mentioning onely my thoughts, my sighs, my teares, my honest wishes, and my on-sets, he might haue made a greater volume then all *Tostatus* works. Indeed, Signior Bachelor, all that I conceiue,

is,

is, that to write a History, or any other worke of what sort soeuer, a man had need of a strong iudgement and a ripe vnderstanding: To speake wittily, and write conceits, belongs onely to good wits: The cunningst part in a play, is the Fooles; because he must not be a foole, that would well counterfet to seeme so: An History is as a sacred thing, which ought to be true & reall, and where truth is, there God is, in as much as concerneth truth, howsoeuer; you haue some that doe so compose and cast their workes from them, as if they were Fritters.

There is no booke so bad (saide the Bachelour) that hath not some good in it. No doubt of that (saide *Don Quixote*;) but many times it falls out, that those that haue worthily hoorded vp, and obtained great fame by their writings, when they commit them to the Presse, they either altogether lose it, or in something lessen it. The reason of it (quoth *Samson*) is this, that as the printed workes are viewed by leisure, their faults are easily espied, and they are so much the more pried into, by how much the greater the Authors fame is: Men famous for their wits, great Poets, illustrious Historians, are alwaies or for the most part enuied by them, that haue a pleasure and a particular pastime, to iudge of other mens writings, without publishing their owne. That's not to bee wondred at (cries *Don Quixote*) for there bee many Diuines that are nothing worth in a pulpit, and are excellent in knowing the defect or excelsse of him that preacheth. All this (saide *Carrasco*) Sr. *Don Quixote*, is right, but I could wish such Censurers were more milde, and lesse scrupulous, in looking on the moats of the most cleere sunne of his workes, whom they bite; for if *aliquando bonus dormitat Homerus*, let vm consider how much hee watched, to shew the light of his worke without the least shadow that might bee: and it might bee, that what seemes ill to them, were moles that sometimes increase the beauty of the face that hath them; and thus, I say, that hee that prints a booke, puts himselfe into a manifest danger, being of all impossibilities the most impossible to frame it so, that it may content and satisfie all that shall read it.

The booke that treats of me (quoth *Don Quixote*) will haue pleased very few. Rather contrarie (saies *Samson*) for as *Stil-*



*torum infinitus est numerus*, an infinite number haue been delighted with this History, but some found fault, and craftily taxed the Authors memory, in that hee forgot to tell, who was the theefe that stole *Sancho's* Dapple, for there is no mention there, onely it is inferred that hee was stole, and not long after wee see him mounted vpon the same Asse, without knowledge how he was found. They also say, that he forgot to tell what *Sancho* did with those hundred pistolets, which he found in the Maile in *Sierra Morena*, for he neuer mentions them more, and there be many that desire to know what became of them, and how he employed them, which is one of the essentiall points in the worke.

Master *Samson* (said *Sancho*) I am not now for your reckonings or relations, for my stomacke is faint, and if I fetch it not again with a sup or two of the old Dog, it will make me as gaunt as *Saint Lucia*; I haue it at home, and my Pigs-nie staies for me, when I haue dined I am for ye, and will satisfie you & all the world in any thing you will aske me, aswell touching the losse of mine Asse, as the expence of the hundred pistolets: And so without expecting any reply, or exchanging another word, home he goes. *Don Quixote* intreated the Bachelour to stay and take a pittance with him; The Bachelour accepted the inuitement, and so staid dinner: Beside their ordinary fare, they had a paire of household Pigeons added; at table they discoursed of Cauallery, *Carraſco* followed his humour, the banquet was ended, and they slept out the heat: *Sancho* returned, and the former discourse was renewed.

#### CHAP. IV.

*How Sancho Panſa ſatisfies the Bachelor Samſon Carraſco's doubts and demands; with other accidents worthy to be knowne and related.*

*Sancho* came backe to *Don Quixotes* house, and turning to this former discourse, said: Touching what, M<sup>r</sup>. *Samson* desired

fired to know; who, how, and when mine Asse was stolne: By way of Answer, I say; That the very same night wee fled from the Hue and Cry, we entred *Sierra Morena*, after the vnfortunate aduenture of the Gally-slaues, & the dead man that was carrying to *Segonia*; my Master & I got vs into a thicket, where he leaning vpon his launce, & I vpon my Dapple, both of vs well bruized and wearied with the former skirmishes, we fell to sleep as soundly, as if we had beene vpon foure feather-beds, especially I, that slept so soundly, that he, whoſoeuer hee was, might easily come and put me vpon foure stakes, which he had fastned vpon both sides of my pack-saddle, vpon which he left me thus mounted, and without perceiving it, got my Dapple from vnder mee.

This was easie to be done, and no strange accident; for wee read that the same happened to *Sacripant*, when being at the siege of *Albraca*, that famous Theefe *Brunelo*, with the selfe-same slight got his horse from vnder his legs. *Sancho* proceeds: It was light day (said he) when I had scarce stretched my selfe, but the stakes failed, and I got a good squelch vpon the ground: then I looked for mine Asse, but not finding him, the teares came to mine eyes, and I made such strange moane, that if the Authour of our History omitted it, let him be assured he forgot a worthy passage. I know not how long after, comming with my Lady the Princeſſe *Micomicona*, I knew mine Asse, and that he who rode on him in the habit of a *Gipſon*, was that *Gines de Passamonte*, that Cheater, that arrant Miſchiefe-monger, that my Master and I freed from the Chaine.

The error was not in this (said *Samson*) but that before there was any newes of your Asse, the Authour still said, you were mounted vpon the selfe-same Dapple. I know not what to say to that (quoth *Sancho*) but that either the Historian was deceived, or else it was the carelesnesse of the Printer. Without doubt (saith *Samson*) twas like to bee so: But what became of the Pistolets? Were they spent?

I spent them vpon my selfe (quoth *Sancho*) and on my wife and children, & they haue been the cause that she hath endured my Iournies and Careeres, which I haue fetched in my Master

*Don Quixotes* service: for if I should haue returned empty, and without mine Ass, I should haue been welcommed with a pox: and if you'l know any more of me, heere I am, that will answer the King himselfe in person; and let no body intermeddle to know, whether I brought, or whether I brought not; whether I spent, or spent not; for if the blowes that I haue had in these voyages were to be paid in money, though euery one of them were taxed but at three farthings apiece, an hundred Pistolers more would not pay mee the halfe of them, and let euery man looke to himselfe, and not take white for blacke, and blacke for white, for euery man is as God hath made him, and sometimes a great deale worse.

Let me alone (quoth *Carraasco*) for accusing the Author of the History, that if he print it againe, hee shall not forget what *Sancho* hath said, which shall make it twice as good as it was. Is there ought else, Sr. Bachelour (said *Don Quixote*) to be mended in this Legend? Yes Mary is there (said he) but nothing so important as what hath beene mentioned. Perhaps the Author promisseth a second part (quoth *Don Quixote*?) He doth (said *Samson*) but saith, hee neither findes nor knowes who hath it, so that it is doubtfull, whether it will come out or no: so that partly for this, and partly because some hold that second parts were neuer good; and others, that there is enough written of *Don Quixote*, it is doubted, that there will bee no second part, although some more *Iouiall* then *Saturnists*, cry out; Let's haue more *Quixotismes*: Let *Don Quixote* assault, and *Sancho* speake, let the rest bee what they will, this is enough. And how is the Authour enclined?

To which (said *Samson*) when hee hath found this History, that hee searcheth after with extraordinary diligence, hee will straight commit it to the Presse, rather for his profit tho, then for any other respect. To this (said *Sancho*) What? Doth the Authour looke after money and gaine? tis a wonder if he be in the right: rather he will be like your false stitching Taylours vpon Christmas Eeues: for your hasty work is neuer well performed: let that Mr. Moore haue a care of his businesse, for my Master and I will furnish him with rubbish enough at hand, in  
matter

matter of aduentures, and with such different successles, that he may not onely make one second part, but one hundred: the poore fellow thinkes belike, that we sleep heerein an hay-mow; well, let it come to scanning, and hee shall see whether wee bee defectiue: This I know, that if my Master would take my counsaile, hee should now bee abroad in the Champion, remedying grieuances, rectifying wrongs, as good Knights Errant are wont to doe.

No sooner had *Sancho* ended this discourse, when the neighing of *Rozinante* came to his eares, which *Don Quixote* tooke to be most auspicious, and resolved within three or foure dayes after to make another sally, and manifesting his minde to the Bachelour, asked his aduice to know which way hee should begin his iourney; whose opinion was, That hee should goe to the Kingdome of *Aragon*, and to the City of *Saragosa*; where, not long after, there were solemne Iusts to bee held in honour of *Saint George*, wherein hee might get more fame then all the Knights of *Aragon*, which were aboute all other Knights. Hee praised his most noble and valiant resolution, but withall desired him to be more wary in attempting of dangers, since his life was not his owne, but all theirs also, who needed his protection and succour in their distresse.

I renounce that, Mr. *Samson*, (said *Sancho*) for my Master will set vpon an hundred armed men, as a boy would vpon halfe a doozen of young Melons; Body of the world, Sr. Bachelour, there is a time to attempt, a time to retire, all must not be *Sainte Iacques*, and vpon vin. Besides, I haue heard, and I *Santiago, y Ciua-  
ra España. As*  
beleue from my Master himselfe, (if I haue not forgotten) that valour is a meane betwene the two extremes of a Coward and we vie in Eng-  
a rash man: and if this be so, neither would I haue him fly, nor land, Saint  
follow, without there be reason for it: but aboute all, I wish that *George and the  
Victory.*  
if my Master carry me with him, it be vpon condition, that he fight for vs both, and that I be tied to nothing but waiting vpon him, to looke to his clothes and his diet, for this I will doe as nimble, as bring him water; but to thinke that I will lay hand to my sword, although it be but against base fellowes and poore raskals, is most impossible. I (Mr. *Samson*) strue not to hoord  
vp

vp a fame of being valiant, but of the best and trustiest Squire that euer serued Knight Errant: And if *Don Quixote* my Master, obliged thereunto by my many seruices, will bestow any Iland on mee, of those many, his Worship saith, wee shall light vpon, I shall be much bound to him: and if he giue me none, I was borne, and one man must not liue to relie on another, but on God; and perhaps I shall bee as well with a peece of bread at mine ease, as to be a Gouvernour; and what doe I know, whether in these kindes of governments, the Deuill hath set any tripping-blocke before me, where I may stumble and fall, and dash out my teeth? *Sancho* was I borne, *Sancho* must I die; but for all that, if so and so, without any care or danger, Heauen should provide some Iland for me, or any such like thing, I am not so very an Ass as to refuse it, according to the Prouerbe, Look not a ginen horse in the mouth.

Friend *Sancho* (quoth *Carrasco*) you haue spoken like an Oracle: Notwithstanding, trust in God and Mr. *Don Quixote*, that he will giue you not onely an Iland, but a Kingdome too. I thinke one as well as tother (quoth *Sancho*) and let me tell you, Mr. *Samson*, (saide *Sancho*) I thinke my Masters Kingdome would not bee bestowed on mee in vaine, for I haue felt mine owne pulse, and finde my selfe healthy enough to rule Kingdomes and gouerne Ilands, and thus I haue told my Master many times.

Looke yee, *Sancho* (quoth *Samson*) Honours change manners, and perhaps when you are once a Gouvernour, you may scarce know your owne mother. That's to be vnderstood (saide *Sancho*) of them that are basely borne, and not of those that haue on their soules a foure fingers fat of the old Christian, as I haue: No, but come to my condition, which will bee vngrateful to no body. God grant it (quoth *Don Quixote*) and wee shall see when the Government comes, for me thinks I haue it before mine eyes. (Which saide) he asked the Bachelour whether he were a Poet, and that he would doe him the fauour to make him some verses, the subiect of his farewell to his Mistresse *Dulcinea del Toboso*, and withall, that at the beginning of euery verse, he should put a letter of her name, that so ioyning all the first letters,

\* To expresse his not being borne a Jew, or Moore.

ters, there might bee read *Dulcinea del Toboso*? The Bachelour made answer, that though he were none of the famous Poets of *Spaine*, which they saide were but three & an halfe; yet he would not refuse to compose the saide meeter, although he found a great deale of difficulty in the composition, because there were seuen-teen letters in the name; and, if hee made foure stauces, of each foure verses, that there would be a letter too much; and if hee made them of fife, which they call *Decimi*, there would be three too little; but for all that, hee would see if hee could drowne a letter; so in foure stauces there might be read, *Dulcinea del Toboso*. By all meanes (quoth *Don Quixote*) let it be so: for if the name be not plaine and conspicuous, there is no woman will beleue the meeter was composed for her.

Vpon this they agreed, and that eight dayes after their departure should be. *Don Quixote* enioyned the Bachelour to keep it secret, especially from the Vicar, and a Mr. *Nicholas*, his Neece, and the old woman, lest they should disturbe his noble and valiant resolution. *Carrasco* allured him, and so tooke leaue, charging *Don Quixote* he should let him heare of all his good or bad fortune, at his best leisure. So they tooke leaue, and *Sancho* went to provide for their iourney.

The Barber.

## CHAP. V.

*Of the wise and pleasant discourse, that passed betwixt Sancho Panza and his wife Teresa Panza, and other accidents worthy of happy remembrance.*

THE Translatour of this History, when he came to write this fifth Chapter, saies, that hee holds it for *Apocrypha*, because *Sancho* speakes in it after another manner then could be expected from his slender vnderstanding, and speakes things more acutely then was possible for him, yet hee would translate it, for the accomplishment of his promise, and so goes on, as followeth.

*Sancho* came home so iocund and so merry, that his wife perceived

cciued it a flight-shot off, insonmuch that shee needs would aske him; Friend *Sancho*, what's the matter that you are so ioyfull? To which he answered: Wife, I would to God I were not so glad as I make shew for. I vnderstand you not, husband (quoth shee) and I vnderstand not what you meane, that if it pleased God, you would not bee so contented; for though I bee a foole, yet I know not who would willingly be sad.

Looke yee, *Teresa* (said *Sancho*) I am iolly, because I am determined to serue my Master *Don Quixote*, once more, who will now this third time sally in pursuit of his aduentures, and I also with him, for my pouerty will haue it so; besides my hope that reioyceth me, to thinke that I may finde another hundred Pistols, for those that are spent: Yet I am sad againe, to leaue thee and my children, and if it pleased God that I might liue quietly at home, without putting my selfe into those Delarts and crosse-waies, which he might easily grant if he pleased and were willing; it is manifest, that my content might bee more firme and wholesome, since the present ioy I haue, is mingled with a sorrow to leaue thee: so that I said well, I should bee glad if it pleased God I were not so contented.

Eie, *Sancho* (replied *Teresa*) euery since thou hast been a member of a Knight Errant, thou speakest so round-about the bush, that no body can vnderstand thee. It is enough (quoth *Sancho*) that God vnderstands mee, who vnderstands all things, and so much for that: but marke, Sister, I would haue you for these three daies, looke well to my Dapple, that hee may bee fit for Armes, double his allowance, seeke out his pack-saddle, and the rest of his tackling; for wee goe not to a marriage, but to compasse the world, and to giue and take, with Gyants, Sprights and Hobgoblins, to heare hissing, roaring, bellowing, and bawling: and all this were sweet meat, if we had not to doe with a *Tangneses* and enchanted Moores.

I beleue indeede (quoth *Teresa*) that your Squires Errant gaine not their bread for nothing: I shall therefore pray to our Lord, that he deliuer you speedily from this misfortune. He tell you, wife (said *Sancho*) if I thought not ere long to bee Gouernour of an Iland, I should die suddenly. None of that, Husband,

band (quoth *Teresa*): Let the hen liue, though it bee with her pip; Liue you, and the Deuill take all the Gouernments in the world, without Gouernment were you borne, without Gouernment haue you liued hitherto, and without Gouernment must you goe, or bee carried to your graue, when it shall please God. How many be there in the world, that liue without Gouernments, yet they liue well enough, and well esteemed of? Hunger is the best sawce in the world, and when the poore want not this, they eat contentedly. But harken, *Sancho*, if you should chance to see a Gouernment, pray forget not mee and your children: little *Sancho* is now iust fiftene yeeres old, and tis fit he goe to school, if his vncle the Abbot meane to make him a Church-man: And looke yeto, *Mary Sancho* our daughter will not die, if we marry her, for I suspect she desires marriage, as much as you your Gouernment, and indeed a daughter is better ill married, then well Paramour'd.

I good faith (quoth *Sancho*) if I haue ought with my Gouernment, Wife, *Mary Sancho* shall be so highly married, that she shall be called Lady at least. Not so, *Sancho* (quoth *Teresa*) the best way is to marry her with her equall, for if in stead of her pattins you giue her a high shooes, if in stead of a coarse petticoat, a farthingale and like kirtle, and from little *Mary*, my Lady *Whacham*, the girle will not know her selfe, and shee will euery foot fall into a thousand errors, discovering the thred of her grosse and coarse web.

Peace, foole (sayd *Sancho*) all must bee two or three yeeres practice, and then her greatniellie will become her, and her state fall out pat: howsoeuer, what matter is it? let her be your Ladyship, and come what will on it. Measure your selfe by your meanes (said *Teresa*) and seeke not after greater, keepe your selfe to the Prouerbe; Let neighbours children hold together: Twere pretty if faith to marry our *Mary* with a great Lord or Knight, that when the toy takes him in the head, should newmould her, calling her milke-maid, Boores daughter, Rocke-peeler: not while I liue, Husband: for this forsooth haue I brought vp my daughter? Get you money, *Sancho*, and for marrying her, let me alone: Why, there's *Lope Tocho*, *John Tocho*

\* The Carriers that beat the Master and man. Vide 1. part. Don Quixote.

*cho's* sonne, a sound chopping Lad, wee know him well, and I know, he casts a sheepes eye vpon the wench, and tis good marrying her with this her equall, and wee shall haue him alwayes with vs, and wee shall bee all one : Parent, sonnes, and grand-sonnes, and sonne in law, and Gods peace and blessing will alwayes be amongst vs, and let not me haue her married into your Courts and Grand Palaces, where they'll neither vnderstand her, nor she them.

Come hither, Beast (quoth *Sancho*) Woman of *Barrabas*, why wilt thou, without any reason, hinder mee from marrying my daughter where shee may bring mee grand-sonnes that may be stiled Lordship? Behold, *Teresa*, I haue alwayes heard mine Elders say, That he that will not when hee may, when hee desireth, shall haue nay : And it is not fit that whilst good lucke is knocking at our doore, we shut it: let vs therefore saile with this prosperous winde. (For this and for that which followeth, that *Sancho* spoke, the Author of the History sayes, hee held this Chapter for *Apocrypha*.) Doe not you thinke, Bruit-one (sayd *Sancho*) that it will be fit to fall vpon some beneficiall Government, that may bring vs out of want : and to marry our Daughter *Sancho* to whom I please, and you shall see how she shall bee called *Dona Teresa Panfa*; and sit in the Church with your carpet and your cushions, and your hung-clothes, in spite of the Gentle-women of the towne? No, no, remaine still as you are, in one estate, without increasing or diminishing, like a picture in hangings; goe to, let's haue no more, little *Sancho* must bee a Countesse, say thou what thou wilt.

What a coyle you keepe (quoth *Teresa*?) for all that, I feare this Earledome will be my daughters vndoing, yet doe what ye will, make her Dutchesse or Princesse; it shall not bee with my consent : I haue alwayes loued equality, and I cannot abide to see folkes take vpon vm without grounds, I was Christned *Teresa*, without welt or gard, nor additions of *Don* or *Dona*, my fathers name was *Cascaio*, and because I am your wife, they call me *Teresa Panfa*, for indeed they should haue called me *Teresa Cascaio* : But great ones may doe what they list, and I am well enough content with this name, without putting any *Don* vpon it,

it, to make it more troublesome, that I shall not be able to beare it, and I will not haue folke laugh at mee, as they see mee walke in my Countesses apparell, or my Gouvernasses, you shall haue them cry straight, Looke how stately the Hog-rubber goes, she that was but yesterday at her spindle, and went to Church with the skirt of her coat ouer her head in stead of an Huke, to day she is in her Varthingale and her buttons, and so demure, as if we knew her not : God keepe mee in my seuen wits, or my sue, or those that I haue, and Ile not put my selfe to such hazards; Get you, Brother, to bee a Gouvernment or an Iland, and take state as you please, for by my mothers *Holy-dam*, neither I nor my daughter will stirre a foot from our village: better a broken ioynt then a lost name, and keepe home, the honest mayd, to bee doing is her trade, goe you with *Don Quixote* to your aduentures, and leaue vs to our ill fortunes; God will send better, if we be good, and I know not who made him a *Don*, or a title which neither his Father nor his Grand-father euer had.

Now I say (quoth *Sancho*) thou hast a Familiar in that body of thine : Lord blesse thee for a woman, and what a company of things hast thou strung vp without head or feet? What hath your *Cascaio*, your buttons, or your Prouerbes, or your state, to doe with what I haue sayd? Come hither Cox-combe, foole (for so I may call you, since you vnderstand not my meaning, and neglect your happinell) If I should say, my daughter should cast her selfe downe some Towre, or she should roue vp and downe the world, as did the Princesse *Dona Urraca*, you had reason not to consent : But if in lesse then two trap-blowes, or the opening & shutting of an eye, I clapyee a *Don* and *Ladiship* vpon your shoulders, and bring it out of your stubble, and put it you vnder barne-couer, and set you in your state, with more Cushions then the *Almohada* Moores had in all their linage: why, will you not consent to that, that I would haue you? Would you know why, Husband (answered *Teresa*?) for the Prouerbe that sayes; He that couers thee, discouers thee : Euer yone passeth his eyes slightly ouer the poore, and vpon the rich man they fasten them, and if the said rich man haue at any time

An Infanta of  
Spain.

time beene poore, there is your grumbling and cursing, and your back-biters neuer leaue, who swarme as thicke as hives of Bees thorow the streets.

Marke, *Teresa* (said *Sancho*) and giue care to my speech, such as peradventure you haue not heard in all you life time, neither doe I speake any thing of mine owne, for all I purpose to speak, is sentences of our Preacher, that preached all last Lent in this Towne, who (as I remember) said, that all things that wee see before our eyes present, assitt our memory much better, and with more vehemency, then things past.

(All these reasons heere deliuered by *Sancho*, are the second, for which the Translatour of the History holds this chapter for *Apocrypha*, as exceeding the capacity of *Sancho*, who proceeded, saying :)

Whereupon it happens, that when wee see some personage well clad in rich apparrell, and with many followers, it seemes hee mooues and inuites vs perforce to giue him respect : although our memory at that very instant represents vnto vs some kinde of basenesse, which we haue seen in that personage, the which doth vilifie him, bee it either for pouerty or linage, both passed ouer, are not : and that which wee see present, only is. And if this man (whom fortune blotted out of his basenesse, and to whom consequently his father left all height of prosperity) be well-behaued, liberall and courteous towards all men, and contends not with such, as are most anciently noble, assure thy selfe, *Teresa*, all men will forget what he was, and reuerence him for what hee is, except the enuious, whom the greatest scape not. I vnderstand you not, Husband (replied *Teresa*) doe what you will, and doe not trouble me with your long speeches and your *Rhetoricke*: and if you be reuolued to doe what you say. Resolued you must say, Wife (quoth *Sancho*) and not reuolued. I pray dispute not with mee, Husband (sayd *Teresa*) I speake as it pleases God, and strue not for more eloquence : and I tell you, if you persist in hauing you Government, take your sonne *Sancho* with you, and teach him from henceforth to gouerne ; for it is fit that the sonnes doe inherit, and learne the offices of their fathers.

When

When I haue my Government (quoth *Sancho*) I will send Post for him, and I will send thee monies, for I shall want none, and there neuer want some that will lend Gouvernours money when they haue none : but clothe him so, that hee may not appeare what he is, and may seeme what he must bee. Send you money (quoth *Teresa*) and Ile clad him like a Dare-leafe. So that now (sayd *Sancho*) wee are agreed that our daughter shall bee a Countesse.

The day that I shall see her a Countesse (said *Teresa*) will bee my deaths day : But I tell you againe, doe what you will, for we women are borne with this clog, to bee obedient to our husbands, though they be no better then Leekes : And heere she began to weep so heartily, as if her little daughter *Sancho* had been dead and buried. *Sancho* comforted her, saying, that though she must bee a Countesse, yet hee would deferre it as long as hee could. Heere their Dialogue ended, and *Sancho* returned to see *Don Quixote*, to giue order for their departure.

## CHAP. VI.

*What passed betwixt Don Quixote, his Neece, and the old woman : and it is one of the most materiall Chapters in all the History.*

**W**Hilst *Sancho* and his wife were in this impertinent aforesayd discourse, *Don Quixotes* Neece and olde woman were not idle, and by a thousand signes ghesse, that her Vnckle and their Master would a slashing the third time, and returne to the exercising of his (for them) ill Knight Errantry ; they sought by all meanes possible to diuert him from so bad a purpose : but all was to no purpose, to preach in a Desert, or to beat cold iron.

Notwithstanding, amongst many other discourses that passed betwixt them, the old woman told him ; Truly Master, if you keepe not your foot still, and rest quiet at home, and suffer your selfe to be led thorow mountaines and valleyes, like a soule  
D in



in Purgatory, seeking after those they call adventures, which I call misfortunes, I shall complaine on you, and cry out to God and the King, that they remedie it. To which, *Don Quixote* answered; Woman, what God will answer to your complaints, I know not, nor what his Maiesty will: onely I know, if I were a King, I would save a labour in answering such an infinity of foolish Petitions, as are giuen him daily: for one of the greatest toyles (amongst many others that Kings haue) is this, to bee bound to harken to all, to answer all; therefore I would bee loth, that ought concerning mee, should trouble him. Then (quoth the old woman) tell vs Sir, In his Maiesties Court bee there not Knights? Yes (answered hee) and many, and good reason, for the adornment and greatness of Princes, and for ostentation of the Royall Maiesty. Why? would not your Worship (replied she) bee one of them that might quietly serue the King your Master at Court?

Looke yee, friend (answered *Don Quixote*) All Knights cannot be Courtiers, nor all Courtiers neither can, nor ought to be Knights Errant; in the world there must bee of all sorts, and though wee bee all Knights, yet the one and the other differ much: For your Courtiers, without stirring out of their chambers, or ouer the Court thresholds, can travell all the world ouer, looking vpon a Map, without spending a mite, without suffering heat, cold, hunger, or thirst. But wee, the true Knights Errant, with sunne, with cold, with aire, with all the inclemencies of Heauen, night and day, a horse-backe and on foot, doe trace the whole world thorow: And wee doe not know our enemies by supposition, as they are painted, but in their reall being, and at all times, and vpon euery occasion wee set vpon vm, without standing vpon trifles, or on the lawes of *Duello*, whether a sword or a lance were longer or shorter, whether either of the parties wore a charme, or some hidden deceit, if they shall fight after the Sunnes going downe or no, with other ceremonies of this nature, which are vsed in single combates betwixt man and man, that thou knowest not of, but I doe. Know further, that the good Knight Errant (although he see ten Gyants, that with their heads, not onely touch, but ouertop the clouds,

clouds, and that each of them hath legs as big as two great towres, and armes like the masts of mighty ships, and each eye as big as a mill-wheele, and more fiery then a glasse ouen) must not be affrighted in any wise, rather with a stayd pace and vndaunted courage, hee must set on them, close with them; and if possible, ouercome, and make vm turne taile in an instant; yea, though they came armed with the shels of a certaine fish, which (they say) are harder then Diamonds, and though instead of swords, they had cutting skeines of *Damasco* Steele, or iron clubs with pikes of the same, as I haue scene them more then once or twice. All this haue I said, woman mine, that you may see the difference betwixt some Knights and others, and it is reason that Princes should more esteeme this second, or (to say shorter) this first *Species* of Knights Errant (for as we read in their histories) such an one there hath beene amongst them, that hath beene a safe-guard not onely of one Kingdome, but many.

Ah Sir, then said his Neece, beware; for all is lies and fiction that you haue spoken, touching your Knights Errant, whose stories, if they were not burnt, they deserue each of them at least to haue a penance inflicted vpon them, or some note, by which they might bee knowne to bee infamous, and ruiners of good custome.

I assure thee certainly (quoth *Don Quixote*) if thou wert not lineally my Neece, as daughter to mine owne Sister, I would so punish thee for the blasphemy thou hast spoken, as should resound thorow all the world. Is it possible that a Pilse-kitchin, that scarce knowes how to make Bone-lace, dares speake and censure the histories of Knights Errant? What would Sr. *Amadis*, haue said if hee should haue heard this? But I warrant hee would haue forgien thee, for hee was the humblest and most courteous Knight of his time; and moreover, a great Protector of Damozels: but such an one might haue heard thee, that thou mightest haue repented thee; for all are not courteous, or pitifull, some are harsh and brutish. Neither are all that beare the name of Knights, so, truly; for some are of gold, others of Alchymy, yet all seeme to be Knights: but all cannot brooke the touchstone of truth: You haue some base Knaues that burst againe to

seeme Knights, and some that are Knights, that kill themselves in post-haste till they become Peasants: The one either raise themselves by their ambition, or vertue; the others fall, either by their negligence, or vice; and a man had need be wise to distinguish betwene these two sorts of Knights, so neere in their names, so distant in their actions.

Helpe me God (quoth the Neece) that you should know so much Vnckle, as were it in case of necessity, you might step into a pulpit, and preach in the streets, and for all that you goe on so blindly, and fall into so eminent a madnesse, that you would haue vs thinke you valiant, now you are old, that you are strong, being so sickly, that you are able to make crooked things straight, being crooked with yeeres, and that you are a Knight when you are none? for though Gentle-men may bee Knights, yet the poore cannot.

You say well, Neece, in that (quoth *Don Quixote*) and I could tell thee things concerning linages, that should admire thee, but because I will not mingle Diuinity with Humanity, I say nothing: Marke yee hoe, to foure sorts of linages (harken to me) may all in the world be reduc'd, and they are these. Some that from base beginnings haue arriued at the greatest honours. Others that had great beginnings, and so conserue them till the end. Others, that though they had great beginnings, yet they end pointed like a *Pyramis*, hauing lessened & annihilated their beginning, till it ends in nothing. Others there are (and these the most) that neither had good beginning, nor reasonable middle, and so they passe away without mention, as the lineage of the *Othomans* bee an example to thee of the first, who had an obscure beginning, but rose to the greatnesse they now preferue, that from a base and poore shepheard that gaue them their first beginning, haue come to this height, in which now we see them. Many Princes may be an instance of the second lineage, that began in greatnesse, and was so preserved, without augmentation or diminution, onely kept their inheritance, containing themselves within the limits of their own Kingdomes peacefully. Thousands of examples there bee of

\* An vsuall thing in Spaine, that a Friar or le-suite (when a fiery zeale takes him) makes his pulpit in any part of the street, or market-place.

such, as began in greatnesse, and lessened towards their end. For all your *Pharaos*, your *Ptolomies* of *Egypt*, your *Cesars* of *Rome*, with all the hurric (if I may so terme them,) of your infinite Princes, Monarchs, Lords, Medes, Assyrians, Persians, Grecians, and Barbarians, all these linages, all these Lordships ended, pointed, and came to nought, as well they, as those that gaue them beginning, for it is not possible to finde any of their successors, and if it were, hee must bee in meane and base estate; with the common sort I haue nothing to doe, since they only liue, and serue to increase the number of men, without deseruing more fame, or elogie of their greatnesse.

Thus much (fooles) you may inferre from all that hath beene said, that the confusion of linages is very great; and that those are the most great & glorious, that shew it in the vertue, wealth, and liberalitie of their owners. Vertue, wealth, and liberality (I say) for that great man that is vicious, will be the more so, by his greatnesse, and the rich man not liberall, is but a couetous begger, for he that possesseth riches, is not happie in them, but in the spending them, not only in spending, but in well spending them. The poore Knight hath no way to shew he is a Knight, but that he is vertuous, affable, well fashioned, courteous, and well behaved, and officious. not proud, not arrogant, not backbiting, and aboue all, charitable: for in a penie (that he giues cheerefully to the poore) he shewes himselfe as liberall, as he that for ostentation giues an Almes before a multitude, and there is no man that sees him adorned with these vertues, but although he know him not, he will iudge of him, and thinke he is well descended: for if he were not, 'twere miraculous, & the reward of vertue hath beene alwaies praise, and the vertuous must needs be praised.

There be two courses for men to come to be wealthy and noble by, the one is Artes, tother Armes. I haue more armes then learning, and was borne (according to my inclination that way) vnder the influence of the Planet *Mars*, so that I must of force follow his steps, which I meane to doe in spite of all the world, and it is in vaine for you to strue to perswade me, that I should nill what the heauens will me, fortune ordaines, and rea-



son requires, and above all, my affection desires. Well; in knowing (as I know) the innumerable troubles that are annexed to Knight Errantry, so I know the infinite goods that are obtained with it. And I know that the path of vertue is very narrow, and the way of vice large and spacious. And I know that their endes and resting places are different, for that of vice, large and spacious endes in death, and that of vertue, narrow and cumbersome endes in life, and not in a life that hath ending, but that is endlesse. And I know what a our great Castillian Poet said,

*To the high Seate of Immortalitie  
Through crabbed paths, we must our iourney take,  
Whence he that faller, can neuer climbe so hie.*

Woe is me (said the Neece) my Master too is a Poet, he knowes euery thing: I hold a wager, if he would be a Mason, he would build a house as easily as a cage. I promise thee, Neece (qd. *Don Quixote*) if these knightly cogitations did not wrap my senses, there is nothing I could not doe, nor no curiositie should scape me, especially cages, and tooth-pickers. By this one knockt at the doore, & asking who was there, *Sancho* answered, Tis I. The old woman, as soone as she heard him, ranne to hide her selfe, because she would not see him, for she could not abide him. The Neece let him in, and his Master *Don Quixote* went to receiue him with open armes: & they both locked themselves in, where they had another Dialogue as good as the former.

## CHAP. VII.

*what passed betwixt Don Quixote and his Squire, with other most famous accidents.*

THE olde woman, as soone as shee saw her Master and *Sancho* locked together, began to smell their drift, and imagining that his third fall would result from that consultation, and taking her mantle, full of sorrow and trouble, she went to seeke the Bachelour *Samson Carrasco*, supposing, that as he was wel spoken, & a late acquaintāce of *Don Quixotes*, he

he might perswade him to leaue his doting purpose; she found him walking in the Court of his house, and seeing him, she fell downe in a cold sweate, (all troubled) at his feet. When *Carrasco* saw her so sorrowfull and affrighted, he asked her: Whats the matter? what accident is this? Me thinkes thy heart is at thy mouth. Nothing (said she) Mr. *Samson*, but my Master is run out, doubtlesse, he is run out. And where runs he, said he? hath he broken a hole in any part of his body? He runnes not out (answered she) but out of the doore of his madnell: I meane, sweete sir Bachelour, he meanes to be a gadding againe, and this is his third time, he hath gone a hunting after thole you call adventures: I know not why they giue vm this name. The first time they brought him vs athwart vpon an Ass beaten to pieces. The second time he came clapt vp in an Oxe-Wayne, and locked in a Cage, and he made vs beleue hee was enchanted, & the poore soule was so changed, that his mother that brought him forth, would not haue knowne him, so leane, so wan, his eyes so sunke into his head, that I spent aboute sixe hundreth egges to recouer him, as God is my witness, and all the world, and my hennies that will not let me lye. That I well beleue (quoth the Bachelour) for they are so good, and so fat, and so well nurtured, that they will not say one thing for another if they should burst for it. Well, is there ought else? hath there any other ill lucke hapned more then this you feare, that your Master will abroad? No Sir, (said she:) Take no care (quoth he) but get you home on Gods name, and get me some warme thing to breakefast, and by the way as you goe, pray me the Orison of Saint *Apolonia*, if you know it, and Ile go thither presently, and you shall see wonders.

Wretch that I am (quoth shee) the Orison of Saint *Apolonia* quoth you, that were, if my Master had the toothach, but his paine is in his head. I know what I say (quoth hee) and doe not you dispute with me, since you know I haue proceeded Bachelour at *Salamanca*: doe yee thinke there is no more then to take the degree (said he?) With that, away she goes and he went presently to seeke the Vicar, and communicate with him, what shall be said hereafter.

At the time that *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* were locked together, there palled a discourse betweene them, which the historie tels with much punctualitie, and a true relation.

*Sancho* said to his Master, I have now reluc't my wife to let me goe with you whither soeuer you please; redue't you would say, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*.) I haue bid you more then once (if I haue not forgotten) said *Sancho*, that you doe not correct my words, it is to be you vnderstand my meaning, and when you doe not vnderstand them, cry, *Sancho*, or Diuell, I vnderstand thee not: and if I doe not expresse my selfe, then you may correct me, for I am so focible.

I vnderstand thee not, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) for I know not the meaning of your focible. So focible is (said *Sancho*) I am so, so. Lesse and lesse doe I vnderstand (said *Don Quixote*.) Why if you do not vnderstand (said *Sancho*) I cannot do withall, I know no more, & God be with me. Thou meanest docible I beleue, and that thou art so pliant, and so taking, that thou wilt apprehend what I shall tell thee, and learne what I shall instruct thee in.

He lay a wager (said *Sancho*) you searched and vnderstood me at first, but that you would put me out, and heare me blunder out a hundreth or two of follies. It may bee so (quoth *Don Quixote*) but what saies *Teresa*? *Teresa* bids mee make sure worke with you, and that wee may haue lesse saying, and more doing, for great sayers are small doers. A bird in the hand, is worth two in the bush. And I say, a womans aduice is but slender, yet he that refuseth it, is a madman. I say so too (quoth *Don Quixote*.) But say (friend *Sancho*) proceede, for to day thou speakest preciously.

The busineste is (quoth *Sancho*) that as you better know then I, wee are all mortall, here to day, and gone to morrow, as soone goes the yong lambe to the roste, as the olde sheepe, and no man can promise himselfe more daies then God hath giuen him, for death is deafe, and when she knocks at lifes doore, she is in haste, neither threats, nor entreaties, nor Scepters, nor miters can stay her, as the common voice goes, and as they tell vs in Pulpits.

All this is true (saide *Don Quixote*) but I know not where thou

thou meanest to stop. My stoppe is (quoth *Sancho*) that your Worship allow me some certaine wages by the moneth, for the time that I shall serue you, and that the said wages be paid me out of your subltance, for he trust no longer to good turnes, which come either slowly, or meanelly, or neuer, God giue mee ioy of mine owne. In a word, I must know what I may gaine, little or much: for the henne layes atwell vpon one egge as many, and many littles make a mickle, and whilst something is gotten, nothing is lost. Indeepe, if it should so happen (which I neither beleue, nor hope for) that your Worship should giue mee the Island you promised me, I am not so vngatefull, nor would carrie things with such extremity, as not to haue the rent of that Island prized, and so to discount for the wages I receiued, cantitie for cantitie. Is not quantitie as much worth as cantitie, friend *Sancho*, answered *Don Quixote*? I vnderstand you now, said *Sancho*, and dare lay any thing that I should haue said quantitie, and not cantitie: but that's no matter, seeing you haue vnderstood mee. I vnderstand yee very well (answered *Don Quixote*) and haue penterated the vtmost of your thoughts, and know very well, what marke you ayme at, with the innumerable arrowes of your proverbes.

Looke yee, *Sancho*, I could willingly affoord you wages, if I had found in any Histories of Knights Errant, any example that might giue me light, through the least chinke, of any wages giuen monethly or yeerely: but I haue read all, or the most part of their Histories, and doe not remember that euer I haue read, that any Knight Errant hath allowed any set wages to his Squire. Only I know, that all liued vpon countenance, and when they least dreamt of it, if their Masters had had good lucke, they were rewarded, either with an Island or some such thing equivalent, and at least they remained with honour and title.

If you, *Sancho*, vpon these hopes and additaments haue a minde to returne to my seruice, a Gods name; but to thinke that I will plucke the old vse of Knight Errantry out of his bounds, and off the hindges, is a meere impossibility. So that, *Sancho*, you may goe home, and tell your *Teresa* mine intention; and if that shee and you will rely vpon my fauour, *bene quidem*; and if

not,

not, let's part friends; for if my pigeon-house haue Comyns, it will want no Doues. And take this by the way, A good expectation is better then a bad possession, and a good demand better then an ill pay. I speake thus, *Sancho*, that you may see, I know as well as you, to sprinkle Prouerbes like raine-showres. Lastly, let me tell you, if you will not trust to my reward, and run the same fortune with me, God keepe you, and make you a Saint, for I shall not want more obedient Squires, and more carefull, and not so irksome, nor so talkatiue as you.

When *Sancho* heard his Masters firme resolution, hee waxed clowdy, and the wings of his heart began to stoope; for hee thought verily his Master would not goe without him, for all the treasure in the world. Thus being doubtfull and pensatiue, *Samson Carrasco* entred, and the Neece desirous to heare how he perswaded her Master that hee should not returne to his adventures.

In came *Samson*, a notable Crack-rope, and embracing him as at first, began in this loud key: Oh flower of Chiuahrie, brighthe light of Armes, honour and mirrour of our Spanish nation: may it please almighty God of his infinite goodnesse, that he, or they, that hinder or disturbe this thy third sally, that they neuer finde it in the Labyrinth of their desires, nor let the ill they wish, for euer be accomplished. And turning to the old woman, he said: You neede no longer pray the Orison of Saint *Apolonia*. for I know, the determination of the spheres, is, that *Don Quixote* put in execution his loftie and new delignes, and I should much burden my conscience, if I should not perswade and intimate vnto this Knight, that hee doe no longer withdraw and hold backe the force of his valerous arme, and the courage of his most valiant minde, for with his delaying he defraudes the rectifying of wrongs, the protection of Orphans, the honor of Damisels, the bulwarke of married women, and other matters of this qualitie, which concern, appertain, depend, & are annexed vnto the order of Knight Errantie. Go on then, my beautifull, my braue *Don Quixote*, rather to day then to morrow, let your Greatnesse be vpon the way, and if any thing be wanting to your iourney, here am I to supply with my wealth, with my person, and if neede

need be, to be thy Magnificence his Squire, which I shall hold a most happy fortune. Then (said *Don Quixote*) turning to *Sancho*, Did not I tell thee, *Sancho*, that I should want no Squires? See who offers himselfe to mee: the most rare Bachelour *Samson Carrasco*, the perpetuall darling and delighter of the Salamancan schooles, sound and actiue of body, silent, suffering of heates and coldes, hunger and thirst, with all the abilities that belong to the Squire of a Knight Errant: but heauen forbid, that for my pleasure, I hox and breake off the Columnne of learning, the vessel of Sciences, and that I lop off the eminent branch of the liberall Arts: Remain thou another *Samson* in thy Countrey, honour it, and those gray haire of thine aged Parents, for I will content my selfe with any Squire, since *Sancho* daignes not to attend mee.

I doe daigne, said *Sancho*, (all tender) and the teares standing in his eyes, and thus proceeds: It shall not be sayd, Master, for me, *No longer pipe, no longer dance*; Nor am I made of hardest oake, for all the world knowes, and especially my Towne, who the *Pansa's* were, from whom I descend; besides, I know and haue searched out, by many good works, & many good words, the desire that your Worship hath to doe me a kindnesse, and if I haue beene too blame to meddle in reckonings concerning my wages, it was to please my wife, who when shee once falls into a vaine of perswading, there's no hammer that doth so fasten the hoopes of a Bucket as shee doth, till shee obtaine what she would haue; but howsoeuer, the husband must be husband, and the wife, wife; and since I am a man euery where (I cannot deny that) I will also bee so at home, in spite of any: so that there's no more to bee done, but that you make your will, and set to your Codicill, in such sort, that it may not bee reuolcked, and let's straight to our iourney, that Mr. *Samsons* soule may not suffer; for he saith, his conscience is vnquiet, till hee haue perswaded you to your third sally thorow the world, and I afresh offer my seruice faithfully & loyally, as well and better then anie Squire that euer serued Knight Errant in former times, or in present.

The Bachelour wondred to heare *Sancho's* manner and method

thod of speaking: for though in the first history he had read of his Master, he neuer thought *Sancho* had beene so witty, as they there paint him out, yet hearing him now mention will and Codicill, reuolking in stead of reuoking, he beleueed all that he had read of him, and confirmed him to be one of the most solemnest Cox-combes of our age, and said to himselfe, that two such mad men, as Master and man, were not in all the world agen.

Now *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* embraced, and remained friends, and with the grand *Carrasco's* approbation and good will (who was then their Oracle) it was decreed, that within three daies they should depart, in which they might haue time to prouide all things necessary for their voyage, and to get an helmet, which *Don Quixote* said, hee must by all meanes carry. *Samson* offered him one, for he knew a friend of his would not deny it him, although it were fowler with mould and rust, then bright with smooth Steele.

The Neece and the olde woman cursed the Bachelour vnmmercifully, they tore their haire, scratcht their faces, and as your funerall mourners vse, they howled at their Masters departure, as if he had beene a dead man. The designe that *Samson* had to perswade him to this third sally, was, to doe what the History tels vs heereafter, all by the aduice of the Vicar and the Barber, to whom he had before communicated it. Well, in those three dayes, *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* fitted themselves with what they thought they needed, and *Sancho* hauing set downe the time to his wife, and *Don Quixote* to his Neece, and the olde woman, toward night, without taking leaue of any body, but the Bachelour, who would needs bring them halfe a league from the towne, they tooke their way towards *Toboso*. *Don Quixote* vpon his good *Roxinante*, and *Sancho* on his old Dapple, his wallets were stuffed with prouant, and his purse with money that *Don Quixote* gaue him for their expences. *Samson* embraced him, & desired him that he might heare of his good or ill fortune, to reioyce for the one, or bee sorry for the other, as the law of friendship did require; *Don Quixote* made him a promise. *Samson* returned home, and the two went on towards the famous City of *Toboso*.

## CHAP. VIII.

what befell *Don Quixote*, going to see his Mistress *Dulcinea del Toboso*.

**B**lessed be the powerfull *Ala* (saith *Hamete Benengeli*) at the beginning of this eighth Chapter: Blessed bee *Ala*, which he thrice repeated, and sayd, that he rendred these benedictions, to see that now *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* were vpon their march, and that the Readers of their delightfull History may reckon, that from this time the exployts and conceits of *Don Quixote* and his Squire doe begin: Hee perswades them they should forget the former Chitallry of the noble Knight, and fix their eyes vpon his Acts to come, which begin now in his way towards *Toboso*, as the former did in the fields of *Montiel*, and it is a small request, for so much as he is to performe, so he proceeds, saying:

*Don Quixote* and *Sancho* were now all alone, and *Samson* was scarce gone from them, when *Roxinante* began to neigh, and Dapple to sigh, which, both by Knight and Squire were held for lucky signes, and an happy presaging, though if the truth were tolde, Dapples sighs and brayings were more then the Horses neighing: whereupon *Sancho* collected, that his fortune should exceede and ouer-top his Masters; building, I know not vpon what iudiciall Astrologie, that sure he knew, although the History sayes nothing of it, onely he would often say, when he fell downe or stumbled, he would haue beene glad, not to haue gone abroad: for of stumbling or falling came nothing, but tearing his shooes, or breaking a rib, and though he were a foole, yet he was not out in this.

*Don Quixote* said vnto him; Friend *Sancho*, the night comes on vs apace, and it will grow too darke for vs, to reach *Toboso* ere it be day, whither I am determined to goe, before I vnder-take any aduenture, and there I meane to receiue a benediction, and take leaue of the Peerelesse *Dulcinea del Toboso*, after which I know and am assured, I shall end and close vp euery dangerous

*Ala* amongst the Moores, is as much as *Mahomet* amongst the Turkes.

rous aduerture; for nothing makes Knights Errant more hardy, then to see themselues fauoured by their Mistresses. I beleue it (quoth *Sancho*) but I doubt you will not speake with her, at least, nor see her where you may receiue her blessing, if shee giue you it not from the mud-wals, where I saw her the first time, when I carried the letter and newes of your madde prances, which you were playing in the heart of *Sierra Morena*.

Were those mud-wals in thy fancie, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) where or thorow which thou sawest that neuer-enough-praised gentlenesse and beauty? They were not so, but galleries, walkes, or goodly stone pauements, or how call yee vñ? of rich and royall Palaces. All this might bee (answered *Sancho*) but to me they seemed no better, as I remember. Yet let's go thither (quoth *Don Quixote*) for so I see her; let them be mud-wals, or not, or windowes; all is one, whether I see her thorow chincks, or thorow garden-lettices, for each ray that comes from the sunne of her brightnesse to mine eyes, will lighten mine vnderstanding, and strengthen mine heart, and make me sole and rare in my wisdom and valour.

Truely Sir (sayd *Sancho*) when I saw that sunne, it was not so bright, that it cast any rayes from it, and belike twas, that as she was winnowing the wheat I told you of, the dust that came from it, was like a cloud vpon her face and dimmed it. Still doest thou thinke, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*?) Beleue and grow obllinate, that my Mistris *Dulcinea* was winnowing, it being a labor so vnfit for persons of quality, that vse other manner of exercises and recreation, which shew a slight-shoot off their noblenesse? Thou doest ill remember those verses of our Poet, where he paints out vnto vs, the exercises which those foure Nymphes vsed in their christall habitations, when they aduanced their heads aboue the loued *Tagus*, and sat in the greene fields working those rich embroyderies, which the ingenious Poet there describes vnto vs, all which were of gold, of purple, and wouen with embossed pearles: such was the worke of my Mistris, when thou sawest her, but that the enuy, which some base Enchanter beares to mine affaires, turnes all that should giue me delight, into different shapes, and this makes me

<sup>a</sup> A riuer in  
Spaine.

fear,

fear, that the Historie of my exploits which is in print (if so be some Wizard my enimie were the Author) that he hath put one thing for another, mingling with one truth a hundreth lies, diuerting himselfe to tell tales, not fitting the continuing of a true Historie. Oh enuy thou roote of infinite euils, thou worner of vertues.

All vices, *Sancho*, doe bring a kinde of pleasure with them, but enuy hath nothing but distaste, rancor and raving. I am of that minde too (said *Sancho*) & I thinke that in the Historie that *Carraasco* told vs of, that he had scene of vs, that my credit is turned topsie turuy, and (as they say) goes a begging. Well, as I am honest man, I neuer spoke ill of any Enchanter, neither am I so happie as to be enuid: true it is, that I am somewhat malicious, and haue certaine knauish glimpses: but all is couered and hid vnder the large cloake of my simplicitie, alwaies naturall to me, but neuer artificall: and if there were nothing else in me, but my beleefe (for I beleue in God, and in all that the Romane Church belieues, and am sworne a mortall enimie to the Iewes) the Historians ought to pittie me, and so vse me well in their writings: but let vñ say what they will, naked was I borne, naked I am, I neither winne nor lose, and though they put me in bookes, and carrie me vp and downe from hand to hand, I care not a figge, let vñ say what they will.

'Twas iust the same (quoth *Don Quixote*) that happened to a famous Poet of our times, who hauing made a malicious Satyre against all the Curtizans, he left out one amongst them, as doubting whether she were one or no, who seeing she was not in the scrowle amongst the rest, tooke it vnkindly from the Poet, asking him, what he had scene in her, that he should not put her amongst the rest, and desired him to enlarge his Satyre, and put her in the spare room: if not, she would scratch out his eyes: the Poet consented, and set her downe with a vengeance, and shee was satisfied, to see her selfe famous, although indeed infamous. Besides, the tale of the shepherd agrees with this, that set *Diana's* Temple on fire, which was one of the seuen wonders of the world, because he would bee talked of for it; and although there were an Edict, that no man should either mention him by

speaking

speaking or writing, that he might not attaine to his desire; yet his name was knowne to be *Erostratus*: the same allusion may be had out of an Accident, that befell the great Emperor *Charles* the fift with a Knight of *Rome*.

The Emperour was desirous to see the famous Temple of the *Rotunda*, which in ancient times was called the Temple of all the Gods, and now by a better stile, of all Saints, and it is the only entire edifice that hath remained of all the Gentiles in *Rome*, and that which doth most conferue the Glory and Magnificence of it's founders: tis made like an halfe Orange, exceeding large, and very lightsome, hauing but one window that giues it light, or to say truer, but one round Looer on the top of it: the Emperour looking on the edifice, there was a Romane Knight with him, that shewed him the deuices and contriuing of that great worke and memorable architecture; and stepping from the Looer, said to the Emperour: a thousand times, mightie Monarch, haue I desired to see your Maiestie, and cast my selfe down from this Looer, to leaue an euerlasting fame behind me. I thanke you (said the Emperour) that you haue not performed it, and henceforward, I will giue you no such occasion to shew your loyaltie, and therefore I command you, that you neither speake to me, nor come to my presence; and for all these words, he rewarded him.

I'll tell you, *Sancho*, this desire of honour is an itching thing: What do'st thou thinke cast *Horatius* from the Bridge all arm'd into deepe *Tyber*? What egged *Curtius* to lanch himselfe into the Lake? What made *Mutius* burne his hand? What forced *Cesar* against all the South-sayers to passe the *Rubicon*? And to giue you more moderne examples, What was it bored those ships, and left those valorous Spaniards on ground, guided by the most courteous *Cortez* in the new world?

All these, and other great and seuerall exploits, are, haue bin, and shall be the workes of fame, which mortals desire as a reward, and part of the immortalitie, which their famous artes deserue: though we that be Christian Catholicke Knights Errant, must looke more to the happinesse of another world (which is Eternall in the Ethernall and Celestiall regions) then to the vanti-

tie

tie of fame, which is gotten in this present fraile age, and which, let it last as long as it will, it must haue ending with this world which hath its limited time: so that, oh *Sancho*, our actions must not passe the bounds, that Chrillian Religion (which wee profess) hath put vs in.

In Gyants we must kill pride: enuie in generousnesse and noble breasts: anger in a continent reposed and quiet minde: ryot and drowzinesse, in temperance and vigilance: lasciuiousnesse, in the loyaltie we obserue to those that we haue made the Mistresses of our thoughts: and sloth, by traouelling vp & downe the world, seeking occasions, that may make vs (besides Christians) famous Knights. These, *Sancho*, are the meanes, by which the extremes of glory are obtained, which fame brings with it.

All that you haue hitherto spoken (quoth *Sancho*) I vnderstand passing well: but I would faine haue you zolue me of one doubt, which euen now comes into my head. Resolue, thou wouldst say *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) speake a Gods name, for I'll answer thee, as well as I can. Tell me, Sr, said *Sancho*, these *Iulies*, or *Augusts*, and all these famous Knights you talke of, that are dead, where are they now? The Gentiles, said he, vndoubtedly are in Hell: the Christians, if they were good Christians, either in a Purgatorie, or in Hell. Tis very well, but the Sepulchers where the bodies of these great Lordings lye in-

terred, haue they <sup>a</sup> siluer lampes burning before them, or are <sup>b</sup> their Chappell walles decked with Crutches, winding sheets, periwigs, legges, and waxe eyes? and if not with these, with what? The Sepulchers of the Gentiles (saide *Don Quixote*) were for the most part, sumptuous Temples, the ashes of *Iulius Cæsars* bodie were put vpon a huge Pyramis of stone, which at this day, is called Saint *Peters* needle. The Emperour *Adrians* Sepulchre was a great Castle as bigge as a pretty village, it was called *Moles Adriani*, and at this day, the Castle of Saint *Angelo* in *Rome*: Queene *Artemisia* buried her husband *Mausolus* in a Sepulchre, which was held to be one of the seuen wonders of the world: but none of all these, nor many others the Gentiles had, were decked with winding sheetes,

<sup>a</sup> According to the Romish opinion, erroneous.  
<sup>b</sup> Relicks that vse to be hanging vp in the Papiests Churches.



nor any kinde of offrings or signes that testified, they were Saintes that were buried in them.

That's it I come to (said *Sancho*;) and tell me now, which is more, to raise a dead man, or to kill a Gyant? The answer is at hand (said *Don Quixote*;) To raise a dead man. There I caught you (quoth *Sancho*;) then, the fame of him that raiseth the dead, gives sight to the blinde, makes the lame walke, restoreth sicke men, who hath lampes burning before his Sepulchre, whose Chappell is full of deuout people, which vpon their knees adore his Reliques, this man hath greater renowne, and in another world, then euer any of your Gentile Emperours, or Knights Errant euer left behind them.

I grant you that (qd. *Don Quixote*;) Wel, answered *Sancho*, this fame, these graces, these prerogatiues, how call ye ym? haue the bodies and Reliques of Saintes, that, by the approbation & license of our holy Mother the Church, haue their lampes, their lights, their winding sheetes, their crutches, their pictures, their heads of haire, their eyes, and legges, by which they increase mens deuotions, and endeere their Christian fame; Kings carrie the bodies of Saintes, or their Reliques vpon their shoulders, they kilse the pieces of their bones, and doe decke, and enrich their Chappells with them, and their most precious altars.

What will you haue me inferre from all this, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*;) I meane (said *Sancho*) that we endeouour to be Saintes, and we shall the sooner obtaine the fame we looke after: and let me tell you Sr, that yesterday or tother day, (for so I may say, it being not long since) there were two poore barefoote Friers canonized or beatified, and now many thinke themselves happie, to kilse or touch, those yron chaines, with which they girt and tormented their bodies, and they are more reuerenced, then is (as I said) *Roldans* sword in the Armorie of our Lord the King, (God saue him:) So that (Maller mine) better it is, to be a poore Frier of what order soeuer, then a valiant Knight Errant: a dozen or two of lashes obtaine more at Gods hands, then two thousand blowes with the launce, whether they be giuen to Gyants, to Spirits, or Hobgoblins.

At this is true (answered *Don Quixote*;) but al cannot be Friers,  
and

and God Almighty hath many waies, by which he carries his Eleetto heauen: Cauallerie is a religion, and you haue many Knights Saints in heauen. That may be (said *Sancho*;) but I haue heard, you haue more Friers there, then Knights Errant. That is (quoth *Don Quixote*;) because the Religious in number are more then the Knights. But there are many Knights Errant (said *Sancho*;) Many indeede (quoth *Don Quixote*;) but few that deserue the name.

In these and such like discourses they passed the whole night, and the next day, without lighting vpon any thing, worth relation, for which, *Don Quixote* was not a little sorrie: at last, the next day toward night they discovered the goodly Citie of *Toboso*, with which sight *Don Quixotes* spirits were reuiued, but *Sancho's* dulled, because he knew not *Dulcineas* house, nor euer saw her in his life, no more then his Master, so that, the one to see her, and the other, because he had not seene her, were at their wits end, and *Sancho* knew not how to doe, if his Master should send him to *Toboso*: but *Don Quixote* resolved to enter the Citie in the night, and till the time came, they staid betweene certaine Okes, that were neere *Toboso*; and the prefixed moment being come, they entred the citie, where they lighted vpon things, things indeede.

---

## CHAP. IX.

where is set downe as followeth.

**M**Idnight was neere spunne out, when *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* left the mountaine, and entred the Citie: the towne was all lullie, and the dwellers were asleepe, with their legges stretcht at length, (as they say:) the night was brightsome, though *Sancho* wist it had beene darker, that he might not see his madnelle: the dogges in the towne did nothing but barke and thunder in *Don Quixotes* eares, and affrighted *Sancho's* heart: now and then an Aile braied, Hogs grunted,  
E 2 Cats

Cats mew'd, whose different howlings were augmented with the silent night: all which the enamoured Knight held to be ominous: but yet he spoke to *Sancho*, Sonne *Sancho* (said he) guide to *Dulcinea's* Palace: it may be, we shall finde her waking. Body of the Sunne (quoth *Sancho*) to what Palace shall I guide? for where I saw her Highnesse, it was a little house. Belike (quoth *Don Quixote*) she was retired into some corner of her Palace, to solace her selfe in priuate with her Damozels, as great Ladies and Princesses vse to doe. Sr, (quoth *Sancho*) since, whether I will or no, you will haue my Mistris *Dulcinea's* house to be a Palace, doe yet thinke neuerthelesse, this to be a fit time of night to finde the doore open in? Doe you thinke it fit, that we bounce, that they may heare and let vs in, to disquiet the whole towne? are we going to a bodie house thinke yee? Like your whore-masters, that come, and call, and enter, at what houre they list, how late soeuer it be? First of all, to make one thing sure, let's finde the Palace, replide *Don Quixote*, and then, *Sancho*, I'll tell thee what's fit to be done: and looke, *Sancho*, either my sight failes me, or that great Bulk and shadow that we see, is *Dulcinea's* Palace.

Well, guide on Sr, (said *Sancho*) it may be it is so, though I'll first see it with my eyes, and feele it with my hands, and beleue it, as much as it is now day. *Don Quixote* led on, and hauing walked about some two hundreth paces, he lighted on the Bulk that made the shadow, and saw a great steeple, which he perceiued was not the Palace, but of the chiefe Church in the towne. Then said he, *Sancho*, we are come to the Church. I see it very well (quoth *Sancho*) and I pray God, wee come not to our graues: for it is no good signe to haunt Church-yards so late, especially since I told you (as I remember) that this Ladies house is in a little Allie without passage thorow. A poxe on thee blockhead (said *Don Quixote*) where hast thou euer found, that Kings houses and Palaces haue beene built in such Allies? Sr, (quoth *Sancho*) euery country hath their seuerall fashions: It may be, here, in *Toboso*, they build their great buildings thus, and therefore pray Sr, giue me leaue, to looke vp and downe the Streets, or Lanes that lie in my way, and it may be, that in some corner

corner I may light vpon this Palace (the Diuell take it) that thus mockes and mullcades vs. Speake mannerly, Sr, (quoth *Don Quixote*) of my Mistrilles things, and let's be merry and wise, and cast not the rope after the bucket.

I will forbear (said *Sancho*) but how shall I endure, that you will needs haue me be thorowly acquainted with a house, I neuer saw but once, and to finde it at midnight, being you cannot finde it, that haue seene it a million of times? Sirrah, I shall grow desperate (quoth *Don Quixote*) come hither hereticke. Haue not I told thee a thousand times; that I neuer saw the Peerelesse *Dulcinea*, nor neuer crossed the thresholds of her Palace, and that I only am enamoured on her by heare-say, and the great fame of her beautie and discretion? Why now I heare you (said *Sancho*) and since you say, you haue neuer seene her; nor I neither. That cannot be (said *Don Quixote*) for you told me at least, that you had seene her winnowing of wheate, when you brought me the answer of the letter I sent by you. Ne're stand vpon that (said *Sancho*) for let me tell you, that I only saw her by heare-say too, & so was the answer I brought: for I know her as well, as I can boxe the Moone. *Sancho*, *Sancho*, (said *Don Quixote*) ther's a time to laugh, and a time to mourne. Not because I say, I haue neither seene, nor spoken to the Mistris of my soule, shouldst thou say, thou hast neither seene, nor spoken to her, it being otherwise (as thou knowest.) Being in this discourse, they saw one passing by vpon two Mules, and by the noise the plough made which they drew vpon the ground, they might see it was some husbandman, that rose by breake of day, to goe to his tillage, and so it was: as he came, he went singing that *Romante*, of the batell of *Roncesvalles* with the Frenchmen.

In hearing of which (quoth *Don Quixote*) *Sancho*, hang me, if we haue any good fortune this night. Doe not you heare what this Clowne sings? Yes marry doe I (said *Sancho*) but what doth the Chafe of *Roncesvalles* concerne vs? Tis no more then if he had sung the *Romante* of *Calanios*, and all one, for our good or ill lucke in this businesse.

By this the ploughman came by them: and *Don Quixote* questioned him: Can you tell me friend (so God reward you)

As if we  
should haue  
it in Eng-  
lish, Chene  
Chafe, or such  
like.



which is the Palace of the Peerelesse *Dulcinea del Toboso*? Sir (answered the yong man) I am a stranger, and haue liued but a while in this towne, and serue a rich husbandman to till his ground; here ouer-against, the Vicar and the Sexton both liue, any of them will tell you of this Lady Princeesse, as hauing a List of all the inhabitants of *Toboso*; although I thinke, there is no such Princeesse here, but many Gentlefolkes, each of which may be a Princeesse in her owne house. Why friend (quoth *Don Quixote*) it may be, that shee I aske for, is amongst these. It may be so (said the fellow) and God speede you, for now it begins to be day peepe: and switching his Mules, he staid for no more questions.

*Sancho* seeing his Master in a deepe suspence, and very male-content, told him: Sir, the day comes on apace, and it will not be so fit, that we Sunne our selues in the Streete: it is better to go out of the Citie, and that you shade your selfe in some Groue hereabouts, and I will come backe anon, and not leaue a by-place in all this towne, where I may search for the House, Castle, or Palace of my Lady, and it were ill lucke, if I found her not: and if I doe, I will speake with her, and let her know, where, and how you doe, expecting, that she giue you order and direction, how you may see her, without preiudice to her honour and good name.

*Sancho*, (said *Don Quixote*) thou hast spoken a thousand sentences, inclosed in the circle of thy short discourse: The aduice that thou hast now giuen me, I hunger after, and most louingly accept of it: Come, sonne, let vs take shade, and thou shalt returne (as thou sayest) to seeke, to see, and to speake to my Mistris, from whose discrecion and courtesie, I hope for a thousand miraculous fauours. *Sancho* stood vpon thornes, till he had drawne his Master from the towne, lest he should verifie the lie of the answer, that he had carried him from *Dulcinea*, to *Sierra Morena*. So he hastned him to be gone, which was presently done, some two miles from the towne, where they found a Forrest, or wood, where *Don Quixote* tooke shade: and *Sancho* returned to the Citie to speake with *Dulcinea*, in which Embassie matters befell him, that require a new attention, and a new beliefe.

CHAP.

## CHAP. X.

*How Sancho cunningly enchanted the Lady Dulcinea, and other successes, as ridiculous as true.*

THE Authour of this history comming to relate that which he doth, in this Chapter sayes; That hee would willingly haue passed it ouer in silence, as fearing not to be belceued; because heere *Don Quixotes* madnesse did exceed, and was at least two flight-shoots beyond his greatest that euer was: but for all this feare and suspicion, he set it downe as tother acted it, without adding or diminishing the least iot of truth in the History, not caring for any thing that might bee objected against him for a lier, and hee had reason; for truth is stretcht, but neuer breakes, and tramples on the lie, as oyle doth vpon water; and so prosecuting his History, hee sayes, that as *Don Quixote* had shaded himselfe in the Forrest or Oake-wood neere the Grand *Toboso*, he willed *Sancho* to returne to the City, and not to come to his presence, without he had first spoken to his Mistris from him, requesting her, that she would please to be scene by her captiu'd Knight, and to daigne to bestow her blessing on him, that by it, hee might hope for many most prosperous successes, in all his onsets and dangerous enterprizes. *Sancho* tooke on him to fulfill his command, and to bring him now as good an answer as the former.

Go, Lad, (sayd *Don Quixote*) and bee not daunted when thou comest before the beames of the Sunne of Beauty, which thou goest to discover; Oh happy thou, aboue all the Squires of the world, be mindfull, and forget not how she entertaines thee; if she blush iust at the instant, when thou deliuerest my Embassie; if she be stirred & troubled when she heares my name; whether her cushion cannot hold her; if she be set in the rich state of her Authority: and if she stand vp, marke her whether she clap sometimes one foot vpon another; if she repeat the answer shee giues thee, twice or thrice ouer; or change it from milde to curst; from cruell to amorous; whether shee seeme to order her haire,

E 4

though

though it be not disordered : Lastly, obserue all her actions and gestures ; for if thou relate them, iust as they were, I shall ghesse what is hidden in her heart, touching my loue in matter of fact : For know, *Sancho*, if thou knowest it not, that the actions and outward motions that appeare (when loue is in treaty) are the certaine messengers that bring newes of what passeth within. Goe, Friend, and better fortune guide thee then mine, and send thee better successe then I can expect twixt hope and feare, in this vncomforth solitude in which thou leauest me.

I goe (sayd *Sancho*) and will returne quickly ; Enlarge that litle heart of yours no bigger then an Hefell-nut, and consider the saying, *Faint heart neuer, &c. Sweet meat must haue some sauce* : And another, *Where wee least thinke, there goes the Hare away*. This I say, because that if to night wee found not the Cattle or Palace of my Lady, now by day I doubt not but to finde it, when I least dreame of it, and so to finde her. Beleue me, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) thou alwayes bringest thy Prouerbes so to the haire of the businesse wee treat of, as God giue me no worse fortune then I desire.

This sayd, *Sancho* turned his backe, and switched his Dapple, and *Don Quixote* stayd a horse-backe, easing himselfe on his stirrups, and leaning on his lance, full of sorrowfull and confused thoughts, where we will leaue him, and wend with *Sancho*, who parted from his Master no lesse troubled and pensatiue then he ; insomuch, that hee was scarce out of the wood, when turning his face, and seeing that *Don Quixote* was out of sight, he lighted from his Asse, and resting at the foot of a tree, hee began to discourse thus to himselfe, and say : Now, brother *Sancho*, I pray let's know whicher is your Worship going ? To seeke some Asse that you haue lost ? No forsooth. Well, what is it you seeke for ? I seeke (a matter of nothing) a Princesse, and in her the Sunne of Beauty, and all Heauen withall. And where doe yee thinke to finde this you speake of, *Sancho* ? Where ? Why in the Grand City of *Toboso*. Well, and from whom doe yee seeke her ? From the most famous Knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, he that righteth wrongs, <sup>a</sup> giues the thirsty meat, and the hungry drinke. All this is well : and doe you know her house,

house, *Sancho* ? My Master sayes, It is a Royall Palace, or a lofty Towre. And haue you euer scene her, trow ? Neither hee nor I, neuer. And doe you thinke it were well, that the men of *Toboso* should know, that you were here to entice their Princesse, and to trouble their wenches, and should come and grinde your ribs with bangs, and leaue you neuer a sound bone ? Indeed be-like they should consider that you are commanded, friend, but as a messenger, that you are in no fault, not you. Trust not to that, *Sancho*, for your *Manchegan* people are as cholericke, as honest, and doe not loue to bee ielted with. In very deede, if they smell you, you are sure to pay for it. Ware Hawke, ware Hawke : No, no, let me for anothers pleasure seeke better bread then's made of wheat ; and I may as well finde this *Dulcinea*, as one *Mary* in <sup>b</sup> *Robena*, or a Scholler in blacke in *Salamanca* : The Deuill, the Deuill, and none else hath clapt me into this businesse. This Soliloquy passed *Sancho* with himselfe, and the vpsshot was this :

All things (sayd he) haue a remedy but death, vnder whose yoke wee must all passe in spite of our teethes, when life ends. This Master of mine, by a thousand signes that I haue scene, is a Bedlam, fit to be bound, and I come not a whit short of him, and am the greater Cox-combe of two, to serue him, if the Prouerbe be true that sayes, *Like master, like man* ; and another ; *Thou art knowne by him that doth thee feed, not by him that doth thee breed*. Hee being thus mad then, and subiect, out of madnesse, to mistaking of one thing for another, to iudge blacke for white, and white for blacke, as appeared, when he sayd the winde-mills were Gyants, and the Friers mules, Dromedaries, and the flocks of sheepe, armies of enemies, and much more to this tune ; it will not be hard to make him beleue, that some husband-mans daughter, the first we meet with, is the Lady *Dulcinea* : and if he beleue it not, Ile sweare ; and if hee sweare, Ile out-sweare him ; and if he be obstinate, Ile be so more : and so, that I will stand to my tackling, come what will on it. Perhaps with mine obstinacy I shall so preuaile with him, that hee will send mee no more vpon these kinde of messages, seeing what bad dispatch I bring him : or perhaps hee will thinke, that some wicked

<sup>a</sup> Mistakes of  
simplicity.

<sup>b</sup> As if wee  
should say, one  
lone in London.

wicked Enchanter, one of those that he sayes persecute him, hath changed her shape, to vex him.

With this conceit *Sancho's* spirit was at rest, and hee thought his businell was brought to a good passe: and so staying there till it grew to be toward the Euening, that *Don Quixote* might thinke he spent so much time in going and comming from *Toboso*, all fell out happily for him: for when hee got vp to mount vpon Dapple, he might see three Countrey-wenches comming towards him from *Toboso*, vpon three Asses-Colts, whether male or female, the Author declares not, though it be likely they were shee-asses, they being the ordinary beasts that those Countrey-people ride on: but because it is not very pertinent to the story, we neede not stand much vpon deciding that. In fine, when *Sancho* saw the three Countrey-wenches, he turned backe apace to finde out his Master *Don Quixote*, and found him sighing, and vttering a thousand amorous lamentations.

As soone as *Don Quixote* saw him, he sayd; How now, *Sancho*, what is the matter? May I marke this day with a white or a blacke stone? 'Twere fitter (quoth *Sancho*) you would marke it with red Oker, as the Inscriptions are vpon Professours chaires, that they may plainly read that seethem. Belike then (quoth *Don Quixote*) thou bringest good newes. So good (sayd *Sancho*) that you need no more but spurre *Rozinante*, and straight discouer the Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, with two Damozels waiting on her, comming to see your Worship. Blessed God! friend *Sancho*, what sayest thou (quoth *Don Quixote*)? See thou deceiue mee not with thy false mirth to glad my true sorrow.

What should I get by deceiuing you (quoth *Sancho*) the rather your selfe being so neere to discouer the truth? Spurre, Sir, ride on, and you shall see our Mistresse the Princesse comming, clad indeede and adorned like her selfe: She and her Damozels are a very sparke of gold: They are all ropes of pearle, all Diamonds, all Rubies, all cloth of gold, ten stories high at least: Their haire hung loose ouer their shoulders, that were like so many Sun-beames playing with the winde, and besides all this, they are mounted vpon three flea-bitten Nackneyes, the finest

sight

sight that can be. Hackneyes thou would'st say, *Sancho*. Hackney or Nackney (quoth *Sancho*) there is little difference: but let them come vpon what they will, they are the brauest Ladies, that can be imagined, especially, My Ladie the Princesse *Dulcinea* that dazels the senses.

Let's go, sonne *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) and for a reward for this vnlookt for good newes, I bequeath thee the best spoile I get in our first aduventure next, and if this content thee not, I giue thee my this yeeres Coltes by my three Mares thou knowest I haue to foale in our towne Common. The Colts I like (quoth *Sancho*) but for the goodnesse of the spoile of the first aduventure I haue no minde to that. By this they came out of the wood, and saw the three Countrey wenches neere them: *Don Quixote* stretcht his eyes, all ouer *Toboso* way, and seeing none but the three wenches, he was somewhat troubled, and demanded of *Sancho*, if he had left them comming out of the Citie. How, out of the Citie (qd. *Sancho*) are your eyes in your nodde, that you see them not comming here, shining as bright as the Sunne at noone? I see none, said he, but three Wenches vpon three Asses.

Now God keepe me from the Deuill (quoth *Sancho*) and is it possible that three Hackneyes, or how call ye vm, as white as a flake of snow, should appeare to you to be Asses? As sure as may be, you shall pull off my beard if that be so. Well, I tell you, friend *Sancho*, tis as sure that they are Hee, or Shee Asses, as I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and thou *Sancho Panza*; at least to me they seeme so.

Peace, sir (quoth *Sancho*) and say not so, but snuffe your eyes, and reuerence the Mistresse of your thoughts, for now she drawes neere: and so saying, he aduanced to meet the three Countrey-wenches, and alighting from Dapple, tooke one of their Asses by the halter, and fastning both his knees to the ground, sayd, Queene, and Princesse, and Dutchesse of beauty, let you Haughtinesse and Greatnesse be pleased, to receiue into your grace and good liking, your captiue Knight that stands yonder turned into marble, all-amazed and without his pulse, to see himselfe before your Magnificent Presence. I am *Sancho Panza* his Squire, and

and he is the Way-beaten Knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, otherwise called The Knight of the Sorrowfull Countenance.

And now *Don Quixote* was on his knees by *Sancho*, and beheld with vnglad, but troubled eyes, her that *Sancho* called Queene and Lady; but seeing he discouered nothing in her but a Countrey-wench, and not very well-fauoured, for shee was blub-fac'd, and flat-nosed; he was in some suspence, & durst not once open his lips. The wenches too were astonisht, to see those two so different men vpon their knees, and that they would not let their companion goe forward. But she that was stayed, angry to heare her selfe mis-vs'd, broke silence first, saying: Get you out of the way with a mischiefe, and let's be gone, for wee are in haste.

To which (quoth *Sancho*) Oh Princesse and vniuersall Lady of *Toboso*, why doth not your magnanimous heart relent, seeing the Pillar and Prop of Knight Errantry prostrated before your sublimated presence? Which when one of the other two heard, after she had cryed out to her Asse, that was turning aside, shee said: Look how these Yonkers come to mocke at poore Countrey-folke, as if wee knew not how to returne their flouts vpon them: get you gone your way, and leaue vs, you had best. Rise, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) at this instant, for I perceiue now, that mine ill fortune, not satisfied, hath shut vp all the passages by which any content might come to this my wretched soule within my flesh. Oh thou, the extreme of all worth to bee desired, the bound of all humane gentlenesse, the only remedy of this mine afflicted heart that adores thee, now that the wicked Enchanter persecutes me, and hath put clouds and Cataracts in mine eyes, and for them onely, and none else, hath transformed and changed thy peerelesse beauty and face, into the face of a poore Countrey-wench, if so be now hee haue not turned mine too into some Hobgoblin, to make it lothsome in thy sight, look on mee gently and amorously, perceiuing, by this submission and kneeling, which I vse to thy counterfet beauty, the humility with which my soule adores thee.

Marry-musse (quoth the Countrey-wench) I care much for your courtings: Get you gone, and let vs goe; and wee shall be

be beholding to you. *Sancho* let her passe by him, most glad that he had sped so well with his deuice. The Countrey-wench that played *Dulcinea's* part, was no sooner free, when spurring her Hackney with a prickle she had at the end of her cudgell, she began to run apace; and the Asse feeling the smart of it more then ordinary, began to wince so fast, that downe came my Lady *Dulcinea*: which when *Don Quixote* saw, hee came to help her vp, and *Sancho* went to order and gird her pack-saddle, that hung at the Asses belly; which being fitted, and *Don Quixote* about to lift his enchanted Mistris in his armes to her Asse, shee being now got vpon her legs, saued him that labour; for stepping a little backe, shee fetcht a rise, and clapping both her hands vpon the Asses crupper, shee lighted as switt as an Hawke vpon the pack-saddle, and sat astride like a man.

Then sayd *Sancho*: By Saint *Roque* our Mistris is as light as a Robin-ruddocke, and may teach the cunningst *Cordenan* or *Mexicanian* to ride on their Ginets: At one spring shee hath leapt over the crupper, and without spurres makes the Hackney run like a Muske-Cat, and her Damozels come not short of her; for they flie like the winde. And he said true: for when *Dulcinea* was once on horse-backe, they all made after her, and set a running for two miles, without looking behinde them.

*Don Quixote* still looked after them, but when they were out of sight, turning to *Sancho*, he sayd; *Sancho*, how thinkest thou? How much Enchanters doe hate mee? And see how farre their malice extends, and their aime at mee, since they haue deprived me of the happinesse I should haue receiued, to haue seen my Mistris in her true being. Indeed I was borne to be an example of vnfortunate men, to be the Marke and Butt, at which Ill-Fortunes arrowes should be sent. And thou must note, *Sancho*, that these Enchanters were not content to haue changed and transformed my *Dulcinea*: but they haue done it into a shape, so base & vgly, as of a Countrey-wench thou sawest, & withall, they haue taken from her, that which is so proper to her and great Ladies, to wit, her sweet sent of flowres and Amber: for let me tell thee, *Sancho*, that when I went to helpe *Dulcinea* to her Hackney (which as thou sayest, seemed to me to be a shee-Asse) she gaue me

me such a breath of raw garlick, as pierc'd and intoxicated my braine.

O base rowt, cried out *Sancho* instantly. Oh dismall and ill minded Enchanters. I would I might see you all strung vp together like Galls, or like Pilchers in sholes: cunning you are, much you can, and much you doe: it had bin enough for you, Rascals, to haue turned the pearles of my Ladies eyes, into Corky galls, and her most pure golden haire, into Bristles of a red Oxes taile, and finally, all her feature from good to bad, without meddling with her breath, for only by that, we might haue ghesed, what was concealed vnder that course rinde, though to say true, I neuer saw her coursenesse, but her beautie, which was infinitely increased by a Moale she had vpon her lippe, like a Mostacho, with seuen or eight red haire like threds of gold, and aboue a handfull long. To this Moale (quoth *Don Quixote*) according to the correspondencie that those of the face haue, with those of the body, shee hath another in the Table of her thigh, that correspondes to the side, where that of her face is: but haire of that length thou speakest of, are very much for Moales. Well, I can tell you (quoth *Sancho*) that there they appeared, as if they had bene borne with her. I beleue it, friend, replide *Don Quixote*: for nature could forme nothing in *Dulcinea* that was not perfect and complete; and so, though she had a hundred Moales, as well as that one thou sawest in her, they were not Moales, but Moones and bright starres.

But tell me, *Sancho*, that which thou didst set on, which seemed to me, to be a packe saddle, was it a plaine saddle, or a saddle with a backe? It was (saide *Sancho*) a Ginet saddle, with a field couering, worth halfe a Kingdome, for the richnesse of it. And could not I see all this? Well, now I say againe, and will say it a thousand times, I am the vnhappyest man aliue. The crack-rope *Sancho* had enough to doe to hold laughter, hearing his Masters madnesse, that was so delicately gulled.

Finally, after many other reasons that passed betwixt them both, they gate vp on their beasts, and held on the way to *Saragosa*, where they thought to be fitly, to see the solemnities that are performed once euery yeere in that famous Citie. But before they

they came thither, things befell them, that because they are many, famous and strange, they deserue to be written and read, as shall be seene here following.

## CHAP. XI.

*Of the strange Aduenture that befell Don Quixote, with the Cart or Waggon of the Parliament of Death.*

**D**ON *Quixote* went on, wonderfull pensatiue, to thinke what a shrewd trick the Enchanters had played him, in changing his Mistris *Dulcinea* into the Rusticke shape of a Country Wench, and could not imagine what meanes he might vse to bring her to her Pristine being; and these thoughts so distracted him, that carelesly he gaue *Roxinante* the Reines, who perceiving the libertie he had, stayed euery stitch-while to feede vpon the greene grasse, of which those fields were full; but *Sancho* put him out of his Maze, saying: Sr, Sorrow was not ordained for beasts, but men: yet if men doe excede in it, they become beasts, pray Sr, recollect and come to your selfe, and plucke vp *Roxinantes* Reines, reuiue and cheere your selfe, shew the courage that befits a Knight Errant. What a Deuils the matter? What faintnesse is this? are we dreaming on a dry Summer? Now Satan take all the *Dulcineas* in the world, since the well-fare of one only Knight Errant, is more worth then all the Enchantments and transformations in the world.

Peace, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) with a voice now not very faint: peace, I say, and speake no blasphemies against that Enchanted Lady, for I only am in fault for her misfortune and vn-happinesse: her ill plight springs from the enuie that Enchanters beare me. So say I too (quoth *Sancho*) for what heart sees her now, that saw her before, and doth not deplore? Thou mayst well say so, *Sancho*, repli'd *Don Quixote*, since thou sawest her, in her iust entire beautie, and the Enchantment dimmed not thy sight, nor concealed her fairenesse: against me only, only against mine eyes the force of it's venome is directed.

But

But for all that, *Sancho*, I haue faue vpon one thing, which is, that thou didst ill describe her beautie to me: for if I forget not, thou saydst she had eyes of Pearles, and such eyes are rather the eyes of a Sea-Breame then a faire Dames: but as I thinke, *Dulcineas* eyes are like two greene Emeralds rared with two Celestiall Arkes, that serue them for Eye-browes. And therefore for your pearles, take them from her eyes, and put them to her teeth: for doubtlesse, *Sancho*, thou mistookst eyes for teeth. All this may be, said *Sancho*, for her beauty troubled me, as much as her fowlenesse since hath done you; but leaue we all to God, who is the knower of all things that befall vs in this Vale of teares, in this wicked world, where there is scarce any thing without mixture of mischiefe, Impostorship, or villanie.

One thing (Master mine) troubles me more then all the rest; to thinke what meanes there will be, when you ouercome any Gyant or other Knight, and command him to present himselfe before the beautie of the Lady *Dulcinea*, where this poore Gyant, or miserable vanquisht Knight shall finde her. Me thinkes I see ym goe staring vp and downe *Toboso*, to finde my Lady *Dulcinea*, and though they should meete her in the midst of the streete, yet they would no more know her then my father.

It may be, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) her Enchantment will not extend to take from vanquished and presented Gyants and Knights, the knowledge of *Dulcinea*: and therefore in one or two of the first I conquer and send, we will make triall, whether they see her or no, commanding them, that they returne to relate vnto me what hath befallne them.

I say Sr, (quoth *Sancho*) I like what you haue said very well, and by this deuice we shall know what we desire; and if so be she be only hidden to you, your misfortune is beyond hers: but so my Lady *Dulcinea* haue health and content, we will beare and passe it ouer here as well as we may, seeking our aduentures, and let time alone, who is the best Phisician for these and other infirmities.

*Don Quixote* would haue answered *Sancho Pansa*: but he was interrupted by a waggon that came crosse the way, loaden with the most different and strange personages and shapes, that might be

be imagined. He that guided the Mules, and serued for Wagoner, was an vgly Deuill. The Wagons selfe was open without Tilt or Boughes. The first shape that presented it selfe to *Don Quixotes* eyes, was of Death her selfe, with a humane face, and next her an Angel with large painted wings. On one side stood an Emperour, with a crowne vpon his head, to see to of gold. At Deaths feet was the god called Cupid, not blind-folded, but with his Bow, his quier, and arrowes. There was also a Knight compleatly Arm'd, only he had no Murrion or headpeece, but a hat full of direct colour'd plumes: with these there were other personages of different fashions and faces.

All which scene on a suddaine, in some sort troubled *Don Quixote*, and affrighted *Sancho's* heart, but straight *Don Quixote* was iocund, beleeuing, that some rare and dangerous Aduenture was offred vnto him, and with this thought, and a minde disposed to giue the onfet to any perill, he got him selfe before the Wagon, and with a loud and threatening voice, cried out: Carter, Coach man, or Deuill, or whatsoe re thou art, be not slow to tell me, who thou art, whither thou goest, and what people these are thou carriest in thy Cart coach, rather like *Charons* boate, then Waggon now in vse.

To which, the Deuill staying the Cart, gently replide, Sr, we are Players of *Thomas Angulo's* Companie, we haue playd a play called the Parliament of Death, against this *Corpus Christi* tyde, in a towne behind the ridge of yonder mountaine, and this afternoone we are to play it againe at the towne you see before vs, which because it is so neere, to saue a labour of new attiring vs, we goe in the same cloathes in which we are to Act. That yong man playes Death: that other an Angel: that woman our Authors wife, the Queene, a fourth there, a Souldier, a fift the Emperour, and I the Deuill, which is one of the chiefest Actors in the play, for I haue the best part. If you desire to know any thing else of vs, ask me, and I shall answer you most punctually, for as I am a Deuill, nothing is vnknowne to me.

By the faith of a Knight Errant (said *Don Quixote*) as soone as euer I saw this Waggon, I imagined some strange Aduenture towards, and now I say it is fit to be fully satisfied of these apparitions,



paritions, by touching them with our hands. God be with you, honest people: Act your play, and see whether you will command any thing wherein I may be seruiceable to you, for I will be so most cheerefully and willingly: for since I was a boy, I haue loued Maske-shewes, and in my youth, I haue beene rauished with Stage-playes.

Whilst they were thus discoursing, it fell out, that one of the company came toward them, clad for the Foole in the Play, with Morrice-bels, and at the end of stickes, he had three Cowes bladders full-blowne, who thus masked, running toward *Don Quixote*, began to fence with his cudgell, and to thwacke the bladders vpon the ground, and to friske with his bels in the aire: which dreadfull sight so troubled *Rozinante*, that *Don Quixote* not able to hold him in (for hee had gotten the bridle betwixt his teeth) he fell a running vp and down the field, much swifter then his anatomized bones made shew for.

*Sancho*, that considered in what danger of being throwne downe his Master might bee, leapt from Dapple, and with all speed ran to help him; but by that time he came to him, he was vpon the ground, and *Rozinante* by him, for they both tumbled together. This was the common passe *Rozinantes* trickes and boldnesse came to. But no sooner had *Sancho* left his horse-back-ship to come to *Don Quixote*, when the damning Deuill with the bladders leapt on Dapple, and clapping him with them, the feare and noyse, more then the blowes, made him fly thorow the field, towards the place where they were to play. *Sancho* beheld Dapples careere and his Masters fall, and knew not to which of the ill channes hee might first repaire: But yet like a good Squire and faithfull seruant, his Masters loue preuailed more with him, then the cockering of his Asse: though euery hoyling of the bladders, and falling on Dapples buttocks, were to him trances and tydings of death, and rather had hee those blowes had lighted on his eye-bals, then on the least haire of his Asses taile.

In this perplexity hee came to *Don Quixote*, who was in a great deale worse plight then he was willing to see him: and helping him on *Rozinante*, sayd; Sir, the Deuill hath carried away  
Dapple.

Dapple. What Deuill (quoth *Don Quixote*?) Hee with the bladders, replied *Sancho*. Well, I will recouer him (sayd *Don Quixote*) though he should locke him vp with him in the darkelest and deepest dungeons of Hell: Follow me, *Sancho*, for the waggon goes but slowly, and the Mules shall satisfie Dapples losse. There is no neede (sayd *Sancho*;) temper your choller, for now I see the Deuill hath left Dapple, and hee returnes to his home, and he sayd true, for the Deuill hauing talne with Dapple, to imitate *Don Quixote* and *Rozinante*, he went on foot to the towne, and the Asse came backe to his Master.

For all that (sayd *Don Quixote*) it were fit to take reuenge of the Deuils vnmanerlinesse vpon some of those in the waggon, euen of the Emperour himselfe. Oh neuer thinke of any such matter (sayd *Sancho*) and take my counsell, that is, neuer to meddle with Players, for they are a people mightily beloued: I haue knowne one of vm in prison for two murders, and yet scap'd Scot-free: Know this, Sir, that as they are merry Iouiall Lads, all men loue, esteeme, and helpe them, especially if they be the Kings Players, and all of them in their fashion and garbe are Gentle-man-like.

For all that (sayd *Don Quixote*) the Deuill-Player shall not scape from me & brag of it, though all mankind help him: & so saying, he gat to the waggon, that was now somewhat neere the towne, and crying aloud, sayd; Hold, stay, merry Greekes, for Ile make yee know what belongs to the Asses and furniture, belonging to the Squires of Knights Errant. *Don Quixotes* noyse was such, that those of the waggon heard it, and ghesling at his intention by his speeces, in an instant Mistris Death leapt out of the waggon, & after her the Emperour, the Deuill-Waggoner, and the Angell, and the Queene too with little *Cupid*, all of them were straight loaded with stones, and put themselves in order, expecting *Don Quixote* with their Peebles poynts.

*Don Quixote*, that saw them in so gallant a Squadron, ready to discharge strongly their stones, held in *Rozinantes* reines, and began to consider how he should set vpon them, with least hazard to his person. Whilst he thus stayd, *Sancho* came to him, and seeing him ready to giue the on-set, sayd; Tis a meere mad-



<sup>a</sup> Meaning  
the stones.

nelle, Sir, to attempt this enterprise: I pray consider, that for your <sup>a</sup> riuer-sops, there are no defensible weapons in the world, but to be shut vp and inlayd vnder a brazen bell: and consider likewise, tis rather rallines then valour, for one man alone to set vpon an Army, wherein Death is, and where Emperours fight in person, and where good and bad Angels help: and if the consideration of this be not sufficient, may this moue you to know, that amongit all these (though they seeme to be Kings, Princes and Emperours, there is no Knight Errant.

Thou hast hit vpon the right, *Sancho* (sayd *Don Quixote*) the very poynt that may alter my determination: I neither can nor must draw my sword, as I haue often told thee, against any that be not Knights Errant. It concernes thee, *Sancho*, if thou meanest to be reuenged for the wrong done thine Aile, and Ile encourage thee, and from hence giue thee wholesome instructions. There needs no being reuenged of any body (said *Sancho*) for there is no Christianity in it; besides, mine Aile shall be contented to put his cause to me, and to my will, which is, to liue quietly as long as Heauen shall afford me life.

Since this is thy determination (sayd *Don Quixote*) honest, wise, discreet, Christian-like, pure *Sancho*, let vs leaue these dreams, & seek other better & more reall adventures: for I see, this Countrey is like to afford vs many miraculous ones. So he turned *Rozinantes* reines, and *Sancho* tooke his Dapple, Death with all the flying Squadron returned to the wagon, and went on their voyage: And this was the happy end of the wagon of Deaths adventure: thanks to the good aduice that *Sancho Panza* gaue his Master: to whom there happened the day after another Adventure, no lesse pleasant, with an enamoured Knight Errant as well as he.

## CHAP.

## CHAP. XII.

*Of the rare Adventure that befell Don Quixote, with the Knight of the Looking-Glasses.*

**D**On Quixote & his Squire passed the ensuing night, after their Deaths encounter, vnder certaine high and shadie trees, *Don Quixote* hauing first (by *Sancho's* entreaty) eaten somewhat of the Provision that came vpon Dapple, and as they were at supper, *Sancho* sayd to his Master; Sir, what an Aile had I beene, had I chosen for a reward, the spoyle of the first adventure which you might end, rather then the breede of the three Mares? Indeed, indeed, a bird in the hand is better then two in the bush.

For all that (quoth *Don Quixote*) if thou, *Sancho*, hadst let me giue the on-let (as I desired) thou hadst had to thy share, at least, the Empresses golden crowne, and *Cupids* painted wings, for I had taken vm away against the haire, and giuen vm thee. Your Players scepters and Emperours crownes (sayd *Sancho*) are neuer of pure golde, but leafe and Tinne.

Tis true (answered *Don Quixote*) for it is very necessary, that your Play-ornaments bee not fine, but counterfet and seeming, as the Play it selfe is, which I would haue thee, *Sancho*, to esteeme of, and consequently the Actors too, and the Authors, because they are the Instruments of much good to a Commonwealth, being like Looking-glasses, where the actions of humane life are liuely represented, and there is no comparison, that doth more truely present to vs, what we are, or what we should be, then the Comedy and Comedians: If not, tell mee, hast not thou seene a Play acted, where Kings, Emperours, Bishops, Knights, Dames, and other personages are introduced? One playes a Rustian, another the Cheater, this a Merchant, & other a Souldier, one a crafty Foole, another a foolish Louer: And the Comedy ended, and the apparrell taken away, all the rehearsers are the same they were.

Yes marry haue I, quoth *Sancho*. Why, the same thing  
F 3 (sayd

(sayd *Don Quixote*) happens in the Comedy and Theater of this world, where some play the Emperours, other the Bishops; and lastly, all the parts that may be in a Comedy: but in the end, that is, the end of our life, Death takes away all the robes that made them differ, and at their buriall they are equall. A braue comparison (quoth *Sancho*) but not so strange to me, that haue heard it often, as that of the Cheese-play, that while the game lasts, euery Peere hath it's particular motion, and the game ended, all are mingled and shuffled together, and cast into a lethern bag, which is a kinde of buriall.

Euery day, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) thou growest wiser and wiser. It must needs bee (sayd *Sancho*) that some of your wildome must cleaue to me, for grounds that are dry and barren, by mucking and tilling them, giue good fruit: I meane, your conuersation hath bene the mucke, that hath bene cast vpon the sterill ground of my barren wit; and the time that I haue serued you, the tillage, with which I hope to render happy fruit, and such as may not gaine-say or slide out of the paths of good manners, which you haue made in my withered vnderstanding.

*Don Quixote* laughed at *Sancho's* affected reasons, and it seemed true to him, what hee had sayd touching his reformation: for now and then his talke admired him, although for the most part, when *Sancho* spoke by way of contradiction, or like a Courtier, he ended his discourse with a downefall, from the mount of his simplicity, to the profundity of his ignorance: but that, wherein he shewed himselfe most elegant and memorable, was in vrging of Prouerbs, though they were neuer so much against the haire of the present businesse, as hath been seene, and noted in all this History.

A great part of the night they passed in these and such like discourses, but *Sancho* had a great desire to let fall the Pott-cullices (as he called them) of his eyes, and sleepe; and so vndressing his Dapple, he turned him freely to graze: with *Roxinantes* saddle he medled not, for it was his Masters expresse command, that whilst they were in field, or slept not within doores, hee should not vsfaddle him, it being an ancient custome obserued by Knights Errant, to take the bridle and hang it at the saddle-

pummell:

pummell: but beware taking away the saddle, which *Sancho* obserued, and gaue him the same liberty, as to his Dapple, whose friendship and *Roxinantes* was so sole and vnited, that the report goes by tradition from father to sonne, that the Author of this true History made particular chapters of it, onely to keepe the decency and decorum due to so heroike a Story: he omitted it, although sometimes he forgets his purpose herein, and writes, that as the two beasts were together, they would scratch one another, and being wearied and satisfied, *Roxinante* would crosse his throte ouer Dapples necke, at least halfe a yard ouer the other side: and both of them looking wittly on the ground, they would stand thus three dayes together, at least as long as they were let alone, or that hunger compelled them not to looke after their prouander.

Tis sayd (I say) that the Author in his Story, compared them in their friendship, to *Nisus* and *Eurialus*, to *Pilades* and *Orestes*, which, if it were so, it may be seene (to the generall admiration) how firme and stedfast the friendship was of these two pacificke beasts, to the shame of men, that so ill know the rules of friendship one to another. For this, it was sayd, No falling out, like to that of friends. And let no man think the Author was vnreasonable, in hauing compared the friendship of these beasts, to the friendship of men; for men haue receiued many Items from beasts, and learnt many things of importance, as the Storks dung, the Dogs vomit and faithfulness, the Cranes watchfulness, the Ants prouidence, the Elephants honesty, and the Horse his loyalty.

At length *Sancho* fell fast asleepe at the foote of a Corketree, and *Don Quixote* reposed himselfe vnder an Oke. But not long after, a noise behind waked him, and rising suddainly, he looked and hearkned from whence the noise came, and he saw two men on horsebacke, and the one tumbling from his saddle, said to the other; Alight, friend, and vnbridle our horses, for me thinks this place hath pasture enough for them, and befits the silence & solitude of my amorous thoughts: thus he spoke, & stretch himselfe vpon the ground in an instant, but casting himselfe down, his Armour wherewith he was armed made, a noise:

F 4

manifest

a manifest token that made *Don Quixote*, thinke hee was some Knight Errant, and comming to *Sancho*, who was fast asleepe, hee pluck't him by the Arme, and tolde him softly. Brother *Sancho*, wee haue an Aduenture. God grant it bee good (quoth *Sancho*;) and where is this Matters Aduentures Worship? Where, *Sancho*, replide *Don Quixote*, looke on one side, looke, and there thou shalt see a Knight Errant stretcht, who (as it appeares to me) is not ouermuch ioyed, for I saw him cast himselfe from his horse, and stretch on the ground, with some shewes of griefe, and as he fell, he crossed his Armes. Why, in what doe you perceiue that this is an Aduenture (quoth *Sancho*;) I will not say (answered *Don Quixote*) that this is altogether an Aduenture, but an introduction to it, for thus Aduentures begin.

But hark, it seemes he is tuning a Lute, or Viall, and by his spitting and cleering his brest, he prepares himselfe to sing. In good faith you say right (quoth *Sancho*) and tis some enamoured Knight. There is no Knight Errant (said *Don Quixote*) that is not so: let vs giue eare, and by the circumstance, we shall search the Laberynth of his thoughts, if so be he sing: for out of the abundance of the heart, the tongue speaketh. *Sancho* would haue replied to his Master: But the Knight of the woods voice (which was but so so) hindered him, and whilst the two were astonisht, he sung as followeth.

## SONET.

*Permit me, Mistris, that I follow may  
The bound, cut out iust to your hearts desire:  
The which, in mine I shall esteeme for aye,  
So that I neuer from it will retire.  
If you be pleas'd, my griefe (I silent) stay,  
And doe make reckning that I straight expire,  
If I may tell it you, the vnusall way  
I will, and make lones selfe be my supplier.*

Fashion'd

*Fashion'd I am to preesse of contraries,  
As soft as waxe, as hard as Diamond too,  
And to Lones lawes, my soule her selfe applies,  
Or hard, or soft, my brest I offer you  
Grauen, imprint in't what your pleasure is,  
I (secret) sweare it neuer to forgoe.*

With a deep-fetcht, heigh, ho: euen from the bottome of his heart, the Knight of the wood ended his song: and after some pause, with a griued and sorrowfull voice vttered these words: Oh the fairest and most vngratefull woman in the world. And shall it be possible, most excellent *Casildea de Vandalia*, that thou suffer this thy captiue Knight to pine and perish, with continuall peregrinations, with hard and painefull labours? Sufficeth not, that I haue made all the Knights of *Namarre*, of *Leon*, all the *Tartessians*, all the *Castillians* confesse thee to be the fairest Lady of the world? I, and all the Knights of *Mancha* too? Not so, (quoth *Don Quixote* straight) for I am of the *Mancha*, but neuer yeelded to that, for I neither could nor ought confesse a thing so preiudiciall to the beautie of my Mistris: and thou seest, *Sancho*, how much this Knight is wide: but let vs heare him, it may be, he will vnfold himselfe more. Marry will he (quoth *Sancho*) for he talkes, as if he would lament a moneth together. But it fell out otherwise; for the Knight of the wood, hauing ouer-heard that they talked somewhat neere him, ceasing his complaints, he stood vp, and with a cleere, but familiar voice thus spake, Who's there, who is it? Is it haply some of the number of the contented, or of the afflicted? Of the afflicted (answered *Don Quixote*.) Come to me then (said he of the wood) and make account, you come to sadnesse it selfe, and to afflictions selfe. *Don Quixote*, when he saw himselfe answered so tenderly, and so modestly, drew neere, and *Sancho* likewise. The wailefull Knight laid hold on *Don Quixotes* arme, saying, Sit downe, Sr Knight: for to know that you are so, and one that professeth Knight Errantrie, it is enough that I haue found you night-dew in this place, where solitarines, and the *Serene* beare you com-panic,

panie, the naturall beds, and proper beings for Knights Errant.

To which *Don Quixote* replide, A Knight I am, and of the profession you speake of, and though disgraces, misfortunes, and sorrowes haue their proper seate in my minde: notwithstanding, the compassion I haue to other mens griefs, hath not left it: by your complaints I ghesse you are enamoured, I meane, that you loue that vngratefull faire one, mentioned in your lament. Whilst they were thus discoursing, they sat together louingly vpon the cold ground, as if by day-breake, their heads also would not breake.

The Knight of the wood demanded, Are you happily enamoured, Sr Knight? Vnhappily I am (quoth *Don Quixote*) although the vnhappines that ariseth from wel-placed thoughts, ought rather to be esteemed a happinelle then otherwise. True it is (replide he of the wood) if disdaines did not vex our reason and vnderstanding, which being vnmercifull, come neerer to reuenge. I was neuer (said *Don Quixote*) disdained of my Mistress. No indeed (quoth *Sancho*) who was neere them: for my Lady is as gentle as a lambe, and as soft as butter. Is this your Squire (said he of the wood?) He is (said *Don Quixote*.) I ne're saw Squire (replide he of the wood) that durst prate so boldly before his Master, at least yonder is mine, as bigge as his father, and I can prooue he neuer vnfolded his lippes, whensoever I spake.

Well yfaith (quoth *Sancho*) I haue spoken, and may speake before, as, and perhaps: but let it alone, the more it is stirred, the more it will stinke. The Squire of the wood tooke *Sancho* by the hand, saying: Let vs goe and talke what we list Squirelike, and let vs leaue these our Masters, Let them fall from their launces, and tell of their Loues: for I warrant you, the morning wil ouertake them, before they haue done. A Gods name (quoth *Sancho*) and Ile tell you who I am, that you may see whether I may be admitted into the number of your talking Squires. So the two Squires went apart, betweene whom there passed as wittie a Dialogue, as their Masters was serious.

## CHAP. XIII.

*where the Aduenture of the Knight of the wood is prosecuted, with the discrete, rare, and sweete Colloquie, that passed betwixt the two Squires.*

THE Knights and their Squires were deuided, these telling their liues, they their loues: and thus sayth the Storrie, that the Squire of the wood said to *Sancho*, It is a cumbersome life that we leade, Sr, we, I say, that are Squires to Knights Errant: for truly we eate our bread with the sweat of our browes, which is one of the curses, that God laid vpon our first parents. You may say also (added *Sancho*) that we eate it in the frost of our bodies: for who endure more heates and colds, then your miserable Squires... Knights Errant? and yet not so bad if we might eate at all, for good fare lessens care: but sometimes it happens, that we are two daies without eating, except it be the ayre that blowes on vs. All this may be borne (quoth he of the wood) with the hope we haue of reward: for if the Knight Errant whom a Squire serues, be not two vnfortunate, he shall, with a little good hap, see himselfe rewarded with the gouernment of some Island, or with a reasonable Earledome. I (said *Sancho*) haue often told my Master, that I would content my selfe with the gouernment of any Island, and he is so Noble and Liberall, that he hath often promised it me. I (said he of the Wood) for my seruices would be satisfied, with some Canonrie, which my Master too hath promised me.

Your Master indeed (said *Sancho*) belike is an Ecclesiasticall Knight, and may doe his good Squires these kindneses: but my Master is meere Lay, though I remember, that some persons of good discretion (though out of bad intention) counselled him, that he should be an Archbishop: which he would not be, but an Emperour: and I was in a bodily feare, lest he might haue a minde to the Church, because I held my selfe vncapable of benefits by it: for let me tell you, though to you I seeme a man, yet in Church matters I am a very beast. Indeed, Sr, (said he of the Wood)

Wood) You are in the wrong: for your Island-Governments are not all so special, but that some are crabbed, some poore, some distastefull; and lastly, the stateliest and best of all brings with it a heavy burden of cares and inconueniences, which hee (to whom it falls to his lot) vndergoes. Farre better it were, that we, who professe this cursed slavery, retire home, and there entertaine our selues with more delightfull exercises, to wit, hunting and fishing; for what Squire is there in the world so poore, that wants his Nag, his brace of Grey-hounds, or his Angle-rod, to passe his time with, at his Village?

I want none of this (sayd *Sancho*): true it is, I haue no Nag, but I haue an Asse worth two of my Masters Horse: An ill Christmas God send mee, (and let it be the next ensuing) if I would change for him, though I had foure bushels of barley to boot: you laugh at the price of my Dapple, for dapple is the colour of mine Asse: well, Grey-hounds I shall not want neither, there being enow to spare in our towne; besides, the sport is best at another mans charge.

Indeed, indeed, Sr. Squire (sayd he of the Wood) I haue proposed and determined with my selfe, to leaue these bezelings of these Knights, and returne to my Village, and bring vp my children, for I haue three, like three Orient-pearles. Two haue I (sayd *Sancho*) that may bee presented to the Pope in person, especially one, a wench, which I bring vp to bee a Countesse (God saue her) although it grieue her mother. And how olde (asked he of the Wood) is this Lady-Countesse that you bring vp so?

Fifteene, somewhat vnder or ouer (sayd *Sancho*) but she is as long as a lance, and as fresh as an Aprill-morning, and as sturdy as a Porter. These are parts (sayd he of the Wood) not onely for her to be a Countesse, but a Nymph of the Greeny Grove: Ah whoreson, whore, and what a sting the Queene hath? To which (quoth *Sancho* somewhat musty) Shee is no whore, neither was her mother before her, and none of them (God willing) shall be, as long as I liue: and I pray, Sir, speake more manly: for these speeches are not consonant from you, that haue beene brought vp amongst Knights Errant, the flowers of courtelie.

tesie. Oh (sayd he of the Wood) Sr. Squire, how you mistake, and how little you know what belongs to prailing: what? haue yee neuer obserued, that when any Knight in the market-place giues the Bula sure thrust with his lance, or when any body doth a thing well, the common people vie to say; Ah whoremonger, how brauely he did it? so that, that which seemes to be a dispraise, in that sence is a notable commendation, and renounce you those sonnes and daughters, that doe not the workes, that may make their parents deserue such like praises. I doe renounce (sayd *Sancho*) and if you meant no otherwise; I pray you clap a whole whore-house at once vpon my wife and children; for all they doe or say, are extremes worthy of such praises, and so I may see them, God deliuer me out of this mortal sinne, that is, out of this dangerous profession of being a Squire, into which I haue this second time incurred, being inticed and deceiued with the purse of the hundred duckats, which I found one day in the heart of *Sierra Morena*, and the Deuill cast that bag of Pistolets before mine eyes: (me thinkes) euery foot I touch it, hugge it, and carry it to mine house, set leases, and rents, and liue like a Prince, and still when I thinke of this, all the toyle that I passe with this Block-head my Master, seems eatie and tolerable to me, who (I know) is more mad-man then Knight.

Heere vpon (sayd he of the Wood) it is sayd; that, *All comes, all lose*: And now you talke of mad-men, I thinke, my Master is the greatest in the world, he is one of them that cries, *Hang sorrow*; and that another Knight may recover his wits, hee'l make himselfe mad, and will seeke after that, which perhaps once found, will tumble him vpon his snout. And is hee amorous haply? Yes (sayd hee of the Wood) hee loues one *Casilda de Vandalia*, the most raw and most rosted Lady in the world; but shee halts not on that foot of her rawnesse, for other manner of impostures doe grunt in those entrailes of hers, which ere long will be knowne.

There is no way so plaine (quoth *Don Quixote*) that hath not some rubbe, or pit, or as the Prouerbe goes, In some houses they see the beanes, and in mine whole kettles full. So madnesse hath  
more

more companions, and more needie ones then wisdom. But if that which is commonly spoken be true, that to haue companions in misery is a lightner of it, you may comfort me, that serue as sottish a Master as I doe. Sottish but valiant, (answered he of the wood) but more knaue then foole or then valiant. It is not so with my Master, said *Sancho*: for he is ne're a whit knaue; rather he is as dull as a Beetle, hurts no-body, does good to all, he hath no malice, a childe will make him beleue tis night at noone day: and for his simplicitie, I loue him as my heart-strings, and cannot finde in my heart, to leaue him for all his fopperies. For all that, Brother and friend, (said he of the wood) if the blinde guide the blinde, both will be in danger to fall into the pit.

Tis better to retire faire and softly, and returne to our loued homes: for they that hunt after Aduentures, doe not alwayes light vpon good. *Sancho* spit often, and as it seemed, a kinde of glewy and dry matter: which noted by the charitable wooddy Squire, he said, Me thinkes, with our talking, our tongues cleaue to our roofes: but I haue suppler hangs at the pummell of my horse, as good as touch: and rising vp, he returned presently with a Borracha of wine, and a bak't meate, at least halfe a yard long, and it is no lye, for it was of a Parboiled Cony so large, that *Sancho*, when he felt it, thought it had beene of a Goate, and not a Kid: which being scene by *Sancho*, he said, And had yee this with you too, Sr? Why, what did yee thinke (said the other) doe you take me to be some hungry Squire? I haue better prouision at my horses crupper, then a Generall carries with him vpon a March. *Sancho* fell to, without inuitation, and champ'd his bits in the darke, as if he had sclaunched knotted cordes, and said, I marry, Sr, you are a true Legall Squire, round and sound, Royall and Liberall (as appeares by you feast) which if it came not hither by way of Enchantment, yet it seemes so at least, and like no vnfortunate wretch, that only carry in my wallets, a little Cheese, so hard, that you may breake a Gyants head with it, & only some doozens of Saint *Johns* Weed leaues, and some few Walnuts, and small nuts, (plentie in the strictnesse of my Master, and the opinion he hath) and the method

thod he obserues, that Knights Errant must only be maintained and sustained onely with a little dry fruit, & fallers. By my faith (Brother) replide he of the wood, my stomacke is not made to your thilles, nor your stalkes, nor your mountaine-roots: let our Masters deale with their opinions, and their Knightly statutes, and eate what they will, I haue my cold meates, and this bottle hanging at the pummell of my saddle, will he, or will he: which I reuerence and loue so much, that a minute scarce passeth me, in which I giue it not a thousand kisses & embraces. Which said, he gaue it to *Sancho*, who rearing it on end at his mouth, looked a quarter of an houre together vpon the Starres: and when he had ended his draught, he held his necke on one side, and fetching a great sigh, cryes, Oh whoresoone raskal, how Catholike it is. Law yee there (said he of the wood) in hearing *Sancho's* whoresoone, how you haue praised the wine, in calling it whoresoone? I say (quoth *Sancho*) that I confesse, that I know it is no dishonour to call any bodie whoresoone, when there is a meaning to praise him. But tell me, Sr, by the remembrance of her you loue best, is this wine of a *Cinidad Real*? A braue taste (said he of the wood:) it is no lesse, and it is of some yeeres standing too. Let me alone (said *Sancho*) you could not but thinke I must know it to the height. Doe not you thinke it strange, Sr Squire, that I should haue so great, and so naturall an instinct, in distinguishing betwixt wines, that comming to sinell any wine, I hit vpon the place, the grape, the sauour, the lasting, the strength, with all circumstances belonging to wine? But no marueile, if in my linage by my fathers side, I had two of the most excellent tasters that were knowne in a long time in *Mancha*: for prooue of which, you shall know what befell them.

They gaue to these two some wine to taste out of a Hog's head, asking their opinions, of the state, qualitie, goodnesse or badnesse of the wine: the one of them prooued it with the tip of his tongue, the other only sinelt to it. The first said, that that wine sauoured of yron. The second said, Rather of goats leather. The owner protested, the Hog's head was cleane, and that the wine had no kinde of mixture, by which it should receiue any sauour of yron or leather. Notwithstanding, the two famous tasters

waiters stood to what they had said. Time ran on, the wine was sold, and when the vessell was cleansed, there was found in it a little key, with a leatherne thong hanging at it. Now you may see, whether he that comes from such a race, may giue his opinion in these matters.

Therefore I say to you (quoth he of the wood) let vs leaue looking after these Aduentures, and since we haue content, let vs not seeke after dainties, but returne to our cottages, for there God will finde vs, if it be his will. Till my Master come to *Saragosa*, I meane (quoth *Sancho*) to serue him, and then wee'll all take a new course. In fine, the two good Squires talked and dranke so much, that it was fit sleepe should lay their tongues, and slake their thirst, but to extinguish, it was impossible; so both of them fastned to the nigh emprie bottle, and their meate scarce out of their mouthes, fell asleepe: where for the present wee will leaue them, and tell what passed betweene the two Knights.

#### CHAP. XIV.

*How the Aduenture of the Knight of the Wood is prosecuted.*

**A**Mongst many discourses that passed betweene *Don Quixote*, and the Knight of the Wood, the History saies, that he of the wood said to *Don Quixote*, In briefe, Sir Knight, I would haue you know, that my destinie, or to say better, my election enamoured me vpon the peerelesse *Casildea de Vandalia*, Peerelesse I call her, as being so in the greatnesse of her Stature, and in the extreme of her being and beautie. This *Casildea* (I tell you of) repaide my good and vertuous desires, in employing me (as did the stepmother of *Hercules*, in many and different perils, promising me, at the accomplishing of each one, in performing another, I should enjoy my wishes: but my labours haue beene so linked one vpon another, that they are numberlesse, neither know I which may be the last

to

to giue an accomplishment to my lawfull desires.

Once she commanded me to giue defiance to that famous Gyantesse of *Seuil*, called the *Giralda*, who is so valiant & so strong (as being made of brasse, and without changing place) is the most moouable and turning woman in the world. I came, I saw, and conquered her, and made her stand still, and keepe distance; for a whole weeke together, no windes blew, but the North: Otherwhiles she commanded me to lift vp the ancient stones of the fierce Bulls of *Guisando*: an enterprize fitter for Porters, then Knights: another time she commanded me to go downe and diue in the Vault of *Cabra* (a fearefull and vnheard of attempt) and to bring her relation of all that was inclosed in that darke profunditie. I staide the motion of the *Giralda*, I waied the Bulls of *Guisando*, I cast my selfe downe the steep Caue, and brought to light the secrets of that bottome, but my hopes were dead, how dead? her disdaines still liuing, how liuing? Lastly, she hath now commanded me, that I run ouer all the Prouinces of *Spaine*, & make all the Knights Errant, that wander in them, confesse, that she alone goes beyond all other women in beauty, and that I am the valiantest, and most enamoured Knight of the world: in which demand I haue trauelled the greatest part of *Spaine*, and haue ouercome many Knights, that durst contradict me. But that which I prize and esteeme most is, That I haue conquer'd, in single combate, that so famous Knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and made him confesse that my *Casildea* is fairer then his *Dulcinea*, and in this conquest only I make account, that I haue conquer'd all the Knights in the world, because the aforesaid *Don Quixote* hath conquered them all, and I hauing ouercome him, his fame his glorie, and his honour, hath beene transferred and passed ouer to my person, and the Conquerour is so much the more esteemed: by how much the conquered was reputed, so that the innumerable exploits of *Don Quixote* now mentioned, are mine, and passe vpon my account.

*Don Quixote* admired to heare the Knight of the wood, and was a thousand times about to haue giuen him the lye, and had his *Thou lyes!* vpon the point of his tongue: but hee defer'd it as well as he could, to make him confesse with his owne

G  
mouth

As if we should say, to remoue the stones at Stonage in Wilt-shire.



mouth that he lyed, and so he told him calmly. That you may haue overcome (S<sup>r</sup> Knight) all the Knights Errant of Spaine, and the whole world, I grant yee: but that you haue overcome *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, I doubt it, it might be some other like him, though few there be so like. Why not? replide he of the Wood: I can assure you, Sir, I fought with him, overcome, and made him yeeld. Hee is a tall fellow, with red faced, lanke and dry in his limbes, somewhat hoary, sharpe-nosed and crooked; his mustachoes long, blacke, and false; hee marcheth vnder the name of *The Knight of the Sorrowfull Countenance*: he presses the loine, and rules the bridle of a famous horse called *Rozinante*, & hath for the Mistis of his thoughts, one *Dulcinea del Toboso*, sometimes called *Aldonza Lorenzo*, iust as mine, that because her name was *Casilda*, and of *Andaluzia*, I call her *Casildea de Vandalia*: and if all these tokens be not enough to countenance the truth, heere is my sword that shall make incredulity it selfe belieue it. Haue patience, S<sup>r</sup> Knight (quoth *Don Quixote*) and heare what I shall say. Know, that this *Don Quixote* you speake of, is the greatest friend I haue in this world, and so much that I may tell you, I loue him as well as my selfe, and by the signes that you haue giuen of him, so punctuall and certaine, I cannot but thinke it is he whom you haue overcome. On the other side, I see with mine eyes, and feele with my hands, that it is not possible it should be he, if it be not, that, as he hath many Enchanters that be his enemies, especially one, that doth ordinarily persecute him, there be some one that hath taken his shape on him, and suffered himselfe to be overcome, to defraud him of the glory which his noble chivalry hath gotten and layd vp for him thorowout the whole earth. And for confirmation of this, I would haue you know, that these Enchanters mine enemies (not two daies since) transformed the shape and person of the faire *Dulcinea del Toboso*, into a foule & base country wench, and in this sort belike they haue transformed *Don Quixote*: and if all this be not sufficient to direct you in the truth, here is *Don Quixote* himselfe, that will maintaine it with his Armes on foot or on horse-back, or in what manner you please: and he grasped his sword, expecting what resolution the Knight of the Wood would.

would take, who with a stayed voyce, answered & sayd: A good Pay-matter needs no surety: hee that could once, *Don Quixote*, overcome you when you were transformed, may very well hope to restore you to your proper being. But because it becomes not Knights to doe their feats in the darkelike high-way-robbers and Ruffians, let vs stay for the day, that the Sunne may behold our actions; and the condition of our combate shall be, that he that is overcome, shall stand to the mercy of the Conquerour, to do with him according to his will, so farre as what he ordaineth shall be fitting for a Knight.

I am ouer-joyed with this condition and agreement (quoth *Don Quixote*.) And (this sayd) they went where their Squires were, whom they found snoring, and iust as they were, when sleep first stole vpon them. They wakened them, and commanded they should make their horses ready: for by sun rising, they meant to haue a bloudy and vnequall single combate. At which newes *Sancho* was astonisht and amazed, as fearing his Masters safety, by reason of the Knight of the Woods valour, which he had heard from his Squire: but without any reply, the two Squires went to seeke their cattel: for by this the three horses and Dapple had smelt out one another, and were together.

By the way, he of the Wood sayd to *Sancho*, You must vnderstand, Brother, that your Combatants of *Andaluzia* vse, when they are Sticklers in any quarrell, not to stand idly with their hands in their pockers, whilst their friends are fighting. I tell you this, because you may know, that whilst our Masters are at it, we must skirmish too, and breake our lances to shivers. This custome, S<sup>r</sup> Squire (answered *Sancho*) may be currant there, and passe amongst your Ruffians and Combatants you talke of: but with your Squires that belong to Knights Errant, not so much as a thought of it. At least, I haue not heard my Master so much as speake a word of any such custome, and hee knowes without booke all the ordinances of Knight Errantry. But let mee grant yee, that tis an expresse ordinance that the Squires fight, whilst their Masters doe so: yet I will not fulfill that, but pay the penalty that shall be imposed vpon such peaceable Squires: for I doe not thinke, it will be about two pound

Alluding to  
some penal-  
ties enioyned  
by Confes-  
sors, to pay to  
burne in can-  
dles in the  
Church.

of wax, and I had rather pay them, for I know they will cost me lesse, then the lint that I shall spend in making tents to cure my head, which already I make account is cut and diuided in two: besides, tis impossible I should fight, hauing neuer a sword, and I neuer wore any.

For that (quoth he of the Wood) Ile tell you a good remedy, I haue heere two linnen bags of one bignesse, you shall haue one, and I the other, and with these equall weapons, wee'll fight at bag-blowes. Let vs doe so and you will (sayd *Sancho*) for this kinde of fight will rather serue to dust, then to wound vs. Not so (sayd the other) for within the bags (that the winde may not carry them to and fro) wee will put halfe a doozen of delicate smooth pebbles, of equall waight, and so we may bag-baste one another, without doing any great hurt. Looke ye, body of my father (quoth *Sancho*) what Martins or Sables furre, or what fine-carded wooll he puts in the bags, not to beat out our brains, or make *Prinet* of our bones: but know, Sir, if they were silke bals, I would not fight: let our Masters fight, and heare on it in another world, let vs drinke and liue, for time will bee carefull to take away our liues, without our striving to end them before their time and season, and that they drop before they are ripe. For all that (sayd he of the Wood) we must fight halfe an houre. No, no (sayd *Sancho*) I will not be so discourteous and vngratefull, as to wrangle with whom I haue eaten and drunke, let the occasion bee neuer so small, how much more I being without choller or anger, who the Deuill can barely without these fight?

For this (sayd he of the Wood) Ile giue you a sufficient cause, which is, that before wee begin the combate, I will come mee finely to you, and giue you three or foure boxes, and strike you to my feet, with which I shall awake your choller, although it sleepe like a Dormouse. Against this cut I haue another (quoth *Sancho*) that comes not short of it, I will take me a good cudgell, and before you waken my choller, I will make you sleepe so soundly with bastinadoing you, that it shall not wake but in another world, in which it shall be knowne, that I am not hee that will let any man handle my face; and euery man looke to the shaft.

shaft he shoots: And the best way were to let euery mans choller sleepe with him, for no man knowes what's in another, and many come for wooll, that returne shorne, and God blessed the Peace-makers, and cursed the Quarreller; for if a Cat shut into a roome, much baited and straightned, turne to be a Lyon, God knowes what I that am a man, may turne to: Therefore, from henceforward, Sr. Squire, let mee intimate to you, that all the euill and mischief that shall arise from our quarrell, bee vpon your head. Tis well (quoth he of the Wood) let it be day, and we shall thrue by this.

And now a thousand sorts of painted birds began to chirp in the trees, and in their different delightfull tones, it seemed they bad good morrow, & saluted the fresh *Aurora*, that now discovered the beauty of her face, thorow the gates & bay-windowes of the East, shaking from her lockes an infinite number of liquid pearles, bathing the hearbes in her sweet liquour, that it seemed they also sprouted, and rained white and small pearles: the willowes did distill their saoury *Manna*, the fountaines laughed, the brookes murmured, the woods were cheered, and the fields were enriched with her coming.

But the brightnesse of the day scarce gaue time to distinguish things, when the first thing that offered it selfe to *Sancho's* sight, was the Squire of the Woods nose, which was so huge, that it did as it were shadow his whole body. It is sayd indeed, that it was of an extraordinary bignesse, crooked in the middelt, and all full of warts of a darkish-greene colour, like a *Berengene*, and hung some two fingers ouer his mouth: this hugenesse, colour, warts, and crookednesse, did so disfigure his face, that *Sancho* in seeing him, began to lay about him back-ward and forward, like a young raw Ancient, and resolved with himselfe to endure two hundred boxes, before his choller should waken to fight with that Hobgoblin.

*Don Quixote* beheld his opposite, and perceiued that his helmet was on and drawne, so that he could not see his face, but he saw that he was well set in his body, though not tall; vpon his armour he wore an vpper garment or cassocke, to see to, of pure cloth of gold, with many Moones of shining Looking-glasses

spread about it, which made him appear very braue and gorgeous, a great plume of greene feathers waued about his Helmet, with others white & yellow, his Lance which he had reared vp against a tree, was very long and thicke, and with a Steele pike about a handfull long *Don Quixote* obserued and noted all, and by what he had seene and marked, iudged that the sayd Knight must needs be of great strength: But yet he was not afrayd (like *Sancho*) and with a bold courage thus spoke to the Knight of the Looking-glasses: If your eagernesse to fight, Sir Knight, haue not spent your courtesie, for it, I desire you to lift vp your Visor a little, that I may behold whether the liueliness of your face be answerable to that of your disposition, whether vanquishd or Vanquisher you be in this enterprize. Sir Knight (answered he of the Looking-glasses) you shall haue time and leisure enough to see me, and if I doe not now satisfie your desire, it is because I thinke I shall doe a great deale of wrong to the faire *Casildea de Vandalia*, to delay so much time as to lift vp my Visor, till I haue first made you confesse what I know you goe about. Well, yet while we get a horse-backe (sayd *Don Quixote*) you may resolue me whether I be that *Don Quixote* whom you sayd, you had vanquished.

To this I answer you (said he of the Looking-glasses) You are as like the Knight I conquered, as one egge is to another: But, as you say, Enchanters persecute you, and therefore I dare not affirme whether you bee hee or no: It sufficeth (quoth *Don Quixote*) for mee, that you beleue your being deceiued: but that I may entirely satisfie you, let's to horse, for in lesse time then you should haue spent in lifting vp your Visor (if God, my Mittrill, and mine Arme defend me) will I see your face, and you shall see that I am not the vanquishd *Don Quixote* you speake of.

And heere cutting off discourse, to horse they goe, and *Don Quixote* turn'd *Rozinante* about, to take so much of the field (as was fit for him) to returne to encounter his enemy, and the Knight of the Looking-glasses did the like. But *Don Quixote* was not gone twenty paces from him, when he heard that he of the looking-glasses called him. So the two parting the way, he of

the

the Glasses sayd, Be mindefull, Sr. Knight, that the condition of our combate is, that the vanquished (as I haue told you before) must stand to the discretion of the Vanquisher. I know it (sayd *Don Quixote*) so that what is imposed and commanded the vanquished, be within the bounds and limits of Caualerry. So it is meant, sayd he of the Glasses.

Heere *Don Quixote* saw the strange nose of the Squire, and he did not lesse wonder at the sight of it, then *Sancho*; insomuch that he deemed him a monster, or some new kinde of man not vsuall in the world. *Sancho*, that saw his Master goe to fetch his Carcere, would not tarry alone with Nose *anitem*, fearing that at one snap with others Nose vpon his, their fray would bee ended, that either with the blow, or it, hee should come to the ground. So he ran after his Master, laying hold vpon one of *Rozinantes* stirrup leathers, and when hee thought it time for his Master to turne backe, he sayd; I beseech your Worship, Master mine, that before you fall to your encounter, you helpe mee to climbe vp yon Cork-tree, from whence I may better, and with more delight, then from the ground, see the gallant encounter you shall make with this Knight.

Rather, *Sancho* (sayd *Don Quixote*) thou wouldest get aloft, as into a scaffold, to see the Bulls without danger. Let mee deale truly (sayd *Sancho*) the vgly nose of that Squire hath astonishd me, and I dare not come neere him. Such an one it is (sayd *Don Quixote*) that any other but I, might very well be afrayd of it, and therefore come, and Ile helpe thee vp.

Whilst *Don Quixote* was helping *Sancho* vp into the Cork-tree, he of the Looking-glasses tooke vp roome for his Carcere, and thinking that *Don Quixote* would haue done the like, without looking for trumpets sound, or any other warning-signe, he turned his horses reines (no better to see to, nor swifter then *Rozinante*) and with his full speede (which was a reasonable trot) hee went to encounter his enemy: but seeing him busied in the mounting of *Sancho*, hee held in his reines, and stopped in the midst of his Carcere, for which his horse was most thankfull, as being vnable to mooue. *Don Quixote*, who thought his enemy by this came flying, set spurs lustily to *Rozinante*

*zinzantes* hinder-flanke, and made him post in such manner, that the Story sayes, now onely he seemed to run, for all the rest was plaine trotting heeretofore. And with this vnspcakable fury, he came where he of the Looking-glasse was gagging his spurres into his horse, to the very hoops, without being able to remoue him a fingers length from the place, where he had set vp his rest for the Carcere.

In this good time and coniuncture, *Don Quixote* found his contrary puzzled with his horse, & troubled with his lance; for either he could not, or else wanted time to set it in his rest. *Don Quixote* that neuer looked into these inconueniencies, safely and without danger, encountred him of the Looking-glasse so furiously, that in spight of his teeth hee made him come to the ground, from his horse-crupper, with such a fall, that stirring neither hand nor foot, hee made shew as if hee had beene dead. *Sancho* scarce saw him downe, when hee slid from the Cork-tree, and came in all haste to his Master, who dismounted from *Rozinante*, got vpon him of the Looking-glasse, and vnslacing his helmet, to see if he were dead, or if he were aliue, to giue him aire, he saw: (Who can tell without great admiration, wonder and amaze to him that shall heare it?) he saw (sayes the History) the selfesame face, the same visage, the same aspect, the same physiognomy, the same shape, the same perspective of the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, and as he saw it, hee cryed aloud, Come *Sancho*, and behold what thou mayest see, and not beleue, runne whore-sonne, and obserue the power of Magicke, what Witches and Enchanters can doe.

*Sancho* drew neere, and saw the Bachelour *Samson Carrasco's* face, & so began to make a thousand crollcs, & to blesse himselfe as oft. In all this while the ouerthrowne Knight made no shew of liuing. And *Sancho* sayd to *Don Quixote*, I am of opinion, Sir, that by all means you thrust your sword down this fellows throte, that is so like the Bachelour *Samson Carrasco*, and so perhaps in him, you shall kill some of your enemies the Enchanters. Tis not ill aduised (quoth *Don Quixote*.) So drawing out his sword, to put *Sancho's* counsell in execution, the Knights Squire came in, his nose being off, that had so disfigured him, and sayd aloud:

aloud: Take heede, Sr *Don Quixote*, what you doe; for hee that is now at your mercy, is the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco* your friend, and I his Squire.

Now *Sancho* seeing him without his former deformity, said to him, And your nose? To which he answered, Here it is in my pocket: and putting his hand to his right side, hee pulled out a pasted nose, and a varnished vizard, of the manufacture described. And *Sancho* more and more beholding him, with a loud and admiring voyce said, Saint *Mary* defend me: and is not this *Thomas Cecial* my neighbour and my Gossip? And how say you by that (quoth the vn-nosed Squire?) *Thomas Cecial* I am, Gossip and friend *Sancho*, and streight I will tell you, the conueyances, sleights and trickes that brought mee hither: in the meane time request and intreat your Master, that he touch not, misuse, wound or kil the Knight of the Looking-glasse, now at his mercy; for doubtlesse it is the bold and ill-aduized Bachelor *Samson Carrasco* our Countryman.

By this time the Knight of the Looking-glasse came to himselfe, which *Don Quixote* seeing, hee clapt the bare point of his sword vpon his face, & said, Thou diest, Knight, if thou confessest not, that the peerlesse *Dulcinea del Toboso* excells your *Casilda de Vandalia* in beauty: and moreouer, you shall promise (if from this battell and fall you remaine with life) to goe to the Citie of *Toboso*, and present your selfe from me before her, that she may dispose of you as she pleaseth: and if she pardon you, you shall returne to me; for the tracke of my exploits will bee your guide, and bring you where I am, to tell mee what hath passed with her. These conditions (according to those wee agreed on before the battell) exceed not the limits of Knight Errantrie.

I confesse, said the faine Knight, that the Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso's* torne and foule shooe, is more worth then the ill-combed haire (though cleane) of *Casilda*: and here I promise to goe and come from her presence to yours, and giue you entire and particular relation of all you require. You shall also confesse and beleue (added *Don Quixote*) that the Knight whom you ouercame, neyther was, nor could be *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, but some other like him, as I confesse and beleue, that you, although

though you seeme to be the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, are not he, but one like him, and that my enemies haue cast you into his shape, that I may with-hold and temper the force of my choller, and vse moderately the glory of my conquest. I confesse, iudge, and allow of all as you confesse, iudge, and allow (answered the backe-broken Knight.) Let me rise, I pray you, if the blow of my fall will let mee; for it hath left me in ill case. *Don Quixote* helped him to rise, and *Thomas Cecial* his Squire, on whom *Sancho* still cast his eyes, asking him questions, whose answeres gaue him manifest signes, that hee was *Thomas Cecial* indeed, as hee said, but the apprehension that was made in *Sancho*, by what his Master had said, that the Enchanters had changed the forme of the Knight of the glasses into *Samson Carrasco's*, made him not belecue what he saw with his eyes. To conclude, the Master and Man remained still in their errour: and he of the glasses and his Squire very moody and ill Errants, left *Don Quixote*, purposing to seeke some towne where hee might seare-cloth himselfe, and settle his ribbes. *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* held on their way to *Saragosa*, where the story leaues them, to tell who was the Knight of the Glasses and his Nisie Squire.

## CHAP. XV.

*who the Knight of the looking-glasses and his Squire were.*

**D**On *Quixote* was extremely contented, glad, and vaine-glorious, that hee had subdued so valiant a Knight, as hee imagined hee of the Looking-glasses was, from whose knightly word he hoped to know if the Enchantment of his Mistris were certaine, since of necessity the said vanquished Knight was to returne, (on paine of not being so) to relate what had happened vnto him: but *Don Quixote* thought one thing, and he of the Glasses another, though for the present he minded nothing, but to seeke where hee might seare-cloth himselfe. The history then tels vs, that when the Bachelor

lor *Samson Carrasco* aduiled *Don Quixote* that he should prosecute his forsaken Cauallery, hee entred first of all into counsell with the Vicar and the Barber, to know what meanes they should vse, that *Don Quixote* might bee perswaded to stay at home peaceably and quietly, without troubling himselfe with his vn lucky aduentures: from which counsaile by the common consent of all, and particular opinion of *Carrasco*, it was agreed, that *Don Quixote* should abroad againe, since it was impossible to stay him, and that *Samson* should meet him vpon the way like a Knight Errant, and should fight with him, since an occasion would not be wanting, and so to ouercome him, which would not be difficult, and that there should be a couenant and agreement, that the vanquished should stand to the courtesie of the vanquisher, so that *Don Quixote* being vanquished, the Bachelor Knight should command him to get him home to his towne and house, and not to stirre from thence in two yeeres after, or till hee should command him to the contrary: the which in all likelihood *Don Quixote* once vanquished would infallibly accomplish, as vnwilling to contradict or bee defectiue in the Lawes of Knighthood, and it might so be, that in this time of sequestering, he might forget all his vanities, or they might finde out some conuenient remedy for his madnesse. *Carrasco* accepted of it, and *Thomas Cecial* offered himselfe to be his Squire, *Sancho Panza's* neighbour and Gossip, a merry knaue and a witty. *Samson* armed himselfe (as you haue heard) and *Thomas Cecial* fitted the false nose to his owne, and clapt on his vizard, that he might not be known by his Gossip, vvhien they should meete. So they held on the same voyage with *Don Quixote*, and they came euen iust as hee vvas in the aduenture of Deaths Wagon. And at last they lighted on them in the Wood, vvhich what befell them, the discreet Reader hath seene, and if it had not beene for the strange opinion that *Don Quixote* had, that the Bachelor vvas not the selfe-same man, he had beene spoyled for euer for taking another Degree, since he mist his marke.

*Thomas Cecial* that saw vvhich ill vse hee had made of his hopes, and the bad effect that his iourney tooke, sayd to the Bachelor, Truly, Mr *Samson*, we haue our deserts: things are easily

easily conceiued, and enterprizes easily vnderaken, but very hardly performed. *Don Quixote* mad, we wise, but hee is gone away sound and merry, you are heere bruised and sorrowfull. Let vs know then vvho is the greatest mad-man, hee that is so and cannot doe vvithall, or hee that is so for his pleasure? To which (quoth *Samson*) The difference betweene these madde men is, that hee that of necessity is so, will alwaies remaine so, and he that accidentally is so, may leaue it vvhen he will. Since it is so (said *Thomas Cecial*) I that for my pleasure was madde, when I vvould needes be your Squire; for the same reason I will leaue the office, and returne home to my owne house. Tis fit you should (said *Samson*) yet to thinke that I will doe so, till I haue soundly banged *Don Quixote*, is vaine, and now I goe not about to restore him to his wits, but to reuenge my selfe on him: for the intolerable paine I feele in my ribbes, will not permit mee a more charitable discourse. Thus they two vvont on parlying till they came to a Towne, where by chance they lighted vpon a Bone-setter, who cured the vnfortunate *Samson*. *Thomas Cecial* went home and left him, and hee stayed musing vpon his reuenge: and the History heereafter will returne to him, which at present must make merry with *Don Quixote*.

## CHAP. XVI.

*What befell Don Quixote with a discreet Gentleman of Mancha.*

**D**On *Quixote* went on his journey with the ioy, content, and gladnesse, as hath beene mentioned, imagining that for the late victory, he was the most valiant Knight that that age had in the world, he made account that all aduentures that should from thence forward befall him, were brought to a happy and prosperous end: he cared not now for any enchantments, or enchanters: he forgot the innumerable bangs that in the prosecution of his Chinalrie had been given him, and the stones cast, that strooke out halfe his teeth, and the vnthankfulness of the

the Galli slaues, and the boldnesse and showres of stakes of the *Tangneses*.

In conclusion, he said to himselfe, that if hee could finde any Art, manner, or meanes how to dis-enchant his Mistresse *Dulcinea*, hee would not enuy the greatest happinesse or prosperity that euer any Knight Errant of former times had obtained.

Hee was altogether busied in these imaginations, when *Sancho* told him: How say you Sir, that I haue still before mine eyes that ill-fauoured, more then ordinary nose of my Gossip *Thomas Cecial*? And doe you happily, *Sancho*, thinke that the Knight of the Looking-glasses was the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, and his Squire *Thomas Cecial* your Gossip? I know not what to say to it (quoth *Sancho*) onely I know, that the tokens he gaue me; of my house, wife, and children, no other could giue vm mee but he, and his face, (his nose being off) was the same that *Thomas Cecials*, as I haue scene him many times in our Towne, and next house to mine, and his voyce was the same. Let vs bee reasonable, *Sancho*, (said *Don Quixote*;) Come hither; How can any man imagine that the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, should come like a Knight Errant, arm'd with Armes offensive and defensive, to fight with me? Haue I euer giuen him occasion, that he should dogge mee? Am I his *Rinal*, or is he a Professor of Armes, to enuy the glory that I haue gotten by them? Why what should I say (answered *Sancho*) when I saw that Knight (be he who he will) looke so like the Bachelor *Carrasco*, and his Squire to *Thomas Cecial* my gossip? and if it were an Enchantment (as you say) vvhere there no other two in the vvorld, they might look like. All is juggling & cunning (quoth *Don Quixote*) of the wicked Magicians that persecute me, who fore-seeing that I should remaine Victor in this combat, had provided that the vanquishd Knight should put on the shape of my friend *Carrasco*, that the friendship I beare him might mediate betwixt the edge of my sword, and the rigor of my arme, and temper my hearts iust indignation; and so, that he might escape with his life, that with trickes and deuices sought to take away mine. For prooffe of which, oh *Sancho*, thou knowest by experience, that vvill not let thee lye or be deceiued, how easie



it is for Enchanters to change one face into another, making the beautifull deformed, and the deformed beautifull: and it is not two dayes, since with thine owne eyes thou sawest the beauty and liuelinesse of the peerelesse *Dulcinea* in it's perfection, and naturall conformity, and I saw her in the fouleneesse and meane-nesse of a courle milke-maide, with bleare eyes, and stinking breath, so that the peruerse Enchanter, that durst cause so wicked a Metamorphosis, 'tis not much that hee hath done the like in the shapes of *Samson Carrasco* and *Thomas Cecial*, to rob me of the glory of my conquest. Notwithstanding I am of good comfort; for in what shape soeuer it were, I haue vanquished mine enemy. God knowes all (said *Sancho*) and whereas hee knew the transformation of *Dulcinea* had beene a tricke of his, his Masters *Chimera's* gaue him no satisfaction: but hee durst not reply a word, for feare of discouering his cozenage.

Whilest they were thus reasoning, one ouertooke them that came their way, vpon a faire flea-bitten Mare, vpon his backe a riding-coate of fine greene cloth, vvelted with tawny Veluet, with a Hunters cap of the same; his Mares furniture was for the field, and after the Genet fashion, of the said tawny and greene, he wore a Moorish Semiter, hanging at a broad Belt of greene and gold, his buskins were wrought with the same that his belt was, his spurs were not gilt, but layd on with a greene varnish, so smooth and burnisht, that they were more sutable to the rest of his clothes, then if they had beene of beaten gold. Comming neere, he saluted them courteously, and spurring his Mare, rode on: But *Don Quixote* said to him, Gallant, if you goe our way, and your halte be not great. I should take it for a fauour that wee might ride together. Truly Sir, said he with the Mare, I should not ride from you, but that I feare your horse will be vnruely with the company of my Mare. You may wel, Sir (said *Sancho*) you may well reyne in your Mare: for our horse is the honestest and manerliest horse in the world; he is neuer vnruely vpon these occasions; and once when hee flew out, my Master and I payd for it with a witnesse. I say againe, you may stay if you please, for although your Mare were giuen him betweene two dishes, he would not looke at her.

The

The Passenger held in his reines, wondring at *Don Quixotes* countenance and posture, who was now without his helmet, for *Sancho* carried it in a Cloke-bag at the pummell of Dapples pack-saddle: and if hee in the Greene did much looke at *Don Quixote*, *Don Quixote* did much more eye him, taking him to be a man of worth; his age shewed him to bee about fitty, hauing few gray haire, his face was somewhat sharp, his countenance of an equall temper: Lastly, in his fashion and posture, hee seemed to be a man of good quality. His opinion of *Don Quixote* was, that hee had neuer seene such a kinde of man before; the lanknesse of his horse, the talnesse of his owne body, the sparenesse and palenesse of his face made him admire; his armes, his gesture and composition, a shape and picture, as it were, had not beene seene (many ages before) in that Countrey.

*Don Quixote* noted well with what attention the Traueller beheld him, and in his suspence read his desire, and being so courteous and so great a friend, to giue all men content, before he demanded him any thing, to preuent him, he sayd: This outside of mine that you haue seene, Sir, because it is so rare and different frō others now in vse, may (no doubt) haue bred some wonder in you: which you will cease, when I shall tell you, as now I doe, that I am a Knight, one of those (as you would say) that seeke their fortunes. I went out of my Countrey, engaged mine estate, left my pleasure, committed my selfe to the Armes of Fortune, to carry me whither she pleased. My desire was to raise againe the dead Knight Errantry, and long agoe stumbling heere, and falling there, casting my selfe headlong in one place, and rising vp in another, I haue accomplished a great part of my desire, succouring Widdowes, defending Damozels, fauouring married women, Orphans, and distressed children (the proper & naturall office of Knights Errant) so that by my many valiant and Christian exploits, I haue merited to be in the Presse, in all or most nations of the world: thirty thousand volumes of my History haue beene printed, and thirty thousand millions more are like to be, if Heauen permit. Lastly, to shut vp all in a word, I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, otherwise called, *The Knight of the Sorrowfull Countenance*: And though one should not praise



praise himselfe, yet I must needs doe it, that is, there being none present that may doe it for me : so that, kinde Gentle-man, neither this horse, this lance, nor this shield, nor this Squire, nor all these armes together, nor the palenisse of my face, nor my slender macilency, ought henceforward to admire you, you knowing now who I am, and the profession I maintaine.

This sayd, *Don Quixote* was silent, and hee with the greene Coat was a great while ere he could answer, as if hee could not hit vpon't : but after some pause, hee sayd : You were in the right, Sir Knight, in knowing, by my suspension, my desire : but yet you haue not quite remooued my admiration, which was caused with seeing you, for although that, as you say, Sir, that to know who you are, might make me leaue wondring, it is otherwise, rather since now I know it, I am in more suspence and wonderment. And is it possible, that at this day there bee Knights Errant in the world ? And that there bee true Histories of Knight-hood printed ? I cannot perswade my selfe, that there are any now that fauour widowes, defend Damozels, honour married women, or succor Orphans, & I should neuer haue beleued it, if I had not in you beheld it with mine eyes: Bleis'd be Heauens ; for with this History you speake of, which is printed of your true and lofty Chiuallry, those innumerable falsities of fained Knights Errant will be forgotten, which the world was full of ; so hurtfull to good education, and preiudiciall to true Stories.

There is much to be spoken (quoth *Don Quixote*) whether the Histories of Knights Errant were fained or true. Why, is there any that doubts (sayd he in the Greene) that they bee not false ? I doe (sayd *Don Quixote*) and let it suffice, for if our iourney last, I hope in God to let you see, that you haue done ill, to beele with the streame of them that hold they are not true. At this last speech of *Don Quixote*, the Traueller suspected hee was some Ideot, and expected when some others of his might confirme it : but before they should be diuerted with any other discourse, *Don Quixote* desired to know who he was, since hee had imparted to him his condition and life : Hee in the Greene made answer ; I, Sir Knight of the Sorrowfull Countenance, am a Gentle-man

Gentle-man borne in a towne, where (God willing) wee shall dine to day : I am well to liue, my name is *Don Diego de Miranda*, I spend my life with my wife, and children, and friends : my sports are hunting and fishing : but I haue neither Hawke nor Grey-hounds, onely a tame Cock-Partridge, or a murdering Ferret, some six doozen of bookes, some Spanish, some Latine, some History, others Deuotion : your books of Knight-hood haue not yet entred the threshold of my doore, I do more turne ouer your prophane bookes then religious, if they be for honest recreation, such as may delight for their language, & admire, & suspend for their inuention, although in *Spain* there be few of these. Sometimes I dine with my neighbors and friends, & otherwhiles inuite them : my meales are neat & handiome, & nothing scarce : I neither loue to back-bite my selfe, nor to heare others doe it : I search not into other mens liues, or am a *Loose* to other mens actions, I heare euery day a Mass, part my goods with the poore, without making a muller of my good deeds, that I may not giue way to hypocricie and vaine-glory to enter into my heart, enemies that easily cease vpon the wariest brest : I strue to make peace betweene such as are at odds. I am deuoted to our blessed Lady, and alwayes trust in Gods infinite mercy.

*Sancho* was most attentiu to this relation of the life and entertainements of this Gentle-man, which seeming to him to bee good and holy, and that he that led it, worked miracles, he flung himselfe from Dapple, and in great haste layd hold of his right stirrup, and with the teares in his eyes often kissed his feet : which being seene by the Gentle-man, hee asked him ; What doe ye, Brother ? Wherefore be these kisses ?

Let me kisse (quoth *Sancho*) for (me thinkes) your Worship is the first Saint, that in all the dayes of my life, I euer saw a horse-backe. I am no Saint (sayd he) but a great sinner, you indeed, Brother, are, and a good soule, as your simplicity shewes you to be. *Sancho* went againe to recouer his pack-saddle, hauing (as it were) brought into the market-place his Masters laughter out of a profound melancholy, and caused a new admiration in *Don Diego*.

*Don Quixote* asked him how many sonnes hee had : who

told him, that one of the things in which the Philosophers *Summum Bonum* did consist (who wanted the true knowledge of God) was in the goods of Nature, in those of Fortune, in having many friends, and many and vertuous children. I, Sir *Don Quixote* (answered the Gentle-man) haue a sonne, whom if I had not, perhaps you would iudge mee more happy then I am, not that he is so bad, but because not so good as I would haue him: he is about eighteen yeers of age, six of which he hath spent in *Salamanca*, learning the tongues Greeke & Latin, and when I had a purpose that he should fall to other Sciences, I found him so besotted with Poesie, and that Science (if so it may bee called) that it is not possible to make him looke vpon the Law (which I would haue him study) nor Diuinity the Queene of all Sciences. I would he were the crowne of all his linage, since wee liue in an age, wherein our King doth highly reward good learning: for learning without goodnesse, is like a pearle cast in a Swines snout: all the day long hee spends in his Criticismes, whether *Homer* sayd well or ill in such a verse of his *Iliads*, whether *Martial* were bawdy or no in such an Epigram, whether such or such a verse in *Virgil* ought to be vnderstood this way or that way. Indeed, all his delight is in these aforesayd Poets; & in *Horace*, *Persius*, *Iuuenal*, and *Tibullus*; but of your moderne writers he makes small account: yet for all the grudge he beares to moderne Poesie, hee is mad vpon your catches, and your glossing vpon foure verses, which were sent him from *Salamanca*, and that I thinke is his true study.

To all which, *Don Quixote* answered; Children, Sir, are pieces of the very entrailes of their Parents, so let them bee good or bad, they must loue them, as wee must loue our spirits that giue vs life: It concernes their Parents to direct them from their infancie in the paths of vertue, of good manners, and good and Christian exercises, that when they come to yeeres, they may be the staffe of their age, and the glory of their posterity: and I hold it not so proper, to force them to study this or that Science, though to perswade them were not amisse, and though it be not to study to get his bread (the Student being so happy, that God hath giuen him Parents able to leaue him well) mine opinion should

should bee, that they let him follow that kinde of study hee is most inclined to, and though that of Poetry be lesse profitable then delightfull, yet it is none of those, that will dishonour the Professour.

Poetry, Signior, in my opinion, is like a tender virgin, young & most beautifull, whom many other virgins, to wit, all the other Sciences, are to enrich, polish, and adorne, she is to be serued by them all, and all are to bee authorized by her: but this Virgin will not bee handled and hurried vp and downe the streets, nor published in euery market-nooke, nor Court-corners. Shee is made of a kind of Alchymie, that he that knowes how to handle her, will quickly turne her into the purest gold of inestimable value, he that enioyeth her, must hold her at distance, not letting her lash out in vnleane Satyrs, nor in dull Sonnets, she must not by any meanes bee vendible, except in Heroike Poems, in lamentable Tragedies, or pleasant and artificiall Comedies: Shee must not be meddled with by Iesters, nor by the Ignorant vulgar, vncapable of knowing or esteeming the treasures that are locked vp in her; & think not, Sir, that I call here only the common people vulgar, for whosoever is ignorant, be he Potentate or Prince, he may and must enter into the number of the vulgar: so that hee who shall handle and esteeme of Poetry with these Requisites I haue declared, he shall be famous, and his name shall be extolled in all the Politique nations of the world.

And wheras, Sir, you say your sonne neglects moderne Poesie, I perswade my selfe he doth not well in it, and the reason is this: Great *Homer* neuer wrote in Latine, because he was a Grecian; nor *Virgil* in Greeke, because he was a Latine: Indeed all your ancient Poets wrote in the tongue which they learnt from their cradle, and sought not after strange languages to declare their lofty conceits. Which being so, it were reason this custom should extend it selfe thorow all nations, and that your *German* Poet should not be vnder-valued, because hee writes in his language, nor the *Castilian*, or *Biscayner*, because they write in theirs. But your sonne (as I suppose) doth not mislike moderne Poesie, but Poets that are meere moderne, without knowledge of other tongues, or Sciences, that may adorne, rowze vp,

and strengthen their natural impulse, & yet in this there may be an error. For it is a true opinion, that a Poet is borne so, the meaning is, a Poet is naturally borne a Poet from his mothers wombe, and with that inclination that Heauen hath giuen him, without further study or Art, he composeth things, that verifie his saying that sayd, *Est Deus in nobis, &c?*

Let mee also say, that the naturall Poet, that helps himselfe with Art, shall bee much better, and haue the aduantage of that Poet, that onely out of his Art strives to be so: the reason is, because Art goes not beyond Nature, but onely perfects it, so that Nature and Art mixt together, and Art with Nature, make an excellent Poet. Let this then be the scope of my discourse, Sir, let your sonne proceede whither his Starre calls him: for if he be so good a Student, as he ought to be, and haue happily mounted the first step of the Sciences, which is the languages, with them (by himselfe) hee will ascend to the top of humane learning, which appeares as well in a Gentle-man, and doth as much adorne, honour, and en-noble him, as a Miter doth a Bishop, or a loose Callocke a Ciuillian. Chide your sonne, if he write Satyrs that may preiudice honest men, punish him, and teare them: but if he make *Sermones*, like those of *Horace*, to the reprehension of vice in generall, as he so elegantly did, then cherish him, for it is lawfull for a Poet to write against enuy, and to inueigh against enuious persons in his verse, and so against other vices, if so be he aime at no particular person: But you haue Poets, that in stead of vttering a ierke of wit, they will venter a being banished to the Islands of *Pontus*. If a Poet liue honestly, he will bee so in his verses, the pen is the mindes tongue; as the conceits are, which be ingendred in it, such will the writings be, & when Kings and Princes see the miraculous Science of Poesie, in wise, vertuous, and graue Subiects, they honour, esteeme, and enrich them, & euen crowne them with the leaues of that Tree, which the thunder-bolt offends not, in token that none shall offend them, that haue their temples honoured and adorned with such crownes. The Gentle-man admired *Don Quixotes* discourse, and so much, that now he forsooke his opinion he had of him, that he was a Coxcombe. But in the midst of this discourse,

*Sancho,*

*Sancho* (that was vveary of it) went out of the way to beg a little milke of some shepheards not farre off, curing of their sheepe: so the Gentleman still maintained talke with *Don Quixote*, being vvonderfully taken and satisfied vvith his vvise discourse. But *Don Quixote* lifting vp sodainly his eyes, saw that in the vvay toward them, there came a Cart full of the Kings Colours, and taking it to be some rare aduventure, hee called to *Sancho* for his Helmet. *Sancho* hearing himselfe called on, left the shepheards, and spur'd Dapple apace, and came to his Master, to whom a rash and stupendious aduventure happened.

### CHAP. XVII.

*where is shewed the last and extremest hazard, to which the unheard of courage of Don Quixote did or could arrive, with the prosperous accomplishment of the aduventure of the Lyons.*

THE Historie sayes, that vvhen *Don Quixote* called to *Sancho*, to bring him his Helmet, he vvvas buying curds vvwhich the Shepheards sold him; and being hastily layd at by his Master, he knew not vvhat to doe vvith them, or how to bestow them vvithout losing them, for hee had payed for them; so hee bethought himselfe, and clapt them into his Masters Helmet, and this good order taken, hee vvvent to see vvhat he vvould haue: who, vvlien he came, layd, Giue mee, friend, that same Helmet, for eyther I know not vvhat belongs to aduventures, or that I see yonder is one that vvill force mee to take Armes. Hee of the greene coat that heard this, turned his eyes euery vvay, and saw nothing but a Cart that came toward them, vvith two or three small flags, vvwhich made him thinke that the said Cart carried the Kings money, and so he told *Don Quixote*: but he beleecued him not, alwaies thinking that euery thing hee saw, vvvas aduventure vpon aduventure: so hee answered the Gentleman, He that is vvvarn'd, is halfe arm'd: there is nothing lost in being provided; for I know by experience, that I haue enemies

mies visible and invisible, and I know not when, nor where, nor at what time, or in what shape they will set upon me: and turning to *Sancho*, hee demanded his Helmet, who wanting leisure to take the Curds out, was forced to giue it him as it was. *Don Quixote* tooke it, and not perceiuing what was in it, clapt it sodainly upon his head; and as the Curds were squeezed and thrust together, the whay began to runne downe *Don Quixotes* face and beard; at which he was in such a fright, that he cryed out to *Sancho*, What ailes me, *Sancho*? for me-thinkes my skull is softned, or my braines melt, or that I sweat from top to toe; and if it be sweat, I assure thee it is not for feare, I beleue certainly that I am like to haue a terrible aduenture of this; giue mee something (if thou hast it) to wipe on, for this abundance of sweat blindes me. *Sancho* was silent and gaue him a cloth, and with it thanks to God, that his Master fell not into the businesse. *Don Quixote* wiped himselfe, and tooke off his Helmet to see what it was, that (as hee thought) did be-numme his head, and seeing those white splatches in his helmet, hee put vm to his nose, and smelling to them, said, By my Mistresse *Dulcinea del Toboso's* life, they are Curds that thou hast brought me heere, thou base traitor, and vnmanly Squire. To which *Sancho* very cunningly, and with a great deale of pause, answered. If they be curds, giue them me, pray, and Ile eat vm: but let the Deuill eat vm, for he put vm there. Should I be so bold as to foule your worships Helmet? and there you haue found (as I told you) who did it. In faith Sir, as sure as God liues, I haue my Enchanters too that persecute me as a creature and part of you, and I warrant haue put that filth there, to stirre you vp to choller, and to make you bang my sides (as you vse to doe.) Well, I hope this time they haue lost their labour, for I trust in my Masters discretion, that he will consider, that I haue neyther Curds, nor milke, nor any such thing; for if I had, I had rather put it in my stomacke, then in the Helmet: All this may be (said *Don Quixote*.)

The Gentleman obserued all, and wondred, especially when *Don Quixote*, after hee had wiped his head, face, beard, and helmet, clapt it on againe, settling himselfe well in his stirrups, sear-

ching

ching for his sword, & grasping his Launce, he cried out: Now come on't what will, for here I am, with a courage to meet Satan himselfe in person.

By this, the Cart with the flags drew neere, in which there came no man but the Carter with his Mules, and another upon the foremost of them. *Don Quixote* put himselfe forward, and asked; Whither goe ye, my matters? what Cart is this? what doe you carry in it? and what colours be these? To which the Carter answered, The Cart is mine, the Carriage is two fierce Lyons caged vp, which the Generall of *Oran* sends to the King at Court for a Present: these Colours be his Maesties, in signe that what goes here is his. And are the Lyons bigge, sayd *Don Quixote*? So bigge (said he that went toward the Cart doore) that there neuer came bigger out of *Africa* into *Spaine*, and I am their keeper, and haue carried others, but neuer any so big: they are Male and Female. the Male is in this first grate, the Female in the hindermost, and now they are hungry, for they haue not eat to day, and therefore I pray Sir giue vs way; for we had neede come quickly where wee may meate them. To which (quoth *Don Quixote* smiling a little) Your Lyon whelps to me? to me your Lyon whelps? and at this time of day? Well, I vow to God, your Generall that sends vm this way shall know, whether I be one that am afraid of Lyons. Alight, honest fellow, and if you be the Keeper, open their Cages, and let me your beasts forth; for I'll make vm know in the midst of this Champian, who *Don Quixote* is, in spite of those Enchanters that sent vm. Fye, fye, (said the Gentleman at this instant to himselfe) our Knight shewes very well what he is, the Curds haue softned his skull, and ripened his braines. By this *Sancho* came to him and sayd; for Gods loue handle the matter so, Sir, that my Master meddle not with these Lyons; for if he doe, they'll worry vs all. Why, is your Master so madde (quoth the Gentleman) that you feare, or beleue hee will fight with wilde beasts? Hee is not mad, sayd *Sancho*, but hardy. Ile make him otherwise, said the Gentleman; and comming to *Don Quixote*, that was hastening the Keeper to open the Cages, sayd, Sir Knight, Knights Errant ought to vndertake aduentures, that may giue a likeli-

hood of ending them well, and not such as are altogether desperate: for valour grounded vpon rashnesse, hath more madnesse then fortitude. How much more, these Lyons come not to assayle you, they are carried to bee presented to his Maiesty, and therefore 'twere not good to stay or hinder their iourney. Pray get you gone, gentle Sir (quoth *Don Quixote*) & deale with your tame Partridge, and your murthering Ferret, and leaue euery man to his function: this is mine, and I am sufficient to know whether these Lyons come against me or no: so turning to the Keeper, he cried: a By this --- goodman slaue, if you doe not forthwith open the Cage, Ile nayle you with my Launce to your Cart. The Carter that perceiued the resolution of that armed Vilson, told him, Seignior mine, will you be pleased in charity to let me vnyoke my Mules, and to put my selfe and them in safety, before I vn sheath my Lyons? for if they should kill them, I am vndone all dayes of my life, for I haue no other liuing but this Cart & my Mules. Oh thou wretch of little Faith (quoth *Don Quixote*) light, and vnyoke, and doe what thou wilt, for thou shalt see thou mightest haue saued a labour. The Carter alighted, and vnyoked hastily, and the keeper cryed out aloud, Beare witnesse, my Masters all, that I am forced against my will to open the Cages, and to let loose the Lyons, and that I protest to this Gentleman, that all the harme and mischief that these Beasts shall doe, light vpon him, besides that he pay mee my wages and due. Shift you sirs for your selues, before I open, for I am sure they'l doe mee no hurt. The Gentleman perswaded him the second time, that he should not attempt such a piece of madnesse; for such a folly was to tempt God.

To which *Don Quixote* answered, that he knew what he did. The Gentleman replyde, That he should consider well of it, for he knew he was deceiued. Well, Sir, (sayd *Don Quixote*) if you will not be a spectator of this (which you thinke Tragedy) pray spurre your Flea-bitten, and put your selfe in safety. Which when *Sancho* heard, with teares in his eyes, he beseeched him to desist from that enterprize, in comparison of which, that of the Winde-Mills was Cakebread, and that fearefull one also of the Fulling-Mill, or all the exployts that euer he had done in his life.

Looke

a *Vow a la*.  
When hee  
would seeme  
to sweare, but  
sweares by  
nothing,

Looke ye, Sir (said *Sancho*) heere's no Enchantment, nor any such thing; for I haue looked thorow the grates and chinkes of the Cages, and haue scene a clawe of a true Lyon, by vvhich clawe I ghesse the Lyon is as big as a mountaine.

Thy feare at least (sayd *Don Quixote*) will make him as bigge as halfe the world. Get thee out of the way, *Sancho*, and leaue me, and if I die in the place, thou knowest our agreement, repayre to *Dulcinea*, and that's enough.

To these hee added other reasons, by which hee cut off all hope of his leauing the prosecution of that foolish enterprize.

Hee of the Greene coate would haue hindered him, but hee found himselfe vnequally matched in weapons, and thought it no wisdome to deale with a mad-man; for now *Don Quixote* appeared no otherwise to him, who halting the Keeper afresh, and reiterating his threats, made the Gentleman set spurs to his Mare, & *Sancho* to his Dapple, and the Carter to his Mules, each of them struiuing to get as farre from the Cart as they could, before the Lyons should be vnhampered.

*Sancho* bewailed his Masters losse; for he beleued certainly that the Lyon would catch him in his pawes, he cursed his fortune, and the time that euer hee came againe to his Masters seruice. But for all his wailing and lamenting, he left not punching of Dapple, to make him get farre enough from the Cart.

The Keeper, when he saw those that fledde farre enough off, began anew to require and intimate to *Don Quixote*, what hee had formerly done: who answered, That hee heard him, and that hee should leaue his intimations; for all was needlesse, and that he should make haste.

Whilest the Keeper was opening the first Cage, *Don Quixote* began to consider, whether it were best to fight on foot, or on horsebacke: And at last he determined it should be on foot, fearing that *Rozinante* would bee afraid to looke vpon the Lyons: and thereupon hee leap'd from his horse, cast by his Launce, buckled his Shield to him, and vn sheathed his sword faire and softly; with a maruellous courage and valiant heart, he marched toward the Cart, recommending himselfe first to God, and then to his Lady *Dulcinea*.

And

And heere is to be noted, that when the Author of the true History came to this passage, hee exclaimes and cries, O strong (and beyond all comparision) couragious *Don Quixote* ! thou Looking-glasse, in which all the valiant Knights of the World may behold themselves : thou new and second *Don Manuel de Leon*, who was the honor and glory of the Spanish Knights: with what words shall I recount this fearefull exployt? or with what arguments shall I make it credible to ensuing times? or what praises will not fit and square with thee? though they may seeme *Hyperboles* about all *Hyperboles*? Thou on foot, alone, undanted and magnanimous, with thy sword onely, and that none of your cutting Foxe-blades, with a Shield, nor of bright and shining Steele, expectest and attendest two of the fiercest Lyons that euer were bred in African woods. Let thine owne deeds extoll thee, braue *Manchegan*: for I must leaue you here abruptly, since I want words to endeeare them.

Heere the Authors exclamation ceased, and the thred of the story went knitting it selfe on, saying :

The Keeper seeing *Don Quixote* in his posture, and that hee must needs let loose the Male Lyon, on paine of the bold Knight his indignation, he set the first Cage wide open, where the Lyon (as is saide) was, of an extraordinary bignesse, fearefull and vgly to see to. The first thing he did, was to tumble vp and downe the cage, stretch one pawe, and rowse himselfe, forthwith he yawned, & gently sneezed, then with his tongue some two handfuls long, he licked the dust out of his eyes, and washed his face, which done, he thrust his head out of the Cage, and looked round about him, with his eyes like fire coales : a sight and gesture able to make Temerity it selfe afraid. Onely *Don Quixote* beheld him earnestly, and wished he would leape out of the Cart, that they might grapple, for hee thought to slice him in pieces. Hitherto came the extreme of his not-heard-of madness : but the generous Lyon, more courteous then arrogant, neglecting such childishnesse, and *Branados*, after hee had looked round about him (as is said) turned his backe, and shewed his tayle to *Don Quixote*, and very quietly lay downe againe in the Cage. Which *Don Quixote* seeing, he commanded the Keeper

per to giue him two or three blowes, to make him come forth. No, not I (quoth the Keeper) for if I vrge him, I shall bee the first he will teare in pieces. I pray you, Sir Knight, be contented with your daies worke, which is as much as could in valour be done, and tempt not a second hazard. The Lyons door was open, hee might haue come out if he would ; but since hee hath not hitherto, he will not come forth all this day. You haue well shewed the stoutnesse of your courage: no braue Combatant (in my opinion) is tyed to more, then to desie his Enemy, and to expect him in field; and if his contrary come not, the disgrace is his, and he that expected, remaines with the prize.

True it is ( answered *Don Quixote* ) friend, shut the dore, and giue me a certificate in the best forme that you can, of what you haue scene me doe here: to wit, That you opened to the Lyon, that I expected him, and hee came not out ; that I expected him againe, yet all would not doe, but hee lay downe. I could doe no more. Enchantments, auant, God maintaine right and truth, and true Chiuallrie : shut (as I bad you) whilst I make signes to them that are fledde, that they may know this exployt from thy relation. The Keeper obeyed, and *Don Quixote* putting his handkerchiefe on the poynt of his Launce, with which hee had wiped the Curd-showre from off his face, he began to call those that fledde, and neuer so much as looked behinde them, all in a troope, and the Gentleman the foreman : but *Sancho* seeing the white cloth, said, Hang mee, if my Master haue not vanquished the wilde beasts, since he calls vs. All of them made a stand, and knew it was *Don Quixote* that made the signe. So lessening their feare, by little and little they drew neere him, till they could plainly heare that he called them. At length they returned to the Cart, & *Don Quixote* said to the Carter; Yoake your Mules againe, Brother, and get you on your way: and *Sancho*, giue him two pistolets in gold, for him and the Lyon-keeper, in recompence for their stay. With a very good will, (said *Sancho*) but what's become of the Lyons? are they aliue or dead? Then the Keeper faire and softly began to tell them of the bickering, extolling, as well as he could, *Don Quixotes* valour, at whose sight the Lyon trembling, would not, or durst not sallie from the Cage,



Cage, although the dore were open a pretty while, and that because hee had told the Knight, that to prouoke the Lyon, was to tempt God, by making him come out by force (as he would that hee should be prouoked in spight of his teeth, and against his will) he suffered the doore to be shut. What thinke you of this, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*?) Can Enchantment now preuaile against true Valour? Well may Enchanters make mee vnfortunate, but 'tis impossible they should bereaue mee of my valour.

*Sancho* bestowed the Pistolets, and the Carter yoked, the Keeper tooke leaue of *Don Quixote*, and thanked him for his kindnesse, and promised him to relate his valerous exploit to the King himselfe, when hee came to Court. Well, if his Maiesty chance to aske who it was that did it, tell him, *The Knight of the Lyons*: for henceforward, I will that my name be trucked, exchanged, turned and changed now, from that I had of *The Knight of the sorrowfull Countenance*; and in this I follow the ancient vse of Knights Errant, that would change their names when they pleased, or thought it conuenient.

The Cart went on it's way, and *Don Quixote*, *Sancho*, and he in the greene, held on theirs. In all this while, *Don Diego de Miranda* spoke not a word, being busied in noting *Don Quixotes* speeches and actions, taking him to bee a wise mad-man, or a mad-man that came somewhat neere a wise-man. Hee knew nothing as yet of the first part of his History, for if hee had read that, he would haue left admiring his words and deeds, since he might haue knowne the nature of his madnesse: but for hee knew it not, he held him to be wise and mad by fits; for vvhath hee spoke, was consonant, elegant, and well deliuered: but his actions were foolish, rash, and vnadvised: and (thought hee to himselfe) What greater madnesse could there be, then to clap on a helmet full of Curds, and to make vs beleue that Enchanters had softened his skull? or what greater rashnesse or foppery, then forcibly to venter vpon Lyons? *Don Quixote* drew him from these imaginations, saying, Who doubts, *Seignior Don Diego de Miranda*, but that you will hold me in your opinion for an idle fellow, or a mad man: and no maruell that I be held so; for my actions

actions tellise no lesse: for all that, I would haue you know, that I am not so mad, or so shallow as I seeme. It is a braue sight to see a goodly Knight in the midst of the Market-place before his Prince, to giue a thrust with his Launce to a fierce Bull. And it is a braue sight to see a Knight armed in shining armour passe about the Tilt-yard at the cheerefull lusts before the Ladies; and all those Knights are a braue sight that in Military exercises (or such as may seeme so) doe entertaine, reuiue, and honour their Princes Courts: but aboue all these, a Knight Errant is a better sight, that by Desarts and Wildernesles, by crosse-waies and Woods, & Mountaines, searcheth after dangerous Aduentures, vwith a purpose to end them happily and fortunately, onely to obtaine glorious and lasting Fame. A Knight Errant (I say) is a better sight, succouring a widdow in some Desart, then a Court Knight courting some Damozell in the City. All Knights haue their particular exercises: Let the Courtier serue Ladies, authorize his Princes Court with liueries, sustaine poore Gentlemen at his Table, appoint lusts, maintaine Tourneyes, shew himselfe noble, liberall, and magnificent, and aboue all, Religious, and in these he shal accomplish with his obligation. But for the Knight Errant, let him search the corners of the world, enter the most intricate Eabyrinth, euery foote vndertake Impossibles, and in the Desarts and Wildernesse: let him resist the Sunne-beames in the midst of Summer, and the sharpe rigor of the windes and frosts in Winter: Let not Lyons fright him, nor spirits terrifie him, nor Hobgoblins make him quake: for to seeke these, to set vpon them, and to ouercome all, are his prime exercises. And since it fell to my lot to bee one of the number of these Knights Errant, I cannot but vndergoe all that I think comes vnder the iurisdiction of my profession. So that the encountring those Lyons did directly belong to me, though I knew it to be an exorbitant rashnesse; for well I know, that valour is a vertue betwixt two vicious extremes, as cowardise and rashnesse: but it is lesse dangerous for him that is valiant, to rise to a point of rashnesse, then to fall or touch vpon the Coward. For as it is more ealie for a prodigall man to be liberall, then a couetous, so it is easier for a rash man to be truly valiant, then a Coward to come

<sup>c</sup>In Spaine they vse with horse-men, & foot-men to course their Bulls to death in the Market places,



to true valour. And touching the on-set in Adventures, belieue mee *Signior Don Diego*, it is better playing a good trump then a small, for it sounds better in the hearers cares. Such a Knight is rash and hardy, then, such a Knight is fearefull and cowardly.

I say, *Signior* (answered *Don Diego*) that all that you haue said and done is leuelled out by the line of Reason, and I thinke if the Statutes and Ordinances of Knight Errantry were lost, they might be found again in your brest, as in their own Store-house and Register, and so let vs halte, for the day growes on vs, let vs get to my village and house, where you shall ease your selfe of your former labour; which, though it haue not beene bodily, yet it is mentall, which doth often redound to the bodies wearinesse. I thanke you for your kinde offer, *Signior* (quoth *Don Quixote*) and spurring on faster, about two of the clocke they came to the Village, and *Don Diego's* house, whom *Don Quixote* stiled, *The Knight of the greene Cassocke*.

## CHAP. XVIII.

*What happened to Don Quixote in the Castle, or Knight of the Greene Cassocke his house, with other extranagant matters.*

**D**On *Quixote* perceiued that *Don Diego de Miranda's* house was spacious, after the Country manner, and his Armes (though of course stone) vpon the dore towards the streete, his wine-celler in the Court, his other scellar or vault in the entry, with many great stone vessels round about, that were of *Toboso*, which renewed the remembrance of his enchanted and transformed Mistress *Dulcinea*, so sighing, & not minding who was by, he said,

*O happy pledges, found out to my losse,  
Sweet, and renewing, when the time was once.*

Oh you *Tobosan Tunnes*, that bring to my remembrance the sweet pledge of my greatest bitterness. The Scholler Poet, son to *Don Diego*, that came out with his Mother to welcome him, heard

*b O dulces prendas. A beginning of a Sonnet in Diana de Monto Mayor, which D. Q. heere raps out vpon a sodaine.*

heard him pronounce this, and the mother and sonne were in some suspence at the strange shape of *Don Quixote*, who alighting from *Rozinante*, very courteously desired to kisse her hands: And *Don Diego* sayd; I pray, wife, giue your wonted welcome to this Gentle-man, *Signior Don Quixote de la Mancha*, a Knight Errant, and the valiantest and wisest in the world.

The Gentle-woman called *Donna Cristina*, welcommed him very affectionately, and with much courtesie, which *Don Quixote* retorted with many wise and mannerly complements, and did (as it were) vse the same ouer againe to the Scholler, who hearing *Don Quixote* speake, tooke him to bee wondrous wise and witty. Heere the Author paints out vnto vs all the circumstances of *Don Diego's* house, deciphering to vs all that a Gentle-man and a rich Farmers house may haue: but it seemed good to the Translator, to passe ouer these and such like trifles, because they suited not with the principall scope of this History, the which is more grounded vpon truth, then vpon bare digressions.

*Don Quixote* was led into a Hall, *Sancho* vn-armed him, so that now he had nothing on but his breeches, and a Chamois doublet, all smudged with the filth of his Armour, about his necke he wore a little Scholasticall band vnstarcht, and without lace, his buskins were Date-coloured, & his shooes close on each side, his good sword he girt to him, that hung at a belt of Sea-wolues skins, for it was thought he had the running of the reines many yeeres, hee wore also a long cloke of good russet-cloth: but first of all, in fiue or six kettles of water (for touching the quantity there is some difference) hee washed his head and his face, and for all that, the water was turned whey-colour, God a mercy on *Sancho's* gluttony, and the buying those dismall black-curds, that made his Master so white with the aforesayd brauery, and with a spritely aire and gallantry, *Don Quixote* marched into another roome, where the Scholler stayed for him, to entertaine him till the cloth was layd, for the Mistis of the house, *Dona Cristina*, meant to shew to her honourable guest, that shee knew how to make much of them that came to her house.

Whilest *Don Quixote* was dis-arming himselfe, *Don Lorenzo* had

had leasure (for that was *Don Diego's* sonnes name) to aske his father; What doe you call this Gentle-man, Sir, that you haue brought with you? for his name, his shape, and your calling him Knight Errant, makes my mother and me wonder. Faith, sonne (quoth *Don Diego*) I know not what I should say to thee of him, onely I may tell thee, I haue seene him play the maddest pranks of any mad-man in the world, and speake againe speeches so wise, as blot out and vndoe his deeds; doe thou speake to him, and feele the pulse of his vnderstanding, and since thou art discreet, iudge of his discretion or folly as thou seest best, though to deale plainly with thee, I rather hold him to be mad then wise.

Heereupon *Don Lorenzo* (as is sayd) went to entertaine *Don Quixote*, and amongst other discourse that passed betwixt them, *Don Quixote* sayd to *Don Lorenzo*; Signior *Don Diego de Miranda*, your father, hath told me of your rare abilities and subtile wit, and chiefly that you are an excellent Poet. A Poet perhaps (replide *Don Lorenzo*) but excellent, by no meanes: true it is, that I am somewhat affectionated to Poesie, and to read good Poets: but not so, that I may deserue the name of excellent, that my father stiles me with. I doe not dislike your modesty (quoth *Don Quixote*) for you haue seldome times any Poet that is not arrogant, and thinkes himselfe to be the best Poet in the world. There is no rule (quoth *Don Lorenzo*) without an exception, and some one there is, that is so, and yet thinkes not so. Few (sayd *Don Quixote*;) but tell mee, Sir, what verses bee those that you haue now in hand, that your father sayes doe trouble and puzzle you? and if it be some kinde of gloss, I know what belongs to glossing, and should be glad to heare them: and if they bee of your verses for the Prize, content your selfe with the second reward: For the first goes alwayes by fauour, or according to the quality of the person, and the second is iustly distributed, so that the third comes (according to this account) to be the second, and the first the third, according to degrees that are giuen in Vniuersities: but for all that, the word first is a great matter.

*De infla litera-  
via*: A custome  
in Vniuersities  
in Spaine, of  
rewards pro-  
posed to them  
that make the  
best verses.

Hitherto (thought *Don Lorenzo* to himselfe) I cannot thinke  
thee

thee mad: proceed wee: and hee sayd; It seemes, Sir, you haue frequented the Schooles, what Sciences haue you heard? That of Knight Errantry (quoth *Don Quixote*) which is as good as your Poetry, and somewhat better. I know not what Science that is (quoth *Don Lorenzo*) ne ther hath it, as yet comne to my notice. Tis a Science (quoth *Don Quixote*) that containes in it all, or most of the Sciences of the world, by reason that he who professes it, must be skilfull in the Lawes, to know Iustice Distributiue and Commutatiue, to giue euery man his owne, and what belongs to him: he must be a Diuine, to know how to giue a reason cleerly and distinctly of his Christian profession, wherefoer it shall be demanded him: hee must bee a Phylician, and chiefly an Herbalist, to know in a wildernesse or Desart, what hearbs haue vertue to cure wounds: for your Knight Errant must not bee looking euery pilling-while who shall heale him: He must be an Astronomer, to know in the night by the starres what a clock tis, and in what part & Climate of the world he is: He must be skilfull in the Mathematickes, because euery foot he shal haue need of them: And to let passe, that he must be adorned with all diuine and morall vertues; descending to other trifles, I say, he must learne to swimme (as they say) fith *Nicholas*, or *Nicolaso* did: Hee must know how to shoo a horse, to mend a saddle or bridle: And comming againe to what went before, hee must serue God and his Mistris inuolably, he must be chaste in his thoughts, honest in his words, liberall in his deedes, valiant in his actions, patient in afflictions, charitable towards the poore, and lastly, a Defender of truth, although it cost him his life for it. Of all these great and lesser parts a good Knight Errant is composed, that you may see, Signior *Don Lorenzo*, whether it be a inuueling Science that the Knight that leaues it professeth, and whether it may not be equalled to the proudest of them all taught in the Schooles.

If it be so (sayd *Don Lorenzo*) I say this Science goes beyond them all. If it be so (quoth *Don Quixote*;) Why, let mee tell you (sayd *Don Lorenzo*) I doubt whether there be any Knights Errant now adorned with so many vertues. Of haue I spoken (replide *Don Quixote*) that which I must now speake agen, that  
I  
thee

the greatest part of men in the world are of opinion, that there be no Knights Errant, and I thinke, if Heauen doe not miraculously let vnderstand the truth, that there haue beene such, and that at this day there be, all labour will be in vaine (as I haue often found by experience.) I will not now stand vpon shewing you your error: all I will doe, is to pray to God to deliuer you out of it, and to make you vnderstand, how profitable and necessary Knights Errant haue beene to the world in former ages, & also would be at present, if they were in request: but now, for our sinnes, sloth, idlenesse, gluttony, and wantonnesse doe raigne. I faith (thought *Don Lorenzo*) for this once our ghest hath scaped me: but for all that, he is a liuely Aste, and I were a dull foole, if I did not beleue it.

Heere they ended their discourse, for they were called to dinner: *Don Diego* asked his sonne, what triall he had made of their ghests vnderstanding: To which he made answer; All the Physicians and Scriueners in the world will not wipe out his madnesse. He is a curious mad-man, and hath neat Dilemma's. To dinner they went, and their meat was such as *Don Diego* vpon the way described it, such as hee gaue to his ghests, well drest, sauory and plentifull: But that which best pleased *Don Quixote*, was the maruellous silence thorowout the whole house, as if it had beene a Couent of *Carthusians*: So (that lifting vp his eyes, and grace being sayd, and that they had washed hands) hee earnestly entreated *Don Lorenzo* to speake his Prize-verses.

To which (quoth he) because I will not belike your Poets, that when they are ouer-intreated, they vse to make scruple of their workes, and when they are not intreated, they vomit vni out, I will speake my glosse, for which I expect no reward, as hauing written them only to exercise my Muse. A wise friend of mine (sayd *Don Quixote*) was of opinion, that the glosse was no hard taske for any man, the reason being, that the Glosse could ne're come neere the Text, and most commonly the Glosse was quite from the Theame giuen; besides that, the Lawes of glossing were too strict, not admitting interrogations, of, *Sayd he?* or, *Shall I say?* Or changing Nounes into Verbes, without other ligaments and strictnesses to which the Glossor is tied,

tyed, as you know. Certainly, Signior *Don Quixote* (said *Don Lorenzo*) I desire to catch you in an absurdity, but cannot, for still you slip from mee like an Eele. I know not (sayd *Don Quixote*) what you meane by your slipping. You shall know my meaning (sayd *Don Lorenzo*) but for the present I pray you harken with attention to my glossed verses, and to the Glosse, as for example.

*If that my Was, might turne to Is,  
If look's for't, then it comes compleat,  
Oh might I say, Now, now time tis,  
Our after-griefes may be too great.*

## The Glosse.

*As euerie thing doth passe away,  
So Fortunes good, that erst she gane  
Did passe, and would not with me stay,  
Though she gaue once all I could crane:  
Fortune, 'tis long since thou hast seene  
Me prostrate at thy feet (I wis)  
I shall be glad (as I haue beene)  
If that my Was, returne to Is.*

The first verse  
of the glosse.

*Vnto no honour am I bent,  
No Prize, Conquest, or Victorie,  
But to returne to my content,  
whose thought doth griene my memorie;  
If thou to me doe it restore,  
Fortune; the rigor of my heat  
Allayd is, let it come, before  
I looke for't, then it comes compleat.*

The second  
verse,

The third  
verse.

*Impossibles doe I desire  
To make time past returne (in vaine)  
No Pow'r on earth can once aspire  
(Past) to recall him backe againe,  
Time doth goe, time runs and flies  
Swiftly, his course doth neuer misse,  
Hee's in an error then that cries,  
Oh might I say, Now, now time 'tis.*

The fourth  
verse.

*I liue in great perplexitie,  
Sometimes in hope, sometimes in feare;  
Farre better were it for to die,  
That of my griefes I might get cleare;  
For me to die 'twere better farre,  
Let me not that againe repeat,  
Feare sayes, 'Tis better liue long: for  
Our after griefes may be too great.*

When *Don Lorenzo* had ended, *Don Quixote* stood vp and cried aloud, as if hee had screech'd, taking *Don Lorenzo* by the hand, and sayd; Assuredly, generous youth, I thinke you are the best Poet in the world, and you deserue the Lawrell, not of *Cyprus* or *Gaeta*, as a Poet sayd (God forgiue him) but of *Athens*, if it were extant, *Paris*, *Bolonia*, and *Salamanca*: I would to God those Iudges that would deny you the Prize, might bee shot to death with arrowes by *Phæbus*, and that the Muses neuer come within their thresholds. Speake, Sir, if you please, some of your loftier verses, that I may altogether feeble the pulse of your admirable wit.

How say you by this, that *Don Lorenzo* was pleased, when he heard himselfe thus praised by *Don Quixote*, although he held him to be a mad man? Oh power of flattery, how farre thou canst extend, and how large are the bounds of thy pleasing iurisdiction! This truth was verified in *Don Lorenzo*, since hee condescended

condiscended to *Don Quixotes* request, speaking this following Sonnet to him, of the Fable or Story of *Pyramus* and *Thibe*.

*The wall was broken by the Virgin faire,  
That op't the gallant brest of Pyramus,  
Loue parts from Cyprus, that he may declare  
(Once scene) the narrow breach prodigious.  
There nought but Silence speakes, no voyce doth dare,  
Thorow so strait a straight, be venturous;  
Yet their mindes speake, Loue workes this wonder rare,  
Facilitating things most wonderous.*

*Desire in her grew violent, and haste  
In the fond Mayd, in stead of hearts delight  
Solicites death: See! now the Storie's past,  
Both of them, in a moment (oh strange sight!)*

*One Sword, one Sepulcher, one Memorie,  
Doth kill, doth couer, makes them neuer die.*

Now thanked bee God (quoth *Don Quixote*, hauing heard this Sonnet) that amongst so many consumed Poets as be, I haue found one consummate, as you are, Sir, which I perceiue by your well-framed Sonnet. *Don Quixote* remained foure dayes (being well entertained) in *Don Diego's* house, at the end of which he desired to take his leaue, & thanked him for the kinnesse and good welcome he had receiued: but because it was not fit that Knights Errant should bee too long idle, hee purposed to exercise his Function, and to seeke after Aduentures he knew of; for the place whither hee meant to goe to, would giue him plenty enough to passe his time with, till it were fit for him to goe to the Iusts at *Saragosa*, which was his more direct course: but that first of all he meant to goe to *Montesino's* vault, of which there were so many admirable tales in euery mans mouth: so to search and enquire the Spring and Origine of those seuen Lakes,

commonly called of *Ruydera*. *Don Diego* and his sonne commended his noble determination, and bid him furnish himselfe with what hee pleased of their house and wealth, for that hee should receiue it with all loue and good will; for the worth of his person, and his honourable profession obliged them to it.

To conclude, the day for his parting came, as pleasing to him, as bitter and sorrowfull to *Sancho*, who liked wondrous well of *Don Diego's* plentiful provision, and was loth to returne to the hunger of the Forrests and wildernesse, and to the hardnesse of his ill-furnisht wallets, notwithstanding hee filled and stuffed them with the best provision he could. And *Don Quixote*, as he tooke his leaue of *Don Lorenzo*, sayd; I know not, Sir, whether I haue told you heretofore, but though I haue, I tell you againe, that when you would saue a great deale of labor & paines, to arrive at the inaccessible top of *Fames* Temple, you haue no more to doe, but to leaue on one hand the straight and narrow path of Poetrie, and to take the most narrow of Knight Errantry, sufficient to make you an Emperour, ere you would say, *What's this?*

With this Epilogue *Don Quixote* shut vp the Comedy of his madnesse, onely this he added: God knowes, I would willingly carry Signior *Don Lorenzo* with me, to teach him, what belongs to pardoning the humble, to curbing and restraining the proud, vertues annexed to my profession: but since his slender age is not capable, and his laudible enterprises will not permit him, I am onely willing to aduize you, that being a Poet, you may be famous, if you governe your selfe by other mens iudgements, more then by your owne; for you haue no parents that dislike their owne children, faire or foule, and this error is more frequent in mens vnderstandings.

The Father and the Son afresh admired at *Don Quixotes* oft interposed reasons, some wise, some foolish, and at his obstinate being bent altogether vpon his vnlucky Adventures, which hee aimed at, as the marke and end of his desire, they renewed againe their kinde offers and complements with him; but *Don Quixote* taking his leaue of the Lady of the Castle, mounted his *Rozinante*, and *Sancho* his Dapple; so they parted.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XIX.

*Of the Adventure of the enamoured Shepheard, with other, indeed, pleasant Accidents.*

**D**On *Quixote* vvas not gone far from *Don Diego's* towne, vvhhen hee ouertooke two men that seemed to be Parsons, or Schollers, vvith two Husbandmen that vvere mounted vpon foure Asses. One of the Schollers had (as it were in a Portmantue) a piece of vvhite cloth for Scarlet, wrapped vp in a piece of greene Buckeram, and two payre of Cotton Stockings: the other had nothing but two Foiles, and a paire of Pumpes. The Husbandmen had other things, vvwhich shewed they came from some Market Towne, vvhere they had bought them to carry home to their village: so as vvell the Schollers as the Husbandmen fell into the same admiration, that all they had done vvho first saw *Don Quixote*, and they longed to know vvhat manner of fellow he vvas, so different from all other men. *Don Quixote* saluted them, and after hee asked them vvither they vvvent, & that they had said they vvvent his vvay, he offered them his company, and desired them to goe softlyer, for that their young Asses trauelled faster then his horse: and to oblige them the more, he told them vvho he vvas, and of his profession, that he was a Knight Errant, that he vvvent to seeke Adventures round about the vvorld. Hee told them his proper name vvas *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, but his ordinary name, *The Knight of the Lyons*.

All this to the Husbandmen was Heathen Greek, or Pedlers French: but not to the Schollers, vvho straight perceived the weakenesse of *Don Quixotes* braine: Notwithstanding they beheld him vvith great admiration and respect, and one of them said, Sir Knight, if you goe no set iourney, as they which seeke Adventures seldome doe, I pray goe vvith vs, and you shall see one of the brauest and most sumptuous mariages that euer vvas kept in the *Mancha*, or in many leagues round about. *Don Quixote* asked them if it were of any Prince (for so hee imagined.)

ned.) No, Sir, (said hee) but betwixt a Farmer, and a Farmers daughter: he is the richest in all the Countrey, and she the fairest aliue. Their prouision for this marriage is new and rare, and it is to be kept in a medow neere the Brides towne. Shee is called, the more to set her out, *Quiteria* the faire, and he *Camacho* the rich: she is about eightene yeeres of age, and he two & twenty, both vvell mette, but that some nice people, that busie themselves in all mens linages, vvill say that the faire *Quiteria* is of better parentage then he: but that's nothing, riches are able to soulder all clefts. To say true, this *Chamacho* is liberall, and he hath longed to make an Arbor, and couer all the Medow on the Top, so that the Sunne vvill be troubled to enter to visit the Greene hearbs vnderneath. He hath also certaine warlike Morrices, as vvell of swords, as little iynghing bels; for vvee haue those in the towne that will iangle them. For your foot-clappers I say nothing, you would wonder to see vm bestirre themselves: but none of these, nor others I haue told you of, are like to make this marriage so remarkeable, as the despised *Basilus*. This *Basilus* is a neighbouring swaine of *Quiteria's* Towne, vvho's house was next dore to her Fathers. From hence Loue tooke occasion to renew vnto the world, the long forgotten loues of *Pyramus* and *Thysbe*; for *Basilus* loued *Quiteria* from a childe, and she answered his desires with a thousand louing fauors. So that it grew a common talke in the towne, of the loue betweene the two little ones. *Quiteria* began to grow to some yeeres, and her Father began to deny *Basilus* his ordinary accesse to the house; and to auoyd all suspition, purposed to marry her to the rich *Camacho*, not thinking it fit to marry her to *Basilus*, vvho vvvas not so rich in Fortunes goods, as in those of the minde, (for to say truth without enuy) he is the actiuest youth we haue, a famous Barre-pitcher, an excellent Wraffler, a great Tennis-player, he runnes like a Deere, out-leapes a shee-goat, and playes at tenne pinnes miraculously, sings like a Larke, playes vpon a Gitterne as if he made it speake, and aboue all, fenceth as well as the best.

For that slight only (quoth *Don Quixote*) the youth deserves not onely to match with the faire *Quiteria*, but with Queene  
Ginebra

*Ginebra* her selfe, if she were now aliue, in spight of *Lansarote*, and all that would gain-say it. There's for my wife now (quoth *Sancho* that had beene all this while silent) that would haue euery one marry vvith their equals, holding her selfe to the Proverbe, that sayes; *Like to like* (quoth the *Deuill to the Collier*.) All that I desire, is, that honest *Basilus* (for me thinkes I loue him) were married to *Quiteria*, and God giue vm ioy (I was saying) those that go about to hinder the mariage of two that loue well. If all that loue well (quoth *Don Quixote*) should marry, Parents would lose the priuledge of marying their children, when and with whom they ought; and if daughters might chuse their husbands, you should haue some would choose their fathers seruants, and others, any passenger in the street, whom they thought to be a lusty swaggerer, although hee were a cowardly Russian; for loue and affection doe easily blinde the eyes of the vnderstanding, which is onely fit to choose, and the state of Matrimony is a ticklish thing, and there is great heed to be taken, and a particular fauour to be giuen from aboue to make it light happily.

Any man that would but vndertake some voyage, if hee be wise, before he is on his way, he will seeke him some good companion. And why should not he doe so, that must trauell all his life-time till he come to his resting-place, Death? and the rather if his company must be at bed, and at boord, and in all places, as the wifes company must be with the Husband? Your wife is not a commodity like others, that is bought and sold, or exchanged, but an inseparable accident, that lasts for terme of life. It is a nooze, that beeing fastned about the necke, turnes to a Gordian knot, which cannot be vndone but by Deaths sickle.

I could tell yee much more in this businesse, vvhere it not for the desire I haue to be satisfied by Master Parson, if there be any more to come of *Basilus* his story. To vvich hee answered, This is all, that from the instant that *Basilus* knew the faire *Quiteria* vvvas to be married to the rich *Camacho*, he vvvas neuer seene to smile, or talke sensibly; and hee is alwaies sad and pensatiue, talkes to himselfe: an euident token that hee is distracted: eates little, sleepest much: all he eates, is fruites, and all his sleepe is in  
the



the fields, vpon the hard ground like a beaſt; now and then hee lookes vp to heauen, and ſometimes caſts his eyes downeward, ſo ſenſeleſſe, as if hee were onely a ſtatue clothed, and the very ayre ſtrikes off his garments. In fine, he hath all the ſignes of a paſſionate heart, and we are all of opinion, that by that time *Quiteria* to morrow giues the, I, it vwill be the ſentence of his death. God forbid (ſayd *Sancho*) for God giues the vvound, and God giues the ſalue: no body knowes what may happen, 'tis a good many houres betweene this and to morrow, and in one houre, nay one minute, a houſe falls, and I haue ſcene the Sunne ſhine, and foule weather in an inſtant; one goes to bed ſound at night, and ſtirres not the next morning: and pray tell me, is there any one here that can ſay he hath ſtayd the courſe of Fortunes great wheele? No truly, and betweene a womans I, and no, I would be loth to put a pins poynt; for it would hardly enter. Let mee haue Miſtreſſe *Quiteria* loue *Baſilius* with all her heart, and I'll giue him a bagge full of good lucke, for your loue (as I haue heard tell) looks wantonly with eyes that make copper ſeeme gold, and pouerty riches, and filth in the eyes, pearles. Whether a plague run'ſt thou, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*?) vvhen thou goeſt threading on thy Prouerbs and thy ſlim-flams, *Iudas* him ſelfe take thee, cannot hold thee: Tell me, Beaſt, what knoweſt thou of Fortune, or her wheele, or any thing elſe? Oh if you vnderſtand me not, no maruell though my ſentences be held for ſopperies: well, I know vvhat I ſay, and know I haue not ſpoken much from the purpoſe: but you, Sir, are alwaies the Tourney to my words and actions. Attourney thou wouldeſt ſay, God confound thee, thou Preuaricator of language. Doe not you deale with me (ſaid *Sancho*) ſince you know I haue not bin brought vp in Court, nor ſtudied in *Salamanca*, to know whether I adde or diminifh any of my ſyllables. Lord God, you muſt not thinke your <sup>a</sup> *Galizian* can ſpeak like your *Toledonian*, & they neyther are not all ſo nimble. For matter of your Court-language (quoth the Parſon) 'tis true; for they that are bred in the Tanner-rowes, and the <sup>b</sup> *Zocodoner*, cannot diſcourſe like them that walke all day in the high Church-Cloyſters; yet all are *Toledonians*, the language is pure, proper, and elegant, (indeed)

<sup>a</sup> One of that Province that ſpeake a barbarous language to the Spaniſh  
<sup>b</sup> The market place ſo called in Toledo.

deed) only in your diſcreet Courtiers, let them be borne where they will: Diſcreet I ſay, becauſe many are otherwiſe, and diſcretion is the Grammar of good language, which is accompanied with praſtice: I Sir, I thanke God haue ſtudied the Canons in *Salamanca*, and preſume ſometimes to yeeld a reaſon in plaine and ſignificant termes. If you did not preſume (ſaid the other Scholler) more on your vling the foyles you carry, then your tongue, you might haue beene Senior in your degree, whereas now you are lagge. Looke you Bachelor (quoth the Parſon) you are in the moſt erroneous opinion of the world, touching the ſkill of the weapon, ſince you hold it friuolous. 'Tis no opinion of mine (ſaid *Corchuelo*) but a manifeſt truth, and if you will haue me ſhew it by experience, there you haue foyles commodious: I haue an arme, and ſtrength, which together vvith my courage, which is not ſmall, ſhall make you confeſſe I am not deceiued; alight and keepe your diſtance, your circles, your corners, and all your Science, I hope to make you ſee the ſtarres at noone day with my ſkill, which is but moderne and meane, which though it be ſmall, I hope to God the man is yet vnborn that ſhall make mee turne my backe, and there is no man in the world, but I'll make him giue ground. For turning your backe ſaid (ſaid the Skillfull) I meddle not, though perhaps where you firſt ſet your foot, there your graue might be digged, I meane you might be killed for deſpiling ſkill. That you ſhall try (ſaid *Corchuelo*) and lighting haſtily from his Aſſe, he ſnatched one of the ſwords that the Parſon carried. Not ſo (ſayd *Don Quixote* inſtantly) I be the Matter of this Fence, and the Iudge of this vndecided controuertie, and lighting from *Rozinante*, and taking his Launce, he ſtepped betweene them till ſuch time as the Parſon had put himſelfe into his Poſture and diſtance againſt *Corchuelo*, who ranne (as you would ſay) darting fire out of his eyes. The two Husbandmen that were by, without lighting from their Aſſes, ſerued for ſpectators of the mortall Tragedy, the blowes, the ſtockados, your falſe thruſts, your back-blowes, your doubling-blowes, that came from *Corchuelo* were numberleſſe, as thicke as hoppes, or haile, he layd on like an angry Lyon: but ſtill the Parſon gaue him a ſlopple for his mouth, with the



the button of his foyle, which stopped him in the midst of his fury, and he made him kisse it, as if it had been a Relike, though not with so much deuotion as is due to them. In a word, the Parson with pure Stocados told all the buttons of his Callocke which he had on, his skirts flying about him like a fishes tayle. Twice he strooke off his hat, and so wearied him, that what for despight, vvhhat for choller and rage, he tooke the sword by the hilt, and flung it into the ayre so forcibly, that one of the husbandmen that was by, who was a notary, and went for it, gaue testimony after, that he flung it almost three quarters of a mile; which testimony serues, and hath serued, that it may be knowne and really seene, that force is ouercome by Art.

*Corchuelo* sat down being very weary, and *Sancho* comming to him, said; Truly Sir Bachelor, if you take my aduice, heretatter challenge no man to fence, but to wrastle, or throw the bar, since you haue youth and force enough for it; for I haue heard those (that you call your Skilfull men) say, that they will thrust the poynt of a sword through the eye of a needle. I am gladd (quoth *Corchuelo*) that I came from my Aile, and that experience hath shewed me what I would not haue beleueed. So rising vp, he embraced the Parson, and they were as good friends as before. So, not staying for the Notary that went for the sword, because they thought hee would tarry long, they resolu'd to follow, and come betimes to *Quiteria's* Village, of whence they all were. By the way, the Parson discourses to vm, of the excellency of the Art of Fencing, with so many demonstratiue reasons, with so many figures and Mathematicall demonstrations, that all were satisfied with the rarenelle of the Science, and *Corchuelo* reduced from his obstinacy.

It began to grow darke: but before they drew neere, they all saw a kinde of heauen of innumerable starres before the Towne. They heard likewise, harmonious and confused sounds of diuers Instruments, as Flutes, Tabers, Psalteries, Recorders, hand-Drummes and Bells: and when they drew neere, they saw that the trees of an Arbour, which had been made at the entrance of the towne, were all full of lights, which were not offended by the winde, that then blew not, but was so gentle, that it scarce

moued

moued the leaues of the trees. The Musicians were they that made the marriage more sprightly, who went two and two in companies, some dancing and singing, others playing vpon diuers of the aforesaid instruments: nothing but mirth ranne vp and downe the Medow, others were busied in railing scaffolds, that they might the next day see the representations and dances commodiously, dedicated to the marriage of the rich *Camacho*, and the Obsequies of *Basilus*.

*Don Quixote* would not enter the Towne, although the Husbandmen and the Bachelor entreated him: for he gaue a sufficient excuse for himselfe (as hee thought) that it was the custome of Knights Errant to sleepe in fields and forrests, rather then in habitations, though it were vnder golden roofes: so hee vvent a little out of the way, much against *Sancho's* will, who remembered the good lodging hee had in the Castle, or house of *Don Diego*.

## CHAP. XX.

*Of the Marriage of rich Camacho, and the successe of poore Basilus.*

**S**carce had the siluer morne giuen bright Phœbus leaue, with the ardour of his burning rayes, to dry the liquid pearles on his golden lockes, when *Don Quixote* shaking off sloth from his drowlie members, rose vp, and called *Sancho* his Squire, that still lay snorting: which *Don Quixote* seeing, before he could wake, he said, Oh happy thou above all that lye vpon the face of the earth, that without enuy, or being enuied, sleepest with a quiet brest, neyther persecuted by charnters, nor frighted by Enchantments. Sleepe, I say, or eageine, nay an hundred times, sleepe: let not thy Masters care, lie keepe thee continually awake, nor let care to pay thy debt, make thee watchfull, or how another day thou and thy family, but streightned family may liue, whom neither ambition troubles, nor the worlds vaine pompe doth weary, since the bound

of

of thy desires extend no further then to thinking of thine Asse; for, for thine owne person, that thou hast committed to my charge, a counterpoise and burden that Nature and Custome hath layd vpon the Masters. The seruant sleepe, and the Master wakes, thinking how he may maintaine good him, and doe him kindnes: the grieve that is, to see heauen obdurate in relieuing the earth with seasonable moisture, troubles not the seruant, but it doth the Master, that must keepe in sterility and hunger, him that serued him in abundance and plenty.

*Sancho* answered not a word to all this, for hee was asleepe, neyther would hee haue awaked so soone, if *Don Quixote* had not made him come to himselfe with the little end of his Lance. At length he awaked, sleepy and drowsie, and turning his face round about, hee said, From this Arbor (if I bee not deceiued) there comes a steame and smell rather of good broyled rashers, then Time & Rushes: A marriage that begins with such smells, (by my Holidam) I thinke twill be braue and plentifull.

Away, Glutton (quoth *Don Quixote*) come and let vs go see it, and what becomes of the disdained *Basilus*. Let him doe what he will (said *Sancho*) were it not better that he were poore still, and married to *Quiteria*? There is no more in it, but let the Moone loose one quarter, and shee'l fall from the clouds: Faith, Sir, I am of opinion, that the poore fellow bee contented with his fortunes, & not seek after things impossible. He hold one of mine arms, that *Camacho* will couer *Basilus* all ouer with sixpences: and if it be so, as tis like, *Quiteria* were a very foole to leaue her brauery and Jewells that *Camacho* hath, and can giue her, and chuse *Basilus* for his barre-pitching and fencing: In a Tauerne they will not giue you a pint of wine for a good throw with the barre, or a trick at fence, such abilities that are worth nothing, haue vñ whose will for me: but when they light vpon one that hath crownes withall, let mee be like that man that hath them: vpon a good foundation, a good building may be raised, and mony is the best bottome and foundation that is in the world. For Gods loue, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) conclude thy tedious discourse: with which (I beleue) if thou wert let alone, thou wouldest neyther eat nor sleepe for talking. If you had a good

good memory (sayd *Sancho*) you would remember the articles of our agreement, before we made our last sally from home, one of which was, that you would let me speake as much as I list, on condition that it were not against my neighbor, or against your authority, and hitherto I am sure I haue not broken that article.

I remember no such article, *Sancho* (sayd he) and though it were so, I would haue you now be silent, and come with mee; for now the instruments we heard ouer-night, begin to cheere the valleyes, and doubtlesse, the marriage is kept in the coole of the morning, and not deferred till the after-noonnes heat. *Sancho* did what his master willed him, and saddling *Rozinante*, with his pack-saddle clapped likewise on Dapple, the two mounted, and faire and softly entred the Arbor. The first thing that *Sancho* saw, was a whole Steere spitted vpon a whole Elme, and for the fire where it was to bee roasted, there was a pretty mountaine of wood, and six pots that were round about this Bon-fire, which were neuer cast in the ordinary mold that other pots were, for they were six halfe Oliue-butts, and euery one was a very Shambles of meat, they had so many whole sheepe soking in vñ which were not seene, as if they had beene Pigeons, the flayed Hares, and pulled Hens, that were hung vpon the trees, to bee buried in the pots, were numberlesse, birds and fowle of diuers sorts infinite, that hung on the trees, that the aire might coole them. *Sancho* counted about threescore skinnes of wine, each of them of about two *Arrobas*, and as it afterward seemed, of spritely liquor: there were also whole heapes of purest bread, heaped vp like corne in the threshing-floores, your cheeses like bricks piled one vpon another, made a goodly wall, and two kettles of oyle bigger then a Diers, serued to frie their pasteworke, which they tooke out with two strong peeles, when they were fried, and they ducked them in another kettle of honey that stood by for the same purpose: There were Cookes about fifty, men and women, all cleanly, carefull, and cheerfull: In the spacious belly of the Steere, there were twelue sucking Pigs, which being sowed there, serued to make him more sauiour: the spices of diuers sorts, it seemed were not brought by Pounds, but by *Arrones*, and all lay open in a great chest. To conclude,

*Arroba*, a measure of 25 pound weight, which may be some six gallons of wine.

conclude, this preparation for the marriage was rustical ; but so plentifull, that it might furnish an Army.

*Sancho Panza* beheld all, and was much affected with it : and first of all, the goodly pots did captivate his desires, from whence with all his heart hee would haue beene glad to haue received a good pipkin full; by and by he was enamoured on the skins, and last of all vpon the fried-meats, if so be those vast kettles might bee called frying-pans: so without longer patience, as not being able to abstaine, he came to one of the busie Cookes, and with courteous and hungry reasons, desired him, that he might sop a cast of bread in one of the pots. To which the Cooke replide; Brother, this is no day on which hunger may haue any iurisdiction (thanks be to the rich *Camacho*) alight, and see if you can finde euer a ladle there, and skimme out a Hen or two, and much good may they doe you.

I see none (sayd *Sancho*.) Stay (sayd the Cooke) God forgive me, What a Ninny tis? and saying this, he layed hold of a kettle, and sowing into it one of the halfe-butts, he drew out of it three Hens and two Geese, and sayd to *Sancho*; Eat, Friend, and breake your fast with this froth, till dinner-time. I haue nothing to put it in (sayd *Sancho*.) Why, take spoone and all (sayd the Cooke) for *Camacho's* riches and content will very well beare it.

Whilest *Sancho* thus passed his time, *Don Quixote* saw, that by one side of the Arbour, there came a doozen Husband-men vpon twelue goodly Mares, with rich and lightly furniture fit for the Countrey, with many little bells vpon their Petrels, all clad in brauery for that dayes solemnity, and all in a ioynt-troop ran many Carceres vp and downe the meadow, with a great deale of mirth and iollity, crying; Long liue *Camacho* and *Quiteria*, he as rich, as shee faire, and shee the fairest of the world. Which when *Don Quixote* heard, thought hee to himselfe, It well appeares that these men haue not seene my *Dulcinea del Toboso*: for if they had, they would not bee so forward in prailing this their *Quiteria*.

A while after, there began to enter at diuers places of the Arbour, certaine different dances, amongst which there was one

Sword.

Sword-dance, by foure and twenty Swaines, handsome lusty Youths, all in white linnen, with their hand-kerchiefs wrought in severall colours of fine silke, and one of the twelue vpon the Mares asked him that was the fore-man of these, a nimble Lad, if any of the Dancers had hurt themselves.

Hitherto (sayd he) no body is hurt, wee are all well, God bee thanked: and straight he shuffled in amongst the rest of his companions, with so many tricks, and so much slight; that *Don Quixote*, though he were vsed to such kinde of dances, yet hee neuer liked any so well as this. He also liked another very well, which was of faire young Mayds, so young, that neuer a one was vnder foureteene, nor none aboue eighteene, all clad in course Greene, their haire partly filleted and partly loose: but all were yellow, and might compare with the Sunne, vpon which they had garlands of <sup>a</sup> *Iasmines*, *Roses*, *Wood-bine* and *Hony-* <sup>a</sup> *Iasmines*, a little sweet  
suckles, they had for their guides a reuerend olde man, and a ma-  
tronly woman, but more light and nimble then could bee expe-  
cted from their yeeres. <sup>little sweet white flower that growes in Spaine in hed-</sup>

They danc'd to the sound of a <sup>b</sup> *Zamora* bag-pipe, so that with their honest lookes, and their nimble feet, they seemed to be the best Dancers in the world. After this there came in another artificiall dance, of those called *Brawles*, it consisted of eight Nymphs, diuided into two rankes, God *Cupid* guided one <sup>b</sup> *Zamora*, a town in Castile, famous for that kinde of musick, <sup>like our Lant- ca-shire horn-pipe.</sup>  
his *Quiuer* and *Arrowes*, the other was clad in diuers rich colours of gold and silke: The Nymphs that followed *Lone*, carried a white parchment scrowle at their backs, in which their names were written in great letters: the first was *Poesie*, the second *Discretion*, the third *Nobility*, the fourth *Valour*. In the same manner came those whom god *Moncy* led, the first was *Liberality*, the second *Reward*, the third *Treasure*, the fourth *Quiet Possession*; before them came a wooden Cattle, which was shot at by two Sauages clad in Iuie and Canuas, died in Greene, so to the life, that they had well-nigh frighted *Sancho*. Vpon the Frontispice, and of each side of the Cattle, was written; *The Castle of good hede*: Foure skillfull Musicians played to them on a Taber and Pipe; *Cupid* began the Dance, and after two changes,

## The Second Part

ges, hee lifted vp his eyes, and bent his Bow against a Virgin that stood vpon the battlements of the Castle, and sayd to her in this manner :

*I am the pow'rfull Deitie,  
In Heauen above and Earth beneath,  
In Seas and Hels profunditie,  
O're all that therein liue or breathe.*

*What 'tis to feare, I neuer knew,  
I can performe all that I will,  
Nothing to me is strange, or new;  
I bid, forbid, at pleasure still.*

The Verse being ended, he shot a flight ouer the Castle, and retired to his standing; By and by came out Money, and performed his two changes; the Taber ceased, and he spoke:

*Loe I, that can doe more then Loue,  
Yet loue is he that doth me guide,  
My of-spring great'st on earth, to Loue  
Above I neere'st am allide.*

*I Money am, with whom but few  
Performe the honest workes they ought;  
Yet heere a miracle to shew,  
That without me they could doe ought.*

Money retired, and Poetry aduanced, who after she had done her changes aswell as the rest, her eyes fixt vpon the Damozell of the Castle, she sayd:

*Lady, to thee, sweet Poesie  
Her soule in deepe conceits doth send,  
Wrapt up in writs of Sonnetrie,  
Whose pleasing straines doe them commend.*

## of Don Quixote.

*If with my earnestnesse, I thee  
Importune not, faire Damozell, soone  
Thy enuied fortune shall, by mee,  
Mount the circle of the Moone.*

Poetry gaue way, and from Monies side came Liberality, and after her changes, spoke:

*To giue is Liberalitie,  
In him that shunnes two contraries,  
The one of Prodigalitie,  
Tother of hatefull Avarice.*

*Ile be profuse in praising thee,  
Profusenesse hath accounted beene  
A vice, yet sure it commeth nie  
Affection, which in gifts is seene.*

In this sort both the shewes of the two Squadrons, came in and out, and each of them performed their changes, and spoke their verses, some elegant, some ridiculous, *Don Quixote* onely remembred (for he had a great memory) the rehearsed ones, and now the whole troope mingled together, winding in and out with great spritelinesse and dexterity, and still as *Loue* went before the Castle, he shot a flight aloft, but *Money* broke gilded bals, and threw into it.

At last, after *Money* had danc'd a good while, he drew out a great purse made of a Romane Cats skinne, which seemed to be full of money, and casting it into the Castle, with the blow, the boords were dis-ioyned, and fell downe, leauing the Damozell discouered, without any defence. *Money* came with his assistants, and casting a great chaine of golde about her necke, they made a shew of leading her captiue: Which when *Loue* and his Party saw, they made shew as if they would haue rescued her, and all these motions were to the sound of the Taber, with skill-

full dancing, the Sauages parted them, who very speedily went to set vp and ioine the boords of the Castle, and the Damozell was enclosed there anew: and with this the dance ended, to the great content of the Spectators.

*Don Quixote* asked one of the Nymphs, Who had so drest and ordered her? Shee answered, A Parson of the towne, who had an excellent capacity for such inuentions. He lay a wager (sayd *Don Quixote*) he was more *Basilus* his friend then *Camacho's*, and that he knowes better what belongs to a Satyr then to Euen-song; he hath well fitted *Basilus* his abilities to the dance, and *Camacho's* riches.

*Sancho Panza* that heard all, sayd; The King is my Cocke, I hold with *Camacho*. Well, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) thou art a very Peasant, and like them that cry, Long liue the Conquerour. I know not who I am like (said *Sancho*;) but I know I shall neuer get such delicate froth out of *Basilus* his Pottage-pots, as I haue out of *Camacho's*: and with that shewed him the kettle full of Geese and Hens, and laying hold on one, he fell to it merrily and hungerly, and for *Basilus* abilities this he sayd to their teeth: So much thou art worth as thou hast, and so much as thou hast, thou art worth. An olde Grandam of mine was wont to say, there were but two linages in the world, *Hauemuch*, and *Hauelittle*; and she was mightily enclined to the former: and at this day, Master, your Physician had rather feele a hauing pulse, then a knowing pulse, and an Assc couered with golde makes a better shew then a horse with a pack-saddle. So that I say againe, I am of *Camacho's* side, the scumme of whose pots are Geese, Hens, Hares, and Conies, and *Basilus* his, bee they neere or farre off, but poore thin water.

Hast thou ended with thy tediousnesse, *Sancho* (sayd *Don Quixote*?) I must end (sayd hee) because I see it offends you, for if it were not for that, I had worke cut out for three dayes. Pray God, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) that I may see thee dumbe before I die. According to our life (sayd *Sancho*) before you die, I shall be mumbling clay, and then perhaps I shall bee so dumbe, that I shall not speake a word till the end of the world, or at least till Doomesday.

Although

Although it should bee so, *Sancho* (sayd hee) thy silence will neuer be equall to thy talking past, and thy talke to come; besides, tis very likely that I shall die before thee, and so I shall neuer see thee dumbe, no not when thou drinkest or sleepest, to paint thee out thorowly. In good faith, Master (quoth *Sancho*) there is no trusting in the raw bones, I meane Death, that deuoures lambes as well as sheepe, and I haue heard our Vicar say, she tramples as wel on the high Towres of Kings, as the humble cottages of poore men: this Lady hath more power then squemishnesse, she is nothing dainty, shee deuoures all, playes at all, and fills her wallets with all kinde of people, ages, and preeminences: Shee is no Mower that sleepes in the hot weather, but mowes at all howers, and cuts aswell the greene grass as the hay: she doth not chew, but swallowes at once, and crams downe all that comes before her; shee hath a Canine appetite, that is neuer satisfied, and though shee haue no belly, yet shee may make vs thinke shee is *Hydropicall*, with the thirst shee hath to drinke all mens liues, as if it were a iugge of colde water.

No more, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) at this instant, hold while thou art well, and take heed of falling, for certainly thou hast spoken of Death in thy rustical termes, as much as a good Preacher might haue spoken. I tell thee, *Sancho*, that for thy naturall discretion, thou mightst get thee a Pulpit, and preach thy fine knacks vp and downe the world. Hee preaches well that liues well (sayd *Sancho*) and I know no other preaching. Thou needest not (quoth he:) But I wonder at one thing, that wisdom beginning from the feare of God, that thou, who fearest a Lizard more then him, shouldst be so wise? Iudge you of your Knight Errantry (sayd *Sancho*) and meddle not with other mens feares or valors, for I am as pretty a Fearer of God as any of my neighbours, and so let mee snuffe away this scum, for all the Meaning to rest are but idle words, for which we must giue account in another life. And in so saying, hee began to giue another assault to the kettle, with such a courage, that he wakened *Don Quixote*, that vndoubtedly would haue taken his part, if he had not beene hindered by that, that of necessity must be set downe.

## CHAP. XXI.

*Of the prosecution of Camacho's marriage, with other delightfull accidents.*

**A**S *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* were in their discourse mentioned in the former chapter, they heard a great noyse and out-cry, which was caused by them that rode on the Mares, who with a large Carreere and shouts, went to meet the married couple; who, hemmed in with a thousand trickes and deuices, came in company of the Vicar, and both their kindreds, and all the better sort of the neighbouring townes, all clad in their best apparell. And as *Sancho* saw the Bride, he said, In good faith she is not drest like a country wench, but like one of your nice Court Dames: by th'Masse me thinks her glasse necke-laces she should weare, are rich Corral; and her course greene of *Chenca*, is a<sup>a</sup> thirty piled veluet; and her lacing that should be white linnen, (I vow by me) is Satten: well looke on her hands that should haue their lette rings, let me not thrine if they be not golden rings, arrant gold, and set with pearles as white as a sillabub, each of them as precious as an eye. Ah whoore son, and what lockes she hath? for if they be not false, I neuer saw longer, nor fairer in my life. Well, well, finde not fault with her liuelinesse and stature, and compare her me to a Date tree, that bends vp and downe when it is loaden with bunches of Dates; for so doth she with her trinkets hanging at her hayre and about her necke: I sweare by my soule, she is a wench of mettall, and may very well passe the pikes in Flanders.

*Don Quixote* laughed at *Sancho's* rusticke praises, and hee thought, that setting his Mistresse *Dulcinea* aside, he neuer saw fairer woman: the beauteous *Quiteria* was somewhat pale, belike, with the ill night that Brides alwaies haue when they dresse themselves for next daies marriage. They drew neere to a Theater on one side of the Medow, that was dressed with Carpets and boughes, where the marriage was to bee solemnized, and where they should behold the dances and inuentions. And

<sup>a</sup> In stead of three-piled.

iust as they should come to the place, they heard a great out-cry behind them, and a voyce, saying; Stay a while, rash people as well as hasty: At whose voyce and words they all turned about, and saw that he that spoke, was one cladde (to see to) in a blacke Jacket all welted with Crimson in flames, crowned (as they straight perceiued) with a crowne of mournfull Cypresse, in his hand he had a great Truncheon: and comming neerer, hee was knowne by all to be the Gallant *Basilus*, who were in suspense, expecting what should be the issue of those cryes and words, fearing some ill successe from this so vnlooked for arriual. Hee drew neere, weary, and out of breath, and comming before the married couple, and clapping his Truncheon vpon the ground, which had a Steele pike at the end of it: his colour changed, and his eyes fixed vpon *Quiteria*, with a fearefull and hollow voyce, thus spoke:

Well knowest thou, forgetfull *Quiteria*, that according to the Law of God that wee professe, that whilest I liue thou canst not be married to any other: neyther are you ignorant, that because I would stay till time and my industry might better my fortunes, I would not breake that *decorum* that was fitting to the preseruing of thy honelty: but you forgetting all duetic, due to my vertuous desires, will make another Master of what is mine, whose riches serue not onely to make him happy in them, but euery way fortunate, and that he may be so to the full, (not as I thinke he deserues it, but as the Fates ordaine it for him) I will with these hands remooue the impossibility or inconuenience that may disturbe him, remouing my selfe out of the way. Liue, rich *Camacho*, liue with the vngratefull *Quiteria* many & prosperous yeeres, and let your poore *Basilus* die, whose pouerty clipped the wings of his happinesse, and I laid him in his graue: and saying this, he layd hold of his Truncheon that he had stuck in the ground, and the one halfe of it remaining still there, shewed that it serued for a scabberd to a short Tucke that was concealed in it, and putting that which might be called the hilt on the ground, with a nimble spring, and a resolute purpose, hee cast himselfe vpon it, and in an instant the bloody poynt appeared out of his backe, with halfe the Steele blade, the poore scule wel-



tring in his bloud, all along on the ground, runne thorow with his owne vveapon. His friends ranne presently to helpe him, greued with his misery and miserable happe, and *Don Quixote* forsaking his *Rozinante*, vvent also to helpe him; tooke him in his armes, but found that as yet there vvas life in him. They vwould haue pulled out the Tucke, but the Vicar there present; vvas of opinion that it vvere not best before hee had confessed himselfe; for that the drawing it out, and his death, vwould be both at one instant. But *Basilus* comming a little to himselfe; vwith a faint and dolefull voyce, said, If thou vwouldst, O *Quiteria*, yet in this last and forcible trance, giue me thy hand to be my spouse, I should thinke my rashnesse might something excuse me, since vwith this I obtained to be thine.

The Vicar hearing this, bad him he should haue a care of his soules health, rather then of the pleasures of his body, and that he should heartily aske God forgiuenesse for his sinnes, and for his desperate action. To vvhich *Basilus* reply'd, That he would by no meanes confesse himselfe, if *Quiteria* did not first giue him her hand to be his spouse, for that content would make him cheerefully confesse himselfe. When *Don Quixote* heard the vvounded mans petition, he cried aloud, that *Basilus* desired a thing very iust and reasonable, and that *Signior Camacho* would be as much honoured in receiuing *Quiteria*, the worthy *Basilus* his vviddow, as if hee had receiued her from her Fathers side: heere is no more to doe but giue one I, no more then to promise it, since the nuptial bed of this mariage must be the graue.

*Camacho* gaue care to all this, and was much troubled, not knowing vvhat to doe or say: but *Basilus* his friends were so earnest, requesting him to consent that *Quiteria* might giue him her hand to bee his Spouse, that hee might not endanger his soule, by departing desperately, that they mooued him and enforced him, to say that if *Quiteria* would, he vvas contented, seeing it vvas but deferring his desires a minute longer. Then all of them came to *Quiteria*, some vvith intreaties, others with teares, most with forcible reasons, and perswaded her she should giue her hand to poore *Basilus*; and shee more hard then marble, more lumpish then a statue, vwould not answer a word,

neyther

neyther would she at all, had not the Vicar bid her resolute what she vwould doe; for *Basilus* was euen now ready to depart, and could not expect her irresolute determination. Then the faire *Quiteria*, without answering a word, all sad and troubled, came where *Basilus* was, vvith his eyes euen sette, his breath failing him, making shew as if he would die like a Gentile, and not like a Christian. *Quiteria* came at length, and vpon her knees made signes to haue his hand. *Basilus* vnioyn'd his eyes, and looking stedfastly vpon her, said, Oh *Quiteria*, thou art now come to be pittifull, when thy pittie must be the sword that shall end my life, since now I want force to receiue the glory that thou giuest in chusing mee for thine, or to suspend the dolor that so hastily closeth vp mine eyes, with the fearefull shade of death. All I desire thee is (oh fatall starre of mine) that the hand thou requirest, and that that thou wilt giue me, that it be not for fashion-sake, nor once more to deceiue mee, but that thou confesse and say, without being forced to it, that thou giuest me thy hand freely, as to thy lawfull Spouse, since it were vnmercifull in this trance to deceiue mee, or to deale falsely with him that hath beene so true to thee. In the midst of this discourse he fainted, so that all the standers by thought now he had beene gone. *Quiteria* all honest and shamefast, laying hold vvith her right hand on *Basilus* his, said to him; No force can vvorke vpon my will, and so I giue thee the freest hand I haue to be thy lawfull Spouse, and receiue thine, if thou giue it me as freely, and that the anguish of thy sodaine accident doe not too much trouble thee. I giue it (said *Basilus*) liuely and couragiously, with the best vnderstanding that heauen hath endued mee withall, and therefore take me, and I deliuer my selfe as thy espousall; and I (said *Quiteria*) as thy Spouse, whether thou liue long, or vvwhether from my armes they carry thee to thy graue.

This young man (said *Sancho*) being so wounded, talks much me thinks, let him leaue his wooing, and attend his soules health, vvwhich me thinks appeares more in his tongue, then in his teeth.

*Basilus* and *Quiteria* hauing their hands thus fastned, the Vicar, tender-hearted and compassionate, powred his blessing vpon them, and prayed God to giue good rest to the new-married

mans



mans soule, vvho as soone as he receiued this benediction, so-  
dainely starts vp, and with an vnlook't for agility, drew out the  
Tucke which was sheathed in his body. All the spectators were  
in a maze, and some of them, more out of simplicity then curio-  
sity, began to cry out, A Miracle; a Miracle: but *Basilus* re-  
ply'd, No Miracle, no Miracle; but a Tricke, a Tricke. But the  
Vicar, heed-lesse and astonisht, came with both his hands to feele  
the wound, & found that the blade had neyther passed thorow  
flesh or ribbes, but thorow a hollow pipe of yron, that he filled  
with bloud well fitted in that place, and (as after it was knowne)  
prepared so, that it could not congeale. At last the Vicar and *Ca-  
macho*, and all the standers by, thought that they were mocked  
and made a laughing-stocke. The Bride made no great shew of  
sorrow: rather when she heard say that the marriage could not  
stand currant, because it was deceifull, she said, that shee anew  
confirmed it; by which they all collected, that the business had  
beene plotted by the knowledge & consentment of them both.  
At which, *Camacho* and his friends were so abashed, that they  
remitted their reuenge to their hands, and vnsheathing many  
swords, they set vpon *Basilus*, in whose fauor in an instant there  
were as many more drawne: and *Don Quixote* taking the Van-  
guard on horsebacke, with his Launce at his rest, and well coue-  
red with his shield, made way thorow vñ all. *Sancho* (whom  
such feates did neuer please or solace) ranne to the pottage-pot,  
from whence he had gotten the skimmings, thinking that to be  
a sanctuary, and so to be respected. *Don Quixote* cryed aloud,  
Hold, hold, Sirs; for there is no reason that you should take re-  
uenge for the wrongs that Loue doth vs: and obserue, that loue  
and warre are all one: and as in warre it is lawfull to vse sleights  
and stratagemes to ouercome the enemy: So in amorous strifes  
and competencies, Impostures and juggling tricks are held for  
good, to attaine to the wished end, so it bee not in preiudice  
and dishonour of the thing affected. *Quiteria* was due to *Ba-  
silus*, and *Basilus* to *Quiteria*, by the iust and fauourable inclina-  
tion of heauen. *Camacho* is rich, and may purchase his delight,  
and whom God hath ioyned, let no man separate. *Basilus* hath  
but this one sheepe, let none offer to take it from him, be he ne-  
uer

uer so powerfull: he that first attempts it, must first passe thorow  
the point of this Launce; at which hee shaked his Launce so  
strong and cunningly, that hee frighted all that knew him not:  
But *Quiteria's* disdain was so inwardly fixt in *Camacho's* heart,  
that he forgot her in an instant; so that the Vicars perswasions  
preuailed with him, (who was a good discret and honest-min-  
ded man) by which *Camacho* and his complices were pacified  
& quieted, in signe of which, they put vp their swords, rather  
blaming *Quiteria's* facility, then *Basilus* his industry. *Camacho*  
fram'd this discourse to himselfe, That if *Quiteria* loued *Basilus*  
when she was a maide, shee would also haue continued her loue  
to him though she had beene his wife, and so that hee ought to  
giue God thanks rather for hauing ridden him of her, then to  
haue giuen her to him. *Camacho* then, & those of his crue be-  
ing comforted and pacified, all *Basilus* his likewise were so, and  
*Camacho* to shew that he stomacked not the iest, nor car'd for it,  
was willing the feast should goe forward, as if he had beene real-  
ly married. But neyther *Basilus*, nor his Spouse, nor their fol-  
lowers would stay, but went to *Basilus* his towne: for your  
poore that are vertuous and discret, haue as well those that will  
follow, honour and vphold them, as the rich theirs, and such as  
will flatter them. *Don Quixote* went with them too, for they e-  
steemed him to be a man of worth & valor. But *Sancho's* mind  
was in a mist, to see that it was impossible for him to stay for  
*Camacho's* sumptuous feast & sports that lasted till the euening:  
so that straighted and sorrowfull, he followed on with his Ma-  
ster that went in *Basilus* his Squadron, and thus left behind him  
those flesh-pots of *Egypt*, though hee bore them with him in  
his minde, whose skumme which he carried in the kettle being  
consumed now and ended, represented vnto him the glorious  
and abundant happinell hee lost, so that all sad and sorrowfull,  
though hungerlesse, without alighting from Dapple, he follow-  
ed *Rozinantes* tracke.

## CHAP. XXII.

*Of the famous Adventure of Montefinos Cave, which is in the heart of Mancha, which the valorous Don Quixote happily accomplished.*

THE married couple made wonderfull much of *Don Quixote*, obliged thereunto for the willingnesse he shewed to defend their cause, and with his valor they paralleld his discretion, accounting him a *Cid* in Armes, and a *Cicero* in eloquence. The good *Sancho* recreated himselfe three daies at the Bridegroomes charge, & now knew that *Quiteria* knew nothing of the fayned wounding, but that it was a trick of *Basilus*, who hoped for the successe that hath been shewed: true it was, that he had made some of his louing friends acquainted with his purpose, that they might helpe him at need, and make good his deceit. They cannot be called deceits (quoth *Don Quixote*) that are done to a vertuous end, and that the marriage of a louing couple was an end most excellent: but by the way, you must know that the greatestt opposite that Loue hath, is want & continuall necessity; for Loue is all mirth, content & gladshomenes, and the more, when hee that loues, enioyes the thing loued; against which, necessity and pouerty are open and declared enemies. All this he spoke with a purpose to aduise *Basilus*, that he should leaue exercising his youthfull abilities, that although they got him a name, yet they brought no wealth, & that he should looke to lay vp something now by lawfull & industrious means, which are neuer wanting to those that will be wary and apply themselves: the honest poore man (if so be the poore man may be called honest) hath a iewell of a faire woman, which if any man bereaue him of, dis-honors him and kills her. Shee that is faire & honest, when her husband is poore, deserues to be crowned with Lawrell and triumphant Bayes. Beauty alone attracts the eyes of all that behold it, and the princely Eagles & high flying birds doe stoop to it as to the pleasing Lure: but if extreme necessity be added to that beauty, then Kites and Crowes vwill grapple

grapple with it, and other rauenuous birds; but shee that is constant against all these assaults, doth well deserue to bee her husbands crowne. Marke, wife *Basilus* (proceeds *Don Quixote*) it was an opinion of I know not what sage man, that there was but one good woman in the world, and his aduice was, That euery man should thinke that was married, that his wife was she, and so he should be sure to liue contented. I neuer yet was married, neyther haue I any thought hitherto that way; notwithstanding, I could be able to giue any man counsell heerein that should askeit, and how he should choose his wife.

First of all I would haue him rather respect fame then wealth, for the honest woman gets not a good name onely with being good, but in appearing so; for your publike loosenesse and liberty doth more preiudice a womans honesty, then her sinning secretly. If you bring her honest to your house, tis ealie keeping her so, and to better her in that goodnesse; but if you bring her dishonest, tis hard mending her; for it is not very pliable to passe from one extreme into another, I say not impossible: but I hold it to be very difficult.

*Sancho* heard all this, & said to himselfe, This Master of mine, when I speake matters of marrow and substance, is wont to tell me, that I may take a Pulpit in hand, and preach my fine knacks vp and downe the world: but I may say of him, that when hee once begins to thred his sentences, he may not onely take a Pulpit in hand, but in each finger too, and goe vp and downe the market places, and cry, Who buyes my ware? The Deuill take thee, for a Knight Errant, how wise he is! On my soule I thoght hee had knowne onely what belonged to his Knight Errantry; but he snaps at all, and there is no boat that hee hath not an oare in. *Sancho* spoke this somewhat aloud, and his Master ouerheard him, and asked, What is that thou art grumbling, *Sancho*? I say nothing, neyther doe I grumble, (quoth hee) I was onely saying to my selfe, that I would I had heard you before I vvas married, and perhaps I might now haue said, The sound man needs no Physician. Is *Teresa* so bad, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*? Not very bad, said *Sancho*, and yet not very good, at least, not so good as I would haue her. Thou dost ill, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*)

*Quixote*) to speake ill of thy wife, who is indeede mother of thy children.

There's no loue lost (quoth *Sancho*;) for she speakes ill of me too, when shee list, especially when shee is iealous, for then the Deuill himselve will not cope with her. Well, three dayes they stayed with the married Couple, where they were welcommed like Princes. *Don Quixote* desired the skilfull Parson to provide him a Guide that might shew him the way to *Montesino's* Caue, for he had a great desire to enter into it, and to see with his own eyes, if those wonders that were told of it vp & down the Countrey were true. The Parson tolde him, that a Cousin-German of his, a famous Student, and much addicted to bookes of Knight-hood should goe with him, who should willingly carry him to the mouth of the Caue, and should shew the famous Lake of *Ruydera*, telling him hee would bee very good company for him, by reason he was one that knew how to publish books, and direct them to great men.

By and by the young Student comes me vpon an Asse with Foale, with a course packing-cloth, or doubled carpet vpon his pack-saddle. *Sancho* saddled *Rozinante*, and made ready his Dapple, furnished his wallets, and carried the Students too, as well provided; and so taking leaue, and bidding all, God bee with you, they went on, holding their course to *Montesino's* Caue. By the way *Don Quixote* asked the Scholler, of what kinde or quality the exercises of his profession and study were. To which he answered, that his Profession was Humanity, his Exercises and Study to make bookes for the Presse, which were very beneficiall to himselve, and no lesse gratefull to the Commonwealth, that one of his bookes was intituled, *The Booke of the Libraries*, where are set downe seuen hundred and three sorts of Libraries, with their colours, motto's, and cyphers; from whence any may bee taken at festiuall times and shewes, by Courtiers without begging them from any body, or distilling (as you would say) from their owne braines, to sute them to their desires and intentions; for I giue to the iealous, to the forsaken, to the forgotten, to the absent, the most agreeable, that will fit them as well as their Puncks. Another booke I haue, which I meane

to call the *Metamorphosis*, or *Spanish Ouid*, of a new and rare inuention: for imitating *Ouid* in it, by way of mocking: I shew who the *Giralda* of *Seul* was, the Angell of the *Magdalena*, who was the Pipe of *Vecinguerra* of *Cordona*, who the Bulls of *Gusfando*, *Sierra Morena*, the springs of *Leganitos* and *Lanapies* in *Madrid*; not forgetting that of *Pioio*, that of the gilded pipe, and of the Abbesse, and all this with the Allegories, Metaphors, and Translations, that they delight, suspend, and instruct all in a moment. Another booke I haue, which I calla supply to *Polydore Virgil*, concerning the inuention of things which is of great waight that *Polydore* omitted, and declare them in a very pleasing stile; *Virgil* forgot to tell vs who was the first that had a Catarie in the world, and the first that was anoynted for the French disease, and I set it downe presently after I propose it, and authorize it with at least foure and twenty Writers, that you may see whether I haue taken good paines, and whether the sayd booke may not be profitable to the world.

*Sancho*, that was very attentue to the Schollers narration, asked him: Tell me, Sir, so God direct your right hand in the Impression of your bookes: Can you tell mee? (For I know you can, since you know all) who was the first man that scratcht his head, for I beleue it was our first father *Adam*? Yes marry was it (sayd he) for *Adam*, no doubt, had both head & haire, & being the first man in the world, would sometimes scratch himselve. I beleue it (quoth *Sancho*;) but tell me now, Who was the first Vaulter in the world? Truly, Brother (sayd he) I cannot at present resolue you, I will study it when I come to my bookes, and then Ile satisfie you, when wee see one another againe, for I hope this will not be the last time. Well, Sir (sayd *Sancho*) neuer trouble your selfe with this, for now I can resolue the doubt: Know, that the first Tumbler in the world was *Lucifer*, when he was cast out of Heauen, and came tumbling down to Hell.

You say true (quoth the Scholler.) And *Don Quixote* sayd; This answer, *Sancho*, is none of thine, thou hast heard some body say so. Peace, Sir (quoth *Sancho*) for if I fall to questions and

All these several rarities of Spaine.

and answers, I shall not make an end between this and morning: And to aske foolish questions, and answer vnlikeli-hoods, I want no help of my neighbours. Thou hast spoken more, *Sancho*, then thou thinkest for (quoth *Don Quixote*) for you haue some that are most busied in knowing and auerring things, whose knowledge and remembrance is not worth a button. All that day they passed in these and other delightful discourses, and at night they lodged in a little village, from whence the Scholler told them they had but two little leagues to *Montesino's Caue*, and that if he meant to enter it, he must be provided of ropes, to tie and let himselfe downe into the depth. *Don Quixote* sayd, that though it were as deep as Hell, he would see whither it reached: so they bought a hundred fathome of cordage, & the next day at two of the clocke, they came to the Caue, whose mouth is wide and spacious; but full of briers, & brambles, & wilde fig-trees, & weeds so intricate & thick, that they altogether blinde and dam it vp. When they came to it, *Sancho* and the Schollera-lighted, and *Don Quixote*, whom they tied strongly with the cordage: and whilest they were swathing and binding of him, *Sancho* sayd to him; Take heede, Sir, what you doe, doe not bury your selfe aliue, and doe not hang your selfe like a bottle to be cooled in some Well; for it neither concernes nor belongs to you, to search this place worse then a Dungeon.

Binde me and peace (quoth *Don Quixote*) for such an enterprize as this, *Sancho*, was reserued for me. Then said the Guide, I beseech you, Signior *Don Quixote*, that you take heede, and looke about you with an hundred eyes, to see what is within; for perhaps you may meet with things that will be fit for mee to put in my booke of Transformations. He hath his Instrument in his hand (quoth *Sancho*) that knowes how to vse it.

This sayd, and *Don Quixotes* binding ended (which was not vpon his harnesse, but vpon his arming doublet) he said. We did vnadvisedly, in not providing our selues of some small bell, that might haue bene tied with mee to the same cord, by whose sound, you might know that I were still toward the bottome and aliue: but since there is now no remedy, God bee our good speede, and straight he kneeled vpon his knees, and made a soft prayer

prayer to God Almighty, desiring his ayde, and to giue him good successe in that (to secto) dangerous and strange Aduenture, and then straight-ways hee cried aloud; Oh thou Mistress of my actions and motions, most excellent, peerlesse *Dulcinea del Toboso*, if it be possible, that the prayers and requests of this thy happy Louer come to thine eares, harken, I beseech thee, by thy vnheard of beauty, deny not now vnto me thy fauour and protection, which I so much neede: I goe to cast my selfe headlong to a plunge, and sinke my selfe into the *Abissus*, that presents it selfe to me, that the world may know, that if thou fauour me, there shall be nothing impossible for mee to vndergoe and end.

And in saying this, hee came to the mouth, but saw he could not come neere to bee let downe, except it were by making way with maine force, or with cutting thorow, and so laying hand on his sword, hee began to cut and slash the weedes that were at the mouth of the caue; at whose rushing and noyse, there came out an infinite Company of Crowes and Dawes, so thicke and so hastily, that they tumbled *Don Quixote* on the ground, and if hee had bene as superstitious, as good Christian, hee would haue taken it for an ill signe, and not haue proceeded.

Well, he rose, and seeing the Crowes were all gone, and that there were no other night-birds, as Bats, that came out amongst the Crowes, *Sancho* and the Scholler let him downe, to search the bottome of that fearefull Caue; but *Sancho* first bestowed his benediction on him, and making a thousand crosses ouer him, sayd; God and the *Rocke of France*, together with the *Tri-* Scuerall pla-ces of deuoti-on. nity of *Gaeta*, guide thee, thou Flower, Creame, and Scumme of Knights Errant: There thou goest, Hackster of the world, Heart of Steele, and Armes of braille, God againe be thy Guide, and deliuer thee sound and without skarre, to the light of this world which thou leauest, to bury thy selfe in the obscurity which thou seekest.

The Scholler did (as it were) make the same kinde of wishes and deprecations. *Don Quixote* cried out, that they should yet giue him more rope, which they gaue by little and little: and when his voyce (that was stopt in the gutters of the Caue) could

be no longer heard, and that they had let downe their hundred fathome of rope, they were of opinion to hoyst him vp againe, since they could giue him no more cord; for all that, they stayed some halfe an houre, and then began easily to draw vp the rope, & without any waite, which made them think *Don Quixote* was within, and *Sancho* beleeuing it, wept bitterly, and drew vp apace, that he might bee satisfied: but comming somewhat neere foure-score fathome, they felt a waight, which made them very much reioyce.

At length when they came to ten, they plainly saw *Don Quixote*: to whom *Sancho* cryed out, saying; You are well returned, Sir, for we thought you had stayed there for breed. But *Don Quixote* did not answer a word: but drawing him altogether out, they saw that his eyes were shut, as if hee were asleepe; they stretcht him on the ground, and vnbound him, and for all this he awaked not. But they so turned, tossed & shaked him, that a pretty while after he came to himselfe, lazing himselfe, as if he had wakened out of a great and profound sleep, and looking wildely round-about him, sayd; God forgieue you, Friends, for you haue raised mee from one of the delicatest and pleasingest liues and sights that euer was seene by humane eye: Now at length I perceiue, that all the delights of this world doe passe like a shadow or dreame, or wither like a flower of the field: Oh vnhappy *Montesino's*, oh ill wounded *Durandarte*, oh luckles *Balerna*, oh mournfull *Guadiana*, & you vnfortunate daughters of *Ruydera*, that shew by your waters, those your faire eyes wept.

The Scholler and *Sancho* gaue eare to these words which *Don Quixote* spake, as if with great paine they came from his very entrailes: They desired him to let them know his meaning, and to tell them what he had seene in that hellish place. Hellish, call ye it, sayd *Don Quixote*? well, call it not so, for it deserues not the name, as straight you shall heare: Hee desired them to giue him somewhat to eat, for he was exceeding hungry. They layd the Schollers course wrapper vpon the greene grasse, and went to the Spence of their wallers, and all three of them being set like good fellowes, eat their Beauer, and supped all together. The

cloth

cloth taken vp (*Don Quixote* sayd) Sit still Ho, let none of you rise, and marke me attentiuely.

## CHAP. XXIII.

*Of the admirable things, that the vnparaleld Don Quixote recounted, which he had seene in Montesino's profound Caue, whose strangenesse and impossibility makes this Chapter be held for Apocrypha.*

**I**T was well toward foure of the clocke, when the Sunne, couered betweene two clouds, shewed but a dimme light, and with his temperate beames, gaue *Don Quixote* leaue, without heat or trouble, to relate to his two conspicuous Auditors, what he had seene in *Montesino's* Caue; and he began, as followeth: About a twelue or foureteeen mens heights in the profundity of this Dungeon, on the right hand, there is a Concauity and Space able to containe a Cart, Mules and all; some light there comes into it by certaine chinks and loope-holes, which answer to it a farre off in the *Superficies* of the earth; this Space and Concauity saw I, when I was weary and angry to see mee my selfe, hanging by the rope, to goe downe that obscure region, without being carried a sure or knowne way: so I determined to enter into it, and to rest a little; I cryed out vnto you, that you should let downe no more rope, till I bad you; but it seemed you heard me not: I went gathering vp the rope you let downe to me, and rolling of it vp into a heape, sate me downe vpon it, very pensatiue, thinking with my selfe what I might doe to get to the bottome; and being in this thought and confusion, vpon a sudden (without any former inclination in mee) a most profound sleep came vpon me, and when I least thought of it, without knowing how, nor which way, I awaked out of it, and found my selfe in the midst of the fairest, most pleasant, and delightfull medow, that euer Nature created, or the wisest humane discretion can imagine; I snuffed mine eyes, wiped them, and saw that I vvas not asleepe, but really awake, not vwithstand-

L 2

ding

ding I felt vpon my head and my brest, to be assured, if I were there my selfe or no in person, or that it were some illusion, or counterfet; but my touching, feeling, and my reasonable discourse that I made to my selfe, certified me, that I was then present, the same that I am now.

By and by I saw a Princely and sumptuous Palace or Castle, whose wals and battlements seemed to bee made of transparent Cristall, from whence (vpon the opening of two great gates) I saw that there came towards me a reuerend olde man, clad in a tawny bayes frocke, that he dragged vpon the ground; ouer his shoulders and brest, he wore a tippet of greene sattin, like your fellowes of Colledges, and vpon his cap a blacke *Milan* bonet, and his hoary beard reached down to his girdle, he had no kind of weapon in his hand, but onely a *Rosary* of Beads, somewhat bigger then reasonable wal-nuts, and the *Credo*-Beads, about the bignesse of Ostrich egges, his countenance, pace, gravity, and his spreading presence, each thing by it selfe, and all together, suspended and admired.

He came to me, and the first thing he did, was to imbrace me straightly, and forthwith sayd; It is long since (renowned Knight, *Don Quixote de la Mancha*) that we, who liue in these enchanted Desarts, haue hoped to see thee, that thou mightst let the world know what is contained heere, and inclosed in this profound Caue, which thou hast entred; called *Montesinos*'s Caue: an exloyt reserved onely to be attempted by thy invincible Heart, and stupendious Courage. Come with mee; thou most Illustrious Knight, for I will shew thee the wonders that this transparent Castle doth conceale, of which I am the Gouvernour, and perpetuall chiefe Warder, as being the same *Montesinos*, from whom the Caue takes name.

Scarce had he told me that he was *Montesinos*, when I asked him, Whether it were true that was bruited heere in the world aboue, that he had taken his great friend *Durandartes* heart out of the midst of his bosome with a little dagger, and carried it to the Lady *Belerma* (as he willed) at the instant of his death? He answered me, that all was true, but onely that of the dagger, for it was no dagger, but a little Stiletto, as sharp as a Nawle.

Belike

Belike (quoth *Sancho*) it was of *Ramon de Hozes* the Seuillians making. I know not (sayd *Don Quixote*) but twas not of that Stiletto-maker, for he liued but the other day, and that battell of *Roncesvalles*, where this accident happened, was many yeeres since: but this auerring is of no importance or let, neither alters the truth, or Stories text.

You say right (quoth the Scholler) for I harken with the greatest delight in the world. With no lesse doe I tell it you (sayd *Don Quixote*) and proceede; The venerable *Montesinos* brought me into the Cristalline Palace, where in a low Hall, exceeding fresh and coole, all of Alabaster, was a great Sepulcher of Marble, made with singular Art, vpon which I saw a Knight layd at length, not of Brasse, Marble, or Iaspur, as you vse to haue in other tombes, but of pure flesh and bone, hee held his right hand (which was somewhat hairy and sinowy, a signe that the owner was very strong) vpon his heart-side, and before I asked *Montesinos* ought, that saw mee in suspence, beholding the tombe, he sayd:

This is my friend *Durandarte*, the flower and mirror of Chivalrie, of the enamoured and valiant Knights of his time: He is kept heere enchanted, as my selfe and many more Knights and Ladies are, by *Merlin* that French Enchanter; who, they say, was sonneto the the Denill, but as I beleue he was not so, only he knew more then the Deuill. Why, or how he enchanted vs, no body knowes, which the times will bring to light, that I hope are not farre off: all that I admire is, (since I know for certain, as it is now day, that *Durandarte* dyed in my armes, and that after he was dead, I tooke out his heart, and surely it weighed aboue two pounds; for according to naturall Philosophy, he that hath the biggest heart, is more valiant then he that hath but a lesse: which beeing so, and that this Knight died really) how he complaines and sighes sometimes as if he were aliue? Which said, the wretched *Durandarte*, crying out aloud, said; Oh my Cousin *Montesinos*, the last thing that I requested you when I was dying, and my soule departing, was, That you would carry my heart to *Belerma*, taking it out of my bosome, either with ponyard or dagger: which when the venerable *Montesinos* heard,

For so I translate it, to shew the Authours mistake.



heard, he kneeled before the greeued Knight, and with teares in his eyes, said; Long since, Oh *Durandarte*, long since my dearest Cousin, I did what you en-ioun'd me in that bitter day of our losse; I tooke your heart, as well as I could, without leauing the least part of it in your brest: I wiped it with a laced handkerchiefe, and posted with it towards France, hauing first layd you in the bosome of the earth, with so many teares as was sufficient to wash my hands, or to wipe off the bloud from them, which I had gotten by stirring them in your entrailles: and for more assurance that I did it, my dearest Cousin, at the first place I came to from *Roncesualle*, I cast salt vpon your heart, that it might not stinke, and might be fresh, and embalmed when it should come to the presence of the Lady *Belerma*, who with you and me, *Guadiana* your Squire, the waiting-woman *Ruydera*, and her seuen Daughters, and her two Nieces, and many other of your acquaintances and friends, haue beene enchanted heere by *Merlin* that Wizard long since, and though it be aboue fise hundred yeeres agoe, yet none of vs is dead; onely *Ruydera*, her Daughters and Nieces are wanting, whom by reason of their lamentation, *Merlin* that had compassion on them, turned them into so many Lakes now liuing in the world: and in the Prouince of Mancha they are called the Lakes of *Ruydera*; seuen belong to the Kings of Spaine, and the two Nieces to the Knights of the most holy Order of Saint *Iohn*. *Guadiana* your Squire, wailing in like manner this mis-hap, was turned into a Riuer that bore his owne name, who when hee came to the superficies of the earth, and saw the Sun in another heauen, such was his grieve to haue left you, that he straight plunged himselfe into the entrailles of the earth: but, as it is not possible for him to leaue his naturall Current, sometimes he appeares and shewes himselfe, where the Sunne and men may see him. The aforesaid Lakes do minister their waters to him, with which, and many others, hee enters Portugall in pompe: but which way so ere he goes, hee shewes his sorrow and melancholy, and contemnes the breeding of dainty fish in his waters, and such as are esteemed, but only mud-die and vsfauoric, farre differing from those of golden *Tagus*; and what I now tell you, Cousin mine, I haue told you often,

and

and since you answere mee nothing, I imagine you eyther beleeue me not, or not heare me; for which (God knowes) I am heartily sorry. One newes I will let you know, which, though perhaps it may not any way lighten your grieve, yet it will no way increase it: Know, that you haue heere in your presence, (open your eyes and you shall see him) that famous Knight, of whom *Merlin* prophesied such great matters, that *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, I say, that now newly and more happily then former Ages, hath raised the long-forgotten Knight Errantry, by whose meanes and fauour, it may be, that we also may be disin-chanted; for great exploits are reserued for great Personages. And if it be otherwise (answered the grieued *Durandarte*) with a faint and low voyce, if it be otherwise, oh Cousin, I say, b Pa-

tiencie and shuffle: and turning on one side, hee returned to his accustomed silence, without speaking one word. By this wee heard great howling and moane, accompanied with deepe sighes, and short-breath'd accents: I turned mee about, and saw that in another roome there came passing by the Christall waters, a procession of a company of most beautifull Damozels, in two rankes, all clad in mourning, with Turbants vpon their heads, after the Turkish fashion; at last, and in the end of the rankes, there came a Lady, who by her maiesty appeared so, clothed in like manner in blacke, with a white dressing on her head, so large, that it kissed the very ground. Her Turbant was twice as bigge as the biggest of the rest, shee was somewhat beetle-brow'd, flatte-nosed, wide-mouth'd, but redde-lipped: her teeth, for sometimes shee discovered them, seemed to be thin, and not very-well placed, though they were as white as blancht Almonds; in her hand shee carried a fine cloth, and within it (as might be perceiued) a Mommied heart, by reason of the dry embalming of it: *Montesinos* told me, that all those in that procession, were seruants to *Durandarte* and *Belerma*, that were there enchanted with their Masters, & that shee that came last with the linnen cloth and the heart in her hand, was the Lady *Belerma*, who, together with hir Damozels, four daies in the weeke did make that procession, singing, or to say truer, howling their Dirges ouer the body & greeued heart of his Cousin,

L 4

and

b *Patiencia* y bairar. A Metaphor taken from Cardplayers, who when they lose, cry to the dealer, *Patiencia*, and shuffle the Cards.



and that if now she appeared somewhat foule to mee, or not so faire as Fame hath giuen out, the cause was; her bad nights, but worse daies that she indured in that enchantment; as I might see by her deepe-sunke eyes, and her broken complexion, and her monthly disease, is not the cause of these, (an ordinary thing in women) for it is many moneths since, and many yeeres, that she hath not had it, nor knowne what it is; but the griefe that shee hath in her owne heart, for that she carries in her hand continually, which renewes and brings to her remembrance, the vnfortunatenesse of her lucklesse Louer; for if it were not for this, scarce would the famous *Dulcinea del Toboso* equall her in beauty, wit, or liueliness, that is so famous in the *Mancha*, and all the world ouer. Not too fast (then said I) Signior *Don Montesinos*, on with your story as befits; for you know, all comparisons are odious, and so leaue your comparing, the peerlesse *Dulcinea del Toboso* is what she is, and the Lady *Belerma* is what she is and hath beene; and let this suffice.

To which he answered, Pardon me Signior *Don Quixote*, for I confesse I did ill, and not wel to say, the Lady *Dulcinea* would scarce equall the Lady *Belerma*, since it had beene sufficient, that I vnderstood (I know not by what aime) that you are her Knight, enough to haue made me bite my tongue, before I had compared her with any thing but heauen it selfe. With this satisfaction that *Montesinos* gaue me, my heart was free from that sodaine passion I had, to heare my Mistresse compared to *Belerma*.

And I maruell (said *Sancho*) that you got not to the olde Carle and bang'd his bones, and pulled his beard, without leauing him a haire in it.

No, friend *Sancho*, said he, it was not fit for me to doe so; for wee are all bound to reuerence our Elders, although they be no Knights, and most of all when they are so, and are enchanted. I know well enough, I was not behinde-hand with him in other questions and answeres that passed betweene vs. Then said the Scholler, I know not, Signior *Don Quixote*, how you in so little time (as it is since you went downe) haue seene so many things, and spoken & answered so much. How long is it (quoth he)

he) since I went downe? A little more then an houre (said *Sancho*.) That cannot be (replyed *Don Quixote*) because it vvas morning and euening, and euening and morning three times; so that by my account, I haue beene three daies in those parts so remote and hidden from our sight. Surely, my Master (quoth *Sancho*) is in the right; for as all things that befall him are by way of enchantment; so perhaps, that which appears to vs but an houre, is to him there, three nights and three dayes. He hath hit it (said *Don Quixote*.) And haue you eat, Sir, in all this time (quoth the Scholler?) Not a bit (quoth *Don Quixote*) neyther haue I beene hungry, or so much as thought of eating. And the enchanted, eat they, said the Scholler? No, said he, neyther are they troubled with your greater excrements, although it be probable that their nailes, their beards, and their haire grow. Sleep they haply, said *Sancho*? No indeed, said *Don Quixote*, at least these three daies that I haue beene with them, not one of them hath closed his eyes, nor I neyther. That fits the Prouerb, quoth *Sancho*, which sayes, You shall know the person by his company: you haue beene amongst the enchanted, and those that watch & fast: no manuell therefore though you neyther slepe nor eat whilest you vvere amongst them; but pray, Sir, pardon me, if I say, God (or the Deuill I was about to say) take me, if I beleue a word of all this you haue spoken. Why not, said the Scholler? doe you thinke Signior *Don Quixote* would lye to vs, for though he would, hee hath not had time to compose or inuent such a million of lies? I doe not beleue (quoth *Sancho*) that my Master lies. But vvhath doe you beleue then (quoth *Don Quixote*?) Mary I beleue (said *Sancho*) that that *Merlin*, or those Enchanters that enchanted all that rabble, that you say you haue seene and conuersed with there below, clapt into your apprehension or memory all this Machine that you haue told vs, and all that remaines yet to be told. All this may be, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, but 'tis otherwise; for vvhath I haue told, I saw vwith these eyes, and felt vwith these hands: but vvhath vuilt thou say when I shall tell thee, that, amongst infinite other matters and vvonders, that *Montesinos* shewed me, which at more leisure, and at fitting time in proceesse of our journey I shall tell thee:

thee: He shewed me three Country wenches, that went leaping and frisking vp and downe those pleasant fields like Goats, and I scarce saw them, vvhhen I perceiued the one was the peerlesse *Dulcinea*, and the other two the selfe-same that wee spoke to when vvee left *Toboso*. I asked *Montesinos* vvwhether hee knew them: vvho answered me, Not: but that sure they vvvere some Ladies of quality there enchanted, that but lately appeared in those fields, and that it vvas no vvonder; for that there vvvere many others of former times & these present, that were enchanted in strange and different shapes, amongst whom hee knew Queene *Gwiniver*, and her vvoman *Quintaniona* filling *Lansfrotos* cups vvhen he came from Britaine.

When *Sancho* heard his Master thus farre, it made him starke madde, and ready to burst vvith laughter; for by reason that he knew the truth of *Dulcinea's* enchantment, as hauing been himselfe the Enchanter, and the raiser of that tale, hee did vndoubtedly ratifie his beliefe, that his Master was madde and out of his vvittes; and so told him: In an ill time, and dismall day (Patron mine) vvvent you downe into the other vvorld, and at an ill season met you with Signior *Montesinos*, that hath returned you in this pickle: you vvvere vvell enough heere aboute, in your right sences as God hath giuen them you, vvuttering sentences, & giuing good counsaile euery foote, and not as now telling the greatest vnlikelihoods that can be imagined.

Because I know thee, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) I make no account of thy words. Nor I of yours, said hee: you may strike or kill me if you will, eyther for those I haue spoken, or those I meane to speake, if you doe not correct and amend your selfe. But pray tell me, Sir, vvwhilest we are quiet, how knew you it was our Mistris? spoke you to her? what said shee, and what answered you? I knew her, said *Don Quixote*, by the same clothes she had on at such time as thou shewd'st her me: I spoke to her, but she gaue me not a word, but turned her backe, and scudded away so fast, that a flight would not haue ouertaken her: I meant to haue followed her, and had done it, but that *Montesinos* told mee it was in vaine, and the rather, because it was now high time for me to returne out of the Caue. He told me like-

wife,

wife, that in procelle of time, he would let me know the meanes of disenchanting *Durandarte*, and *Belerma* & himselfe, together with all the rest that were there: But that which most greened me, was; that vvwhilest I was thus talking with *Montesinos*, one of the vnfortunate *Dulcinea's* companions came on one side of me (I not perceiuing it) and vvith teares in her eyes, and hollow voyce said to me; My Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso* commends her to you, and desires to know how you doe: and vvithall, because she is in great necessity, she desires you vvith all earnestnesse, that you would be pleased to lend her three shillings vpon this new Cotton Petticote that I bring you, or what you can spare; for she vvill pay you againe very shortly. This message held me in suspence and admiration: so that turning to Signior *Montesinos*, I asked him, Is it possible, Signior, that those of your better sort that be enchanted are in want? To vvvhich he answered, Belceue me, Signior *Don Quixote*, this necessity rangeth and extends it selfe euery where, and ouertakes all men, neither spares shee the Enchanted; and therefore since the Lady *Dulcinea* demaunds these three shillings of you, and that the pawne seemes to bee good, lend them her, for sure shee is much straightned. I vvill take no pawne (quoth I) neither can I lend what shee requires, for I haue but two shillings: these I gaue, vvvhich were the same, *Sancho*, that thou gauest me tother day, to giue for almes to the poore that we met: and I told the Mayd, Friend, tell your Mistris that I am sorry vvithal my heart for her vvants, & I vvould I vvvere a *Fuicar* to relecue them; and let her know vv, that I neither

can, nor may haue health, vvwanting her pleasing company, and discreet conuersation, and that I desire her, as earnestly as may be, that this her Captiue Seruant and Way-beaten Knight may see and treat vvith her.

You shall also say, that vvwhen she least thinkes of it, shee shall heare say, that I haue made an oath and vvovv, such as vvvas the Marquis his of *Mantua*, to reuenge his Nephue *Baldwine*, vvwhen he found him ready to giue vp the ghost in the midst of the mountaine; vvvhich vvvas, not to eat his meat vvith napkins, and other Flim-flams added therunto, till he had reuenged his death: And so sylvcar I, not to be quiet, till I haue trauelled all the seven partitions.

*Fuicars*, were a rich family, & name in Germany that maintained a banke of monies in Spain, & still vsed to furnish *Philip* the 2. vvith monies in his warres.

partitions of the world, more punctually then Prince *Don Manuel* of Portugall, till I haue dis-encharmed her. All this and more you owe to my Mistresse, said the Damozell; and taking the two shillings, in stead of making me a courtesie, she fetcht a caper two yards high in the ayre.

Blessed God! (*Sancho* cryed out) & is it possible that Enchanters and Enchantments should so much preuaile vpon him, as to turn his right vnderstanding into such a wilde madnes? Sir, Sir, for Gods loue haue a care of your selfe, & looke to your credit: belecue not in these bubbles that haue lessened and crazed your wits. Out of thy loue, *Sancho*, thou speakest this (said *Don Quixote*) and for want of experience in the world, all things that haue neuer so little difficulty seeme to thee to be impossible: but time will come (as I haue told thee already) that I shall relate some things that I haue seene before, which may make thee belecue what I haue said, vvhich admits no reply, or controuerlie.

#### CHAP. XXIIII.

*where are recounted a thousand slim-flams, as impertinent, as necessary to the understanding of this famous History.*

**T**He Translator of this famous History out of his Originall, written by *Cid Hamete Benengeli*, sayes; That when hee came to the last chapter going before, these words were written in the Margin by the same *Hamete*. I cannot beleue or be perswaded, that all that is written in the antecedent Chapter hapned so punctually to the valerous *Don Quixote*: the reason is, because all Aduentures hitherto haue beene accidentall and probable; but this of the Caue, I see no likelihood of the truth of it, as being so vn-reasonable: Yet to thinke *Don Quixote* would lye, being the worthiest Gentleman, and noblest Knight of his time, is not possible; for he would not lye, though he were shot to death vwith arrowes. On the other side I consider, that

he

he related it, with all the aforesaid circumstances, and that in so short a time, hee could not frame such a Machina of fopperies, and if this Aduenture seeme to be Apocrypha, the fault is not mine: so that leauing it indifferent, I here set it downe. Thou, Oh Reader, as thou art wise, iudge as thou thinkest good; for I can doe no more, though one thing be certaine, that vvhhen hee was vpon his death-bed, he disclaimed this Aduenture, and said, That he had onely inuented it, because it suited with such as hee had read of in his Histories: so he proceeds, saying:

The Scholler wondred, as well at *Sancho's* boldnesse, as his Masters patience, but he thought, that by reason of the ioy that he receiued in hauing seene his Mistresse *Dulcinea* (though enchanted) that softnesse of condition grew vpon him; for had it beene otherwise, *Sancho* spoke words that might haue grinded him to powder: for in his opinion he was somewhat sawcy with his Master, to whom he said:

Signior *Don Quixote*, I thinke the iourney that I haue made with you, very wel employd, because in it I haue stored vp foure things. The first is, the hauing knowne your selfe, vvhich I esteeme as a great happinesse. The second, to haue knowne the secrets of this *Montesinos* Caue, with the transformations of *Gnadiana* and *Ruydera's* Lakes, which may helpe me in my Spanish *Onid* I haue in hand: The third is, to know the Antiquity of Card-playing, which was vsed at least in time of the Emperor *Charles* the Great, as may be collected out of the words you say *Durandarte* vsed, when after a long speech betweene him and *Montesinos*, hee awakened saying; Patience, and shuffle: and this kind of speaking, he could not learne when he was enchanted, but when hee liued in France, in time of the aforesaid Emperor: and this obseruation comes in pudding time for the other booke that I am making, which is, My supply to *Polydore Vergil*, in the inuention of Antiquities, and I beleue, in his hee left our Cards, which I will put in, as a matter of great importance, especially hauing so authentike an author as Signior *Durandarte*. The fourth is, to haue knowne for a certaine the true spring of the River *Gnadiana*, which hath hitherto beene concealed.

<sup>a</sup> A name gi-  
uen to men of  
title, as Dukes,  
Marquisses, or  
Earles in  
Spaine, whose  
onely priui-  
ledge is to  
stand couered  
before the  
King.

You haue reason (sayd *Don Quixote* :) but I would faine know of you, now that it pleased God to giue you abilities to print your bookes, To whom will you direct them? You haue Lords and <sup>a</sup> *Grandes* in Spaine (sayd the Scholler) to whom I may direct them. Few of them (sayd *Don Quixote*) not because they do not deserue the dedications, but because they will not admit of them, not to oblige themselves to the satisfaction, that is due to the Authors paines and courtesie. One Prince I know, that may supply the deserts of the rest, with such aduantage, that should I speake of it, it might stirre vp enuy in some noble breasts: but let this rest till some fit time, and let vs looke out where we may lodge too night.

Not farre from hence (sayd the Scholler) there is a Hermitage, where dwels a Hermit, that they say hath been a Souldior, and is thought to bee a good Chrillian, and very discrete, and charitable. Besides the Hermitage, he hath a little house, which he hath built at his owne charge, yet though it be little, it is fit to receiue ghests. Hath hee any Hens, trow (sayd *Sancho*?) Few Hermits are without vni (quoth *Don Quixote* :) for your Hermits now adayes, are not like those that liued in the Desarts of *Egypt*, that were clad in Palme-leaues, and liued vpon the roots of the earth: but mistake me not, that because I speake well of them, I should speake ill of these, onely the penitency of these times comes not neere those: yet for ought I know, all are good, at least I think so, and if the worst come to the worst, your Hypocrite that faines himselfe good, doth lesse hurt then he that sinnes in publike.

<sup>b</sup> *Ventes*, Places in Spaine, in barren vn-peopled parts for lodging, like our beggerly Ale-houses vpon the High-ways.

As they were thus talking, they might espy a Foot-man coming towards them, going apace, and beating with his wand a Hee-Mule laden with Lances and Halberds; when hee came neere them, hee saluted them, and passed on: but *Don Quixote* sayd to him; Honest fellow, stay, for me thinkes you make your Mule goe faster then needes. I cannot stay, Sir (sayd he) because these weapons that you see I carry, must be vsed to morrow morning: so I must needs goe on my way, Farewell: But if you will know why I carry them, I shall lodge to night in the <sup>b</sup> *Vente* about the Hermitage, and if you goe that way, there you shall haue

haue me, and I will tell you wonders: and so once more, Farewell. So the Mule pricked on so fast, that *Don Quixote* had no leisure to aske him, what wonders they were; and as hee was curious, and alwayes desirous of nouelties, hee took order that they should presently go and passe that night in the *Vente*, without touching at the Hermitage, where the Scholler would haue stayed that night.

So all three of them mounted, went toward the *Vente*, whether they reached somewhat before it grew darke, and the Scholler inuited *Don Quixote* to drinke a sup by the way at the Hermitage: which as soon as *Sancho* heard, he made halte with Dapple, as did *Don Quixote* and the Scholler likewise: but as *Sancho's* ill lucke would haue it, the Hermit was not at home, as was told them by the Vnder-Hermit: they asked him whether he had any of the dearer sort of wine? who answered, His Master had none: but if they would haue any cheape water, hee would giue it them with a good will. If my thirst would be quencht with water, wee might haue had Wels to drinke at by the way. Ah *Camacho's* marriage, and *Don Diego's* plenty, how oft shall I misse you? Now they left the Hermitage, and spurred toward the *Vente*, and a little before them, they ouertooke a Youth, that went not very fast before them; so they ouertooke him: he had a sword vpon his shoulder, and vpon it, as it seemed, a bundle of clothes, as breeches, and cloke, and a shirt; for he wore a veluet ierkin, that had some kinde of remainder of satin, and his shirt hung out, his stockings were of silke, and his shooes square attoe, after the Court-fashion, he was about eightene yeeres of age, and active of body to see to: to passe the tediousnesse of the way, he went singing short pieces of songs, and as they came neere him, he made an end of one, which the Scholler (they say learnt by heart) and it was this:

*To the warres I goe for necessity,*

*At home would I tarry, if I had money.*

*Don Quixote* was the first that spoke to him, saying; You go very naked, Sir Gallant. And whither, a Gods name? Let's know, if it be your pleasure to tell vs? To which the Youth answered, Heat and pouerty are the causes that I walke so light, and

and my journey is to the wars. Why for pouerty (quoth *Don Quixote*?) for heat it may well be. Sir (sayd the Youth) I carry in this bundle a paire of slops, fellowes to this Ierken, if I weare vñ by the way, I shall doe my selfe no credit with them when I come to any towne, and I haue no money to buy others with, so as well for this, as to aire my selfe, I goe till I can ouer-take certaine companies of Foot, which are not about twelue leagues from hence, where I shall get me a place, and shall not want cariages to trauell in, till I come to our imbarcking place, which (they say) must be in *Cartagena*, and I had rather haue the King to my Master, and serue him, then a beggerly Courtier. And haue you any extraordinary pay, sayd the Scholler?

Had I serued any *Grande*, or man of quality (sayd the Youth) no doubt I should; for that comes by your seruing good Masters, that out of the Scullery men come to bee Lieutenants or Capitaines, or to haue some good pay: but I alwayes had the ill lucke to serue your Shag-rags and Vp-starts, whose allowance was so bare and short, that one halfe of it still was spent in starching me a ruffe, and it is a miracle, that one ventring Page amongst an hundred, should euer get any reasonable fortune. But tell me, Friend (quoth *Don Quixote*) Is it possible, that in all the time you serued, you neuer got a Liuary? Two (sayd the Page:) But as he that goes out of a Monastery, before he professeth, hath his habit taken from him, and his clothes giuen him backe: so my Masters returned me mine, when they had ended their businesses, for which they came to the Court for, and returned to their owne homes, & with-held their Liuries, which they had onely shewed for ostentation.

\* Gallionry.

A notable *Esphilocherio*, as saith your *Italian* (quoth *Don Quixote*) for all that, thinke your selfe happy that you are come from the Court, with so good an intention, for there is nothing in the world better, nor more profitable, then to serue God first, and next, your Prince and naturall Master, especially in the practice of Armes, by which, if not more wealth, yet at least, more honour is obtained, then by Learning, as I haue sayd many times, that though Learning hath raised more houses then Armes, yet your Sword-men haue a kind of (I know not what)

aduantage

aduantage about Schollers, with a kinde of splendor, that doth aduantage them ouer all.

And beare in your minde what I shall now tell you, which shall be much for your good, and much lighten you in your trauels, that is, not to thinke vpon aduersity; for the worst that can come is death, which if it be a good death, the best fortune of all is to die. *Iulius Cesar*, that braue Romane Emperour, being asked, Which was the best death? answered, A sudden one & vnthought of; and though he answered like a Gentile, and voyd of the knowledge of the true God, yet he sayd well, to saue humane feeling a labour; for say you should bee slaine in the first skirmish, either with a Canon-shot, or blowne vp with a Mine, What matter is it? All is but dying, and there's an end: And as *Terence* sayes, A Souldier slaine in the field, shewes better, then aliue and safe in flight; and so much the more famous is a good Souldiour, by how much hee obeyes his Capitaines, and those that may command him; and marke, childe, it is better for a Souldiour to smell of his gun-powder, then of ciuet; and when olde age comes vpon you in this honourable exercise, though you be full of scarres, maimed, or lame, at least, you shall not be without honour, which pouerty cannot diminish; and besides, there is order taken now, that olde and maimed Souldiers may be releued; neither are they dealt withall like those mens Negars, that when they are olde and can doe their Masters no seruice, they (vnder colour of making them free) turne them out of doores, and make them slaues to hunger, from which nothing can free them but death, and for this time I will say no more to you, but onely get vp behinde me till you come to the *Vente*, and there you shall sup with me, and to morrow take your journey, which God speede, as your desires deserue.

\* He describes the right subtil and cruell nature of his damned Country-men.

The Page accepted not of his inuitement, to ride behinde him; but for the supper hee did: And at this season (they say) *Sancho* sayd to himselfe; Lord defend thee, Master; And is it possible, that a man that knowes to speake such, so many, and so good things (as hee hath sayd heere) should say hee hath scene such impossible fooleries, as he hath told vs of *Montesino's* Caue. Well, wee shall see what will become of it. And by this they

M

came

<sup>b</sup> Ventero, the  
Master of the  
Vente.

came to the *Vente* iust as it was night, for which *Sancho* was glad, because too his Master tooke it to be a true *Vente*, and not a Castle, as hee was wont. They were no sooner entred, when *Don Quixote* asked the <sup>b</sup> *Venter* for the man with the Lances and Halberds, who answered him, hee was in the stable looking to his Moyle: *Sancho* and the Scholler did the same to their Asse, giuing *Don Quixotes* *Rozinante* the best manger and roome in the stable.

## CHAP. XXV.

*Of the Aduenture of the Braying, and the merry one of the Puppet-man, with the memorable southsaying of the prophesying Ape.*

**D**ON *Quixote* stood vpon thornes, till hee might heare and know the promised wonders, of the man that carried the Armes, and went where the *Venter* had tolde him, to seeke him; where finding him, hee sayd; That by all meanes he must tell him presently, what hee had promised him vpon the way. The man answered him, The story of the wonders requires more leisure, and must not bee told thus standing: good Sir let mee make an end of prouandring my Beast, and I will tell you things that shall admire you.

Let not that hinder you (quoth *Don Quixote*) for Ile helpe you: and so he did, sifting his barley, and cleansing the manger (a humility that obliged the fellow to tell him his tale heartily:) thus sitting downe vpon a bench, *Don Quixote* by him, with the Scholler, Page, and *Sancho*, and the *Venter*, for his complete Senate and Auditory, he began:

You shall vnderstand, that in a towne, some foure leagues and an halfe from this *Vente*, it fell out, that an Alderman there, by a trick and wile of a wench, his mayd-seruant (which were long to tell how) lost his Asse, and though the sayd Alderman vsed all manner of diligence to finde him, it was impossible. His Asse was wanting (as the publike voyce and fame goeth) fifteene dayes:

dayes: when the Alderman that lost him, being in the market-place, another Alderman of the same towne told him; Pay mee for my newes, Gossip, for your Asse is forth-comming. I will willingly, Gossip (sayd the other) but let me know where he is? This morning (sayd the Second) I saw him vpon the mountaines without his pack-saddle, or any other furniture, so leane, that it was pittie to see him, I would haue gotten him before me, and haue driuen him to you, but hee is so mountainous and wilde, that when I made towards him, hee flew from mee, and got into the thickest of the wood: If you please, wee will both returne and seeke him, let me first put vp this Asse at home, and Ile come by and by. You shall doe me a great kindnesse (quoth he) and I will repay you (if neede be) in the like kinde.

With all these circumstances, iust as I tell you, all that know the truth, relate it: In fine, the two Aldermen, afoot and hand to hand, went to the Hills, and comming to the place where they thought to finde the Asse, they missed of him, neither could they finde him, for all their seeking round-about. Seeing then there was no appearance of him, the Alderman that had seene him, sayd to the other; Harke you, Gossip, I haue a trick in my head, with which we shall finde out this Beast, though hee bee hidden vnder ground, much more if in the mountaine: Thus it is, I can bray excellent well, and so can you a little: well, tis a match. A little, Gossip (quoth the other) Verily, Ile take no ods of any body, nor of an Asse himselte. We shall see then (said the second Alderman) for my plot is, that you goe on one side of the hill, and I on the other, so that wee may compasse it round, now and then you shall bray, and so will I, and it cannot bee, but that your Asse will answer one of vs, if hee bee in the mountaine.

To this the owner of the Asse answered; I tell you, Gossip, the deuice is rare, and worthy your great wit: so diuiding themselves (according to the agreement) it fell out, that iust at one instant both brayed, and each of them coozened with the others braying, came to looke another, thinking now there had beene newes of the Asse: And as they met, the Loofer sayd; Is it possible, Gossip, that it was not mine Asse that brayed? No, twas I, sayd



sayd the other. Then (replide the Owner) Gossip, betweene you and an Asse there is no difference, touching your braying; for in my life I neuer heard a thing more naturall.

These praises and extollings (sayd the other) doe more properly belong to you then mee, for truly you may giue two to one, to the best and skilfullest Brayer in the world; for your sound is lofty, you keepe very good time, and your cadences thicke and sudden: To conclude, I yeeld my selfe vanquished, and giue you the prize and glory of this rare ability. Well (sayd the Owner) I shall like my selfe the better for this heereafter, and shall thinke I know something, since I haue gotten a quality, for though I euer thought I brayed well, yet I neuer thought I was so excellent at it, as you say.

Let me tell you (sayd the other) there bee rare abilities in the world, that are lost and ill-mployed, in those that will not good them-selues with them. Ours (quoth the Owner) can do vs no good, but in such busineses as wee haue now in hand, and pray God in this they may.

This sayd, they diuided them-selues againe, and returned to their braying, and euery foot they were deceiued, and met; till they agreed vpon a counter-signe, that to know twas them-selues, and not the Asse, they should bray twice together: so that with this doubling their brayes, euery stich-while they compassed the hill, the lost Asse not answering so much, as by the least signe; but how could the poore and ill-thriuing Beast answer, when they found him in the Thicket eaten with Wolues? And his Owner seeing him, sayd; I marvelled he did not answer; for if he had not been dead, he would haue brayed, if he had heard vs, or else he had beene no Asse: but if faith, Gossip, since I haue heard your delicate braying, I thinke my paines well bestowed in looking this Asse, though I haue found him dead.

*a En buena mano esta. Alluding to two, that strue to make one another drinke first.*

*b The one as very an Asse as the other.*

*a* Tis in a very good hand, Gossip (sayd the other:) And if the Abbot sing well, *b* the little Monke comes not behinde him. With this, all comfortlesse and hoarse, home they went, where they told their Friends, Neighbours, and Acquaintances, what had happened in the search for the Asse, the one exaggerating the

the others cunning in braying; all which was knowne and spread abroad in the neighboring townes: And the Deuill, that alwaies watcheth how he may sow & scatter quarrels and discord euery where, raising brabbles in the aire, and making great Chimæras of nothing, made the people of other townes, that when they saw any of ours, they should bray, as hitting vs in the teeth with our Aldermens braying.

The Boyes at length fell to it, which was, as if it had falne into the iawes of all the Deuils in Hell, so this braying spread it selfe from one towne to the other, that they which are borne in our towne, are as well knowne as the begger knowes his dish; and this vnfortunate scoffe hath proceeded so farre, that many times those that were scoffed at, haue gone out armed in a whole Squadron, to giue battell to the Scoffers, without feare or wit, neither King nor Keisar being able to preuent them: I beleue, that to morrow or next day, those of my towne will be in field (to wit, the Brayers) against the next towne, which is two leagues off, one of them that doth most persecute vs; and because we might be well provided, I haue bought those Halberds and Lances, that you saw. And these be the wonders, that I said I would tell you of: and if these bee not so, I know not what may.

And heere the poore fellow ended his discourse: and now there entred at the doore of the *Vente*, one clad all in Chamois, in hose and doublet, and called aloud; Mine Oast, haue you any lodging? for here comes the prophesying Ape, and the Motion of *Melisendra*. Body of me (quoth the *Venter*) heere is Master *Peter*, we shall haue a braue night of it (I had forgot to tell how this Master *Peter* had his left eye, and halfe his cheek, covered with a patch of green Tassata, a signe that all that side was sore:) so the *Venter* proceeded, saying; You are welcome, Master *Peter*, Where's the Ape and the Motion, that I see ym not? They are not farre off (quoth the Chamois-man) onely I am come before, to know if you haue any lodging?

I would make bold with the Duke of *Alua* himselfe (sayd the *Venter*) rather then Master *Peter* should bee disappoynted: let your Ape and your Motion come; for wee haue ghesse heere



to night, that will pay for seeing that, and the Apes abilities. In good time (sayd hee of the Patch) for I will moderate the price, so my charges this night be payd for; and therefore I will cause the Cart where they are, to driue on: with this hee went out of the *Vente* againe. *Don Quixote* straight asked the *Venter*, What Master *Peter* that was, and what Motion or Ape those he brought?

To which the *Venter* answered; He is a famous Puppet-Master, that this long time hath gone vp & down these parts of Aragon, shewing this motion of *Melisendra*, & *Don Gayseros*, one of the best histories that hath bin represented these many yeeres in this kingdom. Besides, he hath an Ape, the strangest that euer was; for if you aske him any thing, he marketh what you aske, and gets vp vpon his Masters shoulder, and tells him in his eare by way of answer, what he was asked: which Master *Peter* declares: he tells things to come, as well as things past, and though he doe not alwaies hit vpon the right, yet he seldome erres, and makes vs beleue the Deuill is in him. Twelue pence for euery answer we giue, if the Ape doe answer, I meane, if his Master answer for him, after hee hath whispered in his eare; so it is thought that Master *Peter* is very rich, he is a notable fellow, & (as your Italian saith) a boon companion; hath the best life in the world, talkes his share for sixe men, and drinks for a doozen, all at his Tongues charge, his Motion, and his Apes.

By this, Master *Peter* was return'd, and his Motion and Ape came in a smal carriage; his Ape was of a good bignesse, without a tayle, & his bumme as bare as a Felt, but not very ill-fauoured. *Don Quixote* scarce beheld him, when hee demanded, Master Prophesier, What fish doe we catch? Tell vs what will become of vs, and heere is twelue-pence, which he commanded *Sancho* to giue Master *Peter*; who answered for the Ape and said: Sir, this beast answeres not, nor giues any notice of things to come, of things past hee knowes something, and likewise a little of things present. *Zwookers* (quoth *Sancho*) He not giue a far-thing to know what is past: for who can tell that better then my selfe? and to pay for what I know, is most foolish: but since you say hee knowes things present, heere's my twelue-pence, and  
let

let good-man Ape tell me what my wife *Teresa Panfa* doth, and in what shee busies her selfe. Master *Peter* would not take his mony, saying; I will not take your reward before-hand, till the Ape hath first done his duty: so giuing a clap or two with his right hand on his left shoulder, at one friske the Ape got vp, and laying his mouth to his eare, grated his teeth apace, and hauing shewed this feat the space of a Creeds saying, at another frisk he leapt to the ground, and instantly Master *Peter* very hastily ran and kneeled downe before *Don Quixote*, & embracing his legs, said: These legges I embrace, as if they were *Hercules* Pillars. O famous reuuer of the long-forgotten Knight Errantry! Oh neuer sufficiently extolled Knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*! raiser of the faint-hearted, propper of those that fall, the stalle & comfort of all the vnfortunate! *Don Quixote* was amazed, *Sancho* confus'd, the Scholler in suspence, the Page astonisht, the Bray townes-man all in a gaze, the *Venter* at his wittes end, and all admiring that heard the Puppet-mans speech, who went on, saying:

And thou honest *Sancho Panfa*, the best Squire to the best Knight of the world, reioyce, for thy wife *Teresa* is a good houl-wife, and at this time shee is dressing a pound of flaxe; by the same token shee hath a good broken-mouth'd pot at her left side, that holds a pretty scantling of wine, with which shee easeth her labour.

I beleue that very well (sayd *Sancho*) for shee is a good soule; and if she were not iealous, I would not change her for the Gyantesse *Andandona*, that, as my Master sayes, was a vvoman for the nonce: and my *Teresa* is one of those that will not pine her selfe, though her heyres smart for it.

Well, I say now (quoth *Don Quixote*) he that reades much, and trauels much, sees much, and knowes much. This I say, for who in the world could haue perswaded mee that Apes could prophesie? which now I haue seene with mine owne eyes; for I am the same *Don Quixote* that this beast speakes of, although he haue bin somewhat too liberall in my praise: but howsoeuer I am, I giue God thanks that he hath made me so relenting and compassionate; alwaies enclined to do good to all, & hurt to no man.

If I had money (said the Page) I would aske Mr. Ape vvhhat should befall me in the peregrination I haue in hand. To which Master *Peter* answered, that was now risen from *Don Quixotes* foot, I haue told you once that this little beaft foretels not things to come; for if he could, twere no matter for your mony: for heere is Signior *Don Quixote* present, for whose sake I vvould forgoe all the Interell in the world: and to shew my duety to him, and to giue him delight, I vvill set vp my Motion, and freely shew all the company in the Vent some pastime gratis. Which the Venter hearing, vnmeasurably glad, pointed him to a place where he might set it vp; which was done in an instant.

*Don Quixote* liked not the Apes prophesying very well, holding it to be friuolous, that an Ape should onely tell things present, & not past, or to come. So whilest Master *Peter* was fitting his Motion, *Don Quixote* tooke *Sancho* with him to a corner of the stable, and in priuate said:

Looke thee, *Sancho*, I haue very well considered of this Apes strange quality, and finde that this Master *Peter* hath made a secret expresse compact with the Deuill, to infuse this ability into the Ape, that he may get his living by it, and when he is rich, he will giue him his soule; which is that, that this vniuersall enemy of mankind pretends: and that which induceth me to this beliefe, is, that the Ape answers not to things past, but onely present; and the Devils knowledge attaines to no more; for things to come he knowes not, only by coniecture: for God alone can distinguish the times and moments, and to him nothing is past or to come, but all is present: Which being so, it is most certaine that this Ape speakes by instinct from the Deuill, and I wonder he hath not beene accused to the Inquisition, and examined, and that it hath not beene pressed out of him, to know by what vertue this Ape prophesieth; for certainly, neyther he nor his Ape are Astrologers, nor know how to cast figures, which they call iudiciary, so much vsed in Spaine: for you haue no paltry Woman, nor Page, nor Cobler, that presumes not to cast a figure, as if it were one of the knaues at Cards vpon a table, falsifying that wondrous Science with their ignorant lying.

I knew

I knew a Gentlewoman that asked one of these Figure-slingers, if a little foyisting-hound of hers should haue any puppies, and if it had, how many, and of what colour the whelps should be. To which my cunning man (after hee had cast his figure) answered: That the bitch should haue young, and bring forth three little whelps, the one Greene, the other Carnation, and the third of a mixt colour, with this prouiso, that she should take the dogge betweene eleuen and twelue of the clocke at noone, or at night, which should be on the Munday, or the Saturday; and the successe was, that some two dayes after the bitch died of a surfet, and Master figure-raiser vvvas reputed in the towne a most perfect Iudiciary, as all, or the greatest part of such men are. For all that (said *Sancho*) I vvould you vvould bid Master *Peter* aske his Ape, vvwhether all vvvere true that befell you in *Montesino's* Caue; for I thinke (vnder correction) all vvvas cogging and lying, or at least but a dreame. All might be (said *Don Quixote*) yet I will doe as thou dost aduize me, though I haue one scruple remaining.

Whilest they were thus communing, Master *Peter* came to call *Don Quixote*, and to tell him that the Motion was now vp, if he would please to see it, vvwhich vvould giue him content.

*Don Quixote* told him his desire, and vvished that his Ape might tell him, if certaine things that befell him in *Montesino's* Caue vvvere true, or but dreames; for himselfe was vncertaine vvwhether. Master *Peter*, vvwithout answering a vvord, fetcht his Ape, and putting him before *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, saide, Looke you, Master Ape, Signior *Don Quixote* vvould haue you tell him, vvwhether certaine things that hapned to him in *Montesino's* Caue vvvere true or false? and making the accustomed signe, the Ape whipt vpon his left shoulder, and seeming to speake to him in his eare, Master *Peter* straight interpreted. The Ape, Signior, saies that part of those things are false, and part of them true, and this is all he knowes touching this demand; and now his vertue is gone from him, and if you vvill know any more, you must expect till Friday next, and then he will answer you all you will aske, for his vertue vvill not returne till then.

Law ye there (quoth *Sancho*) did not I tell you that I could not

not beleue that all you said of *Montesinos* Caue could hold currant? The successe heereafter will determine that (quoth *Don Quixote*) for time, the discoverer of all things, brings euery thing to the Sunnes light, though it be hidden in the bosome of the earth: and now let this suffice, and let vs goe see the Motion; for I beleue we shall haue some strange nouelty. Some strange one, quoth Master *Peter*? this Motion of mine hath a thousand strange ones: I tell you Signior, it is one of the rarest things to be seene in the vworld; *operibus credite & non verbis*: and now to worke, for it is late, and we haue much to doe, say, and shew.

*Don Quixote* and *Sancho* obeyed, and went where the Motion was set and opened, all full of little waxe lights, that made it most sightly and glorious. Master *Peter* straight clapped himselfe within it, who was hee that was to manage the artificiall Puppets, and without stood his boy to interpret and declare the mysteries of the Motion; in his hand hee had a vvhite vband, vvith which he pointed out the seuerall shapes that came in and out. Thus all that were in the *Vente* being placed, & some standing ouer-against the Motion, *Don Quixote*, *Sancho*, the Scholler and the Page, placed in the best seates, a the Trudge-man began to speak what shall be heard or seene, by him that shall heare or read the next Chapter.

a *El Turxanman*.  
An Interpreter amongst the Turks, but here taken for any in generall.

#### CHAP. XXVI.

*Of the delightfull passage of the Puppet-play, and other pleasant matters.*

**H**ere *Tyrians* and *Troyans* were all silent, I meane, all the spectators of the Motion had their eares hanged vpon the Interpreters mouth, that should declare the wonders; by and by there was a great sound of Kettle Drums, and Trumpets, and a volly of great shot within the Motion, which passing away briefly, the boy beganne to raise his voyce, and to say:

This true History which is here represented to you, is taken word

word for word out of the French Chronicles, and the Spanish Romants, which are in euery bodies mouth, and sung by boyes vp and downe the streets. It treats of the liberty that Signior *Don Gayferos* gaue to *Melifendra* his wife, that vvas imprisoned by the Moores in Spaine, in the City of *Sanfuen*, which was then so called, and now *Saragosa*; and looke you there, how *Don Gayferos* is playing at Tables, according to the song;

*Now Don Gayferos at Tables doth play,  
Vnmindfull of Melifendra away.*

And that Personage that peepes out there with a Crowne on his head, and a Scepter in his hand, is the Emperor *Charlemaine*, the supposed father of the said *Melifendra*, who grieued with the sloth and neglect of his Sonne in law, comes to chide him: and marke with what vehemency and earnestnesse he rates him, as if he meant to giue him halfe a doozen Connes with his Scepter. Some Authors there bee that say, hee did, and found ones top: and after he had told him many things concerning the danger of his reputation, if he did not free his Spouse, twas said hee told him, I haue said enough, looke to it. Looke ye Sir, againe, how the Emperor turnes his backe, and in what case hee leaues *Don Gayferos*, vvho all enraged flings the Tables and the table-men from him, and hastily calls for his Armour, and borrowes his Cousin Germane *Roldan* his sword *Durindana*; vvho offers him his company in this difficult enterprife. But the valorous enraged Knight would not accept it, saying; That hee is sufficient to free his Spouse, though she were put in the deepe Centre of the earth: and now hee goes in to Arme himselfe for his Iourney.

Now turne your eyes to yonder Tower that appeares, (for you) must suppose it is one of the Towers of the Castle of *Saragosa*, vvhich is now called the *Aliaferia*, and that Lady that appeares in the window, cladde in a Moorish habit, is the peerelesse *Melifendra*, that many a time lookes toward France, thinking on Paris and her spouse, the onely comforts in her imprisonment. Behold also a strange accident now that happens, perhaps neuer the like seene: see you not that Moore that comes faire and softly, with his finger in his mouth, behinde *Melifendra*?

*dra?* looke what a smacke he giues her in the midst of her lippes, and how sodainely shee begins to spit, and to wipe them vvith her white smocke sleue, and how she laments, and for very anguish despiteously rootes vp her faire hayres, as if they were to blame for this wickednesse. Marke you also that graue Moore, that stands in that open Gallery, it is *Marsilius* King of *Sansuenna*, who when he saw the Moores sawcinesse, although he were a kins-man, and a great fauourite of his, hee commanded him straight to bee apprehended, and to haue two hundreth stripes giuen him, and to be carried thorow the chiefe streets in the City, with minstrels before, and rods of Iustice behinde; and looke ye how the sentence is put in execution before the fault bee scarce committed; for your Moores vse not (as we doe) any legall proceeding. Childe, childe (cried *Don Quixote* aloud) on with your story in a direct line, and fall not into your crookes and your transuersals: for to verifie a thing I tell you, there had need be a Legall proceeding. Then Master *Peter* too said from vvithin; Boy, fall not you to your flourishes, but doe as that Gentleman commands you, which is the best course; sing you your plaine song, and meddle not vvith the treble, lest the strings breake. I will, Master (said the boy) and proceeded, saying:

He that you see there (quoth he) on horsebacke, cladde in a Gascoyne cloake, is *Don Gayferos* himselfe, to whom his Wife (now reuenged on the Moore for his boldnesse) shewes her selfe from the battlements of the Castle, taking him to bee some passenger, vvith vvhom shee passed all the discourse mentioned in the Romant, that sayes;

*Friend, if toward France you goe,  
Aske if Gayferos be there or no. &c.*

The rest I omit, for all prolixity is irksome, tis sufficient that you see there how *Don Gayferos* discouers himselfe, and by *Melifendra's* iocund behaiour, we may imagine shee knowes him, and the rather, because now we see, she lets her selfe down from a bay-window, to ride away behinde her good Spouse: but alas, vnhappy creature, one of the skirts of her kirtle hath caught vpon one of the yron barres of the window, and she hovers in the

the ayre, vvithout possibility of coming to the ground: but see how pittifull heauens relecue her in her greatest necessity; for *Don Gayferos* comes, and without any care of her rich Kirtle, layeshold of it, and forcibly brings her downe with him, and at one hoist sets her astride vpon his horses crupper, & commands her to sit fast, and clap her armes about him, that shee fail not; for *Melifendra* was not vsed to that kinde of riding. Looke you how the horse by his neighing shewes that he is proud with the burden of his valiant Master, and faire Mistresse. Look how they turne their backs to the City, and merrily take their vvay toward *Paris*. Peace be with you, O peerelesse couple of true Louers, safely may you arriue at your desired Country, without Fortunes hindering your prosperous voyage: may your friends and kindred see you enioy the rest of your yeeres (as many as *Nestors*) peaceably.

Heere Master *Peter* cryed out aloud againe, saying; Plainnesse, good boy, doe not you soare so high, this affectation is scuruy. The Interpreter answered nothing, but went on, saying, There wanted not some idle spectators that pry into euery thing, who saw the going downe of *Melifendra*, and gaue *Marsilius* notice of it, who straight commanded to sound an Alarme; and now behold, how fast the City euen sinkes againe with the noyse of bels that sound in the high Towers of the *Mesquits*.

There you are out by (said *Don Quixote*) and Master *Peter* is very improper in his belles; for amongst Moores you haue no bels, but Kettle-drummes, and a kinde of Shaulmes that bee like our Waytes, so that your sounding of bels in *Sansuenna* is a most idle foppery. Stand not vpon trifles, Signior *Don Quixote*, said Master *Peter*, and so strictly vpon euery thing, for we shall not know how to please you. Haue you not a thousand Comedies ordinarily represented, as full of incongruities and absurdities, and yet they runne their Carcere happily, and are heard, not only with applause, but great admiration also? On, boy, say on, & so I fill my purse, let there be as many improprieties as moates in the Sunne. You are the right (quoth *Don Quixote*) and the boy proceeded.

Looke what a company of gallant Knights goe out of the City

*a Mesquits, Moorish Churches.*

City in pursuit of the Catholike Louers, how many Trumpets sound, how many Shaulmes play, how many drummes & kettles make a noyse, I feare me they will ouer-take them, and bring them backe both bound to the same horses tayle, which would be a horrible spectacle.

*Don Quixote* seeing and hearing such a deale of Moorisme, and such a coyle, he thought fit to succour those that fled: so standing vp, with a loud voyce he cryed out; I will neuer consent while I liue, that in my presence, such an outrage as this, bee offered to so valiant, and so amorous a bold Knight, as *Don Gaysferos*: Stay, you base Scoundrels, doe not yee follow or persecute him: if you doe, you must first wage warre with mee: so doing and speaking, he vnsheathed his sword, and at one friske he got to the Motion, and with an vnscene and polting fury, he began to raine strokes vpon the Puppetish Moorisme, overthrowing some, and beheading others, maiming this, and cutting in pieces that, and amongst many other blowes, he fetcht one so downe right, that had not *Mr. Peter* tumbled and squatted downe, hee had clipped his Mazard as easily, as if it had beene made of March-pane. *Mr. Peter* cryed out, saying; Hold, Signior *Don Quixote*, hold; and know that these you hurle downe, destroy and kill, are not reall Moores, but shapes made of paste-board: Looke you, looke yee now (wretch that I am) hee spoyle all, and vndoos me. But for all this, *Don Quixote* still multiplied his slashes, doubling and redoubling his blowes, as thicke as hops.

And in a word, in lesse then two *Credo's*, he cast downe the whole Motion (all the tackling first cut to fitters, and all the Puppers) King *Marsilius* was fore wounded, and the Emperour *Charlemaine*, his head and crowne were parted in two places. the Senate and Auditors were all in a hurry, and the Ape gat vp to the top of the house, and so out at the window, the Scholler was frighted, the Page cleane dastarded, and euen *Sancho* himselfe was in a terrible perplexity, for (as he sware after the storme was past) he neuer saw his Master so outrageous.

The generall ruine of the Motion thus performed, *Don Quixote* began to bee somewhat pacified, and sayd; Now would I haue all those heere at this instant before mee, that belecue not,

how

how profitable Knights Errant are to the world; and had not I beene now present, what (I maruell) would haue becommen of Signior *Don Gaysferos*, and the faire *Melifendra*? I warrant, ere this, those dogs would haue ouertaken, and shewed them some foule play: when all is done, long liue Knight Errantry, about all things liuing in the world.

Long liue it on Gods name (sayd *Mr. Peter*) agen with a pitifull voyce, and may I die, since I liue to be so vnhappy, as to say with King *Don Rodrigo*, Yesterday I was Lord of all *Spaine*, but to day haue not a Battlement I can call mine: Tis not yet halfe an houre, scarce halfe a minute, that I was Master of Kings and Emperours, had my stables, coffers, and bags full of horses and treaure: but now I am desolate, dejected and poore, and to adde more affliction, without my Ape, that before I can catch him againe, I am like to sweat for it, and all through the vnderate furies of this Sir Knight, who is sayd to protect the fatherlesse, to rectifie wrongs, and to doe other charitable works; but to me onely, this his generous intention hath beene defectiue, I thanke God for it. In fine, it could bee none but *The Knight of the Sorrowfull Countenance*, that discountenanced me and mine. *Sancho* grew compassionate to heare Master *Peters* lamentation, and sayd; Weepe not, nor grieue, Master *Peter*, for thou breakest my heart; and let me tell thee, that my Master, *Don Quixote*, is so scrupulous and Catholick a Christian, that if hee fall into the reckoning, that hee haue done thee any wrong, hee knowes how, and will satisfie it with much aduantage. If (sayd Master *Peter*) Signior *Don Quixote* would but pay mee for some part of the Pieces that he hath spoyled, I should bee contented, and his Worship might not bee troubled in conscience: for hee that keepees that, that is another mans, against the Owners will, and restores it not, can hardly be saued.

That's true (quoth *Don Quixote*;) But hitherto, Master *Peter*, I know not whether I haue detained ought of yours. No? not, said Master *Peter*? why these poore reliques that lie vpon the hard and barren earth, who scattered and annihilated them, but the inuincible force of that powerfull arme? And whose were those bodies, but mine? And with whom did I maintaine my selfe,

selfe, but with them? Well, I now (sayd *Don Quixote*) verily beleue, what I haue done often, that the Enchanters that persecute me, doe nothing but put shapes really, as they are before mine eyes, and by and by trucke and change them at their pleasures. Verily, my Masters, you that heare me, I tell you, all that heere passed, seemed to me to be really so, and immediately that that *Melifendra* was *Melifendra*; *Don Gayseros*, *Don Gayseros*; and *Marsilius*, *Marsilius*; and *Charlemaine*, *Charlemaine*: And this was it that stirred vp my choller; and to accomplish my Profession of Knight Errant, my meaning was to succour those that fled, and to this good purpose I did all that you haue scene, which if it fell out vnluckily, twas no fault of mine, but of my wicked persecutors: yet for all this errour (though it proceeded from no malice of mine) I my selfe will condemne my selfe in the charge; let Master *Peter* see what hee will haue for the spoyled pieces, and I will pay it all in present currant coyne of *Castile*.

Master *Peter* made him a low leg, saying; I could expect no lesse from the vnheard of Christianity of the most valorous *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, the true Succourer and Bulwarke of all those that be in neede and necessity, or wandring Vagamundes, and now let the *Venter* and the Grand *Sancho* bee Arbitratours, and Price-setters betweene your Worship and me, and let them say what euery torne piece was worth. The *Venter* and *Sancho* both agreed: and by and by Mr. *Peter* reached vp *Marsilius* King of *Saragosa* headlesse, and sayd; You see how impossible it is for this Prince to returne to his first being, and therefore, following your better iudgements, I thinke fit to haue for him two shillings and three pence.

On then, quoth *Don Quixote*. Then for this (quoth Master *Peter*) that is parted from head to foot, taking the Emperour *Charlemaine* vp, I thinke two shillings seuen-pence halfe-penny is little enough. Not very little, quoth *Sancho*. Nor much (sayd the *Venter*: ) but moderate the bargaine, and let him haue halfe a crowne. Let him haue his full asking (sayd *Don Quixote*) for, for such a mishap as this, wee'l nere stand vpon three halfe-pence more or lesse; and make an end quickly, Master *Peter*, for

it is neere supper-time, and I haue certaine suspitions that I shall eat. For this Pupper (sayd Mr. *Peter*) without a nose, and an eye wanting, of the faire *Melifendra*, I aske, but in Iustice foure-teen pence halfe-penny.

Nay, the Deuill's in it (sayd *Don Quixote*) if *Melifendra* bee not now in *France*, or vpon the borders, at least, with her Husband; for the horse they rode on, to my seeming, rather flew then ran; and therefore sell not me a Cat for a Coney, presenting me heere *Melifendra* nose-lesse, when shee (if the time require it) is wantonly solacing with her Husband in *France*: God giue each man his owne, Mr. *Peter*, let vs haue plaine dealing; and so proceed. Master *Peter*, that saw *Don Quixote* in a wrong vaine, and that he returned to his olde Theame, thought yet he should not escape him, and so replied; Indeepe this should not be *Melifendra*, now I thinke on't; but some one of the Damozels that serued her, so that five pence for her will content me.

Thus he went on prizing of other torne Puppets, which the Arbitrating Iudges moderated to the satisfaction of both parties, and the whole prices of all were, twenty one shillings and eleuen pence, which when *Sancho* had disbursed, Master *Peter* demanded ouer and aboue twelue-pence for his labour, to looke the Ape. Giue it him, *Sancho* (sayd *Don Quixote*) not to catch his Ape, a but a Monkey, and I would giue five pound for a reward, to any body that would certainly tell me, that the Lady *Melifendra* and *Don Gayseros* were safely arriued in *France*, a- Fox. As we say, To catch a

None can better tell then my Ape (said Master *Peter*) though the Deuill himselfe will scarce catch him; yet I imagine, making much of him, and hunger, will force him to seeke me to night, and by morning we shall come together. Well, to conclude; the storme of the Motion passed, and all supped merrily, and like good fellows, at *Don Quixotes* charge; who was liberall in extremity. Before day, the fellow with the Lances and Halberds was gone, and some what after, the Scholler and the Page came to take leaue of *Don Quixote*, the one to returne homeward, and the other to prosecute his intended voyage, and for a releefe *Don Quixote* gaue him six shillings.



Master *Peter* would haue no more to doe with him; for hee knew him too well. So he got vp before the Sunne, and gathering the reliques of the Motion together, and his Ape, he betooke him to his Aduentures. The *Venter* that knew not *Don Quixote*, wondred as much at his liberality, as his madnes. To conclude, *Sancho* payd him honestly, by his Masters order, and taking leaue, about eight of the clocke they left the *Vente*, and went on their way, where wee must leaue them; for so it is fit, that we may come to other matters pertaining to the true declaration of this famous History.

## CHAP. XXVII.

*Who Master Peter & his Ape were, with the ill successe that Don Quixote had in the Aduenture of the Braying, which ended not so well, as he would, or thought for.*

**C**Id *Hamete*, the Chronicler of this famous History, be-  
ginnes this Chapter with these words: I sweare like a  
Catholike Christian.. To which the Translatour sayes,  
That *Cid* his swearing like a Catholike Christian, hee being a  
Moore, as vndoubtedly he was, was no otherwise to be vnder-  
stood, then that as the Catholike Christian, when hee sweares,  
doth or ought to sweare truth, so did he, as if he had sworn like  
a Catholike Christian, in what hee meant to write of *Don Qui-  
xote*, especially in recounting who *Mr. Peter* & the prophesying  
Ape were, that made all the Countrey astonisht at his fore-  
telling things. He sayes then, that hee who hath read the former  
part of this History, will haue well remembred that same *Gines  
de Passamonte*, whom *Don Quixote*, amongst other Gally-slaves,  
freed in *Sierra Morena*, a benefit for which afterward hee had  
small thanks, and worse payment, from that wicked and vn-  
gratefull Rowt.

This *Gines de Passamonte*, whom *Don Quixote* called *Ginesillo  
de Parapilla*, was hee that stole *Sancho's* Dapple; which, because  
neither the manner nor the time were put in the first part, made  
many

many attribute the fault of the Impression, to the Authors  
weakenesse of memory. But true it is, that *Gines* stole him,  
as *Sancho* slept vpon his backe, vsing the same trick and deuice  
of *Brunelo's*, when as *Sacripante* being vpon the siege of *Al-  
braca*, he stole his horse from vnder his legs; and after *Sancho*  
recovered him againe, as was shewed.

This *Gines*, fearefull of being found by the Iustices that  
sought after him, to punish him for his infinite villanies and  
faults, that were so many and so great, that him selfe made a great  
volum of them, determined to get him into the Kingdome of  
*Aragon*, and so couering his left eye, to apply himselfe to the  
office of a Puppet-man; for this and iuggling hee was excellent  
at. It fell out so, that hee bought his Ape of certaine captiue  
Christians that came out of *Barbary*, whom hee had instructed,  
that vpon making a certaine signe, hee should leape vpon his  
shoulder, and should inumble, or seeme to doe so, at least, some-  
thing in his eare.

This done, before he would enter into any towne with his  
Motion or Ape, he informed himselfe in the neerest towne, or  
where hee best could, what particulars had happened in such a  
place, or to such persons, and bearing all well in minde, the first  
thing he did, was to shew his Motion, which was sometimes of  
one Story, otherwhiles of another: but all merry, delightfull,  
and familiarly knowne.

The sight being finisht, hee propounded the rarities of his  
Ape, telling the people that hee could declare vnto them, all  
things past and present; but in things to come, he had no skill:  
For an answer to each question hee demanded a shilling; but to  
some hee did it cheaper, according as hee perceiued the Deman-  
ders in case to pay him; and sometimes he came to such places, as  
he knew what had happened to the Inhabitants, who although  
they would demand nothing, because they would not pay him;  
yet he would straight make signes to the Ape, and tell them, the  
Beast had told him this or that, which fell out iust by what hee  
had before heard, and with this hee got an vnspeakable name,  
and all men flocked about him, and at other times (as he was ve-  
ry cunning) he would reply so, that the answers fell out very fit

to the questions : and since no body went about to sift, or to presse him, how his Ape did prophesie, hee gulled euery one, and filled his pouch.

As soone as euer he came into the *Vente*, hee knew *Don Quixote* & *Sancho*, and all that were there : but it had cost him deare, if *Don Quixote* had let his hand fall somewhat lower, when hee cut off King *Marsilius* his head, and destroyed all his Chiuallry, as was related in the antecedent Chapter. And this is all that may be sayd of Master *Peter* and his Ape.

And returning to *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, I say, that after hee was gone out of the *Vente*, hee determined first of all to see the bankes of the riuer *Heber*, and all round-about, before hee went to the City of *Saragosa*, since betweene that and the lusts there, he had time enough for all. Heereupon hee went on his way, which he passed two dayes without lighting on any thing worth writing, till the third day, going vp a Ridge-way, hee heard a sound of Drummes, Trumpets, and Guns ; at first, hee thought some Regiment of Souldiers passed by that way : so, to see them, he spurred *Rozinante*, and got vp the Ridge, and when he was at the top, he saw (as he ghesled) at the foot of it, neere vpon two hundred men, armed with different sorts of Armes, to wit, Speares, Crolle-bowes, Partizans, Halberds, and Pikes, and some Guns, and many Targets. He came downe from the high ground, and drew neere to the Squadron, insomuch that he might distinctly perceiue their Banners, iudged of their Colours, and noted their *Impreses*, and especially one, which was on a Standard or Shred of white Sattin, where was liuely painted a little Atle, like one of your *Sardinian* Atles, his head lifted vp, his mouth open, and his tongue out, in act and posture iust as he were braying, about him were these two verses written in faire letters ;

*Twas not for nought that day,*

*The one and other Iudge did bray :*

By this deuice *Don Quixote* collected, that those people belonged to the Braying Towne, and so he told *Sancho*, declaring likewise what was written in the Standard ; hee told him also, that hee that told them the Story, was in the wrong, to say they

were

were two Aldermen that brayed : for by the verses of the Standard, they were two Iudges. To which *Sancho* answered, Sir, that breakes no square, for it may very well be, that the Aldermen that then brayed, might come in time to be Iudges of the Towne, so they may haue beene called by both titles. Howsoeuer, tis not materiall to the truth of the story, vvwhether the Brayers were Aldermen, or Iudges, one for another, be they vvho they would, and a Iudge is euen as likely to bray as an Alderman.

To conclude, they perceiued and knew, that the towne that was mocked, went out to skirmish with another that had too much abused them, and more then was fitting for good neighbours. *Don Quixote* went towards them, to *Sancho's* no small grieffe, who was no friend to those enterprizes. Those of the Squadron hemmed him in, taking him to be some one of their side. *Don Quixote* lifting vp his Visor, with a pleasant countenance and courage, came toward the Standard of the Atle, and there all the chiefe of the Army gathered about him to behold him, falling into the same admiration as all else did the first time they had seene him. *Don Quixote* that saw them attentiuely looke on him, and no man offering to speake to him, or aske him ought, taking hold on their silence, and breaking his owne, hee raised his voyce, and said :

Honest friends, I desire you with all earnestnesse, that you interrupt not the discourse that I shall make to you, till you shall see that I eyther distaste or weary you ; which if it be so, at the least signe you shall make, I will seale vp my lips, and clappe a gagge on my tongue. All of them bade him speake what hee would, for they would heare him willingly.

*Don Quixote* hauing this licence, went on, saying, I, my friends, am a Knight Errant, whose exercise is Armes, vvwhose profession, to fauor those that need fauor, and to helpe the distressed I haue long knowne of your misfortune, & the cause that euery while moues you to take Armes to bee reuenged on your enemies. And hauing not once, but many times pondered your businesse in my vnderstanding, I finde ( according to the Lawes of Duell ) that you are deceived to thinke your selues af-

fronted; for no particular person can affront a whole Towne, except it be in defying them for Traitors in generall, because he knowes not who in particular committed the Treason, for which he defied all the Towne.

We haue an example of this in *Don Diego Ordonez de Lara*, who defied the whole towne of *Zamora*, because hee was ignorant, that onely *Pellido de Olfos* committed the treason in killing his King; so he defied them all, and the reuenge & answer concerned them all: though howsoeuer *Don Diego* was somewhat too hasty and too forward; for it was needlesse for him to haue defied the dead, or the waters, or the Corne, or the children vborne, with many other trifles there mentioned: but let it goe, for when Choller ouer-flowes, the tongue hath neyther father, gouernour, or guide that may correct it. This being so then, that one particular person cannot affront a Kingdom, Province, City, Common-wealth, or Towne onely, it is manifest, that the reuenge of defiance for such as affront is needlesse, since it is none; for it were a goodly matter sure that those of the towne of *Reloxa* should euery foot go out to kill those that abuse them so: Or that your <sup>b</sup> *Cazotos*, *Perengeneros*, *Vallenatos*, *Xanoner*os, or others of these kindes of Nick-names, that are common in euery boyes mouth, and the ordinary sort of people: twere very good, I say, that all these famous Townes should bee ashamed, and take reuenge, and runne with their swords continually drawne like Sack-buts, for euery slender quarrell. No, no, God forbid: Men of wisdom and well-gouerned Common-wealths, ought to take Armes for foure things, and so to endanger their persons, liues, and estates. First, to defend the Catholike Faith. Secondly, their liues, which is according to Diuine and Naturall Law. Thirdly, to defend their honour, family, & estates. Fourthly, to serue their Prince in a lawfull warre, and if we will, we may adde a fift (that may serue for a second) to defend their Country. To these five capitall causes, may be ioyned many others, iust and reasonable, that may oblige men to take Armes: but to take them for trifles, and things that are rather fit for laughter and pastime then for any affront, it seemes that he who takes them, wants his iudgement. Besides, to take

<sup>b</sup> Generall Nicknames giue to towns in Spaine, upon long tradition, & tedious to be put in a margin.

an

an vniust reuenge, (indeed nothing can be iust by way of reuenge) is directly against Gods Law which wee profess, in which weare commanded to doe well to our enemies, and good to those that hate vs; a Commandement that though it seeme difficult to fulfill, yet it is not onely to those that know little of God then the world, and more of the flesh then the Spirit; for Iesus Christ, true God and man, who neuer lyed, neyther could, nor can, being our Law-giuer, said that his yoke was sweet, and his burden light: so he would command vs nothing that should be vnpossible for vs to fulfill. So that, my masters, you are tied both by Lawes Diuine and humane to be pacified.

The Deuill take mee (thought *Sancho* to himselfe at this instant) if this Matter of mine be not a Diuine, or if not, as like one as one egge is to another.

*Don Quixote* tooke breath a while, and seeing them still attentive, had proceeded in his discourse, but that *Sancho's* conceitednesse came betwixt him and home, who seeing his Master pawse, tooke his turne, saying:

My Master *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, sometimes called *The Knight of the sorrowfull Countenance*, and now *The Knight of the Lyons*, is a very iudicious Gentleman, speakes Latin and his mother-tongue as well as a Bachelor of Arts, and in all he handleth or aduileth, proceeds like a man of Armes, and hath all the Lawes and Statutes of that you call *Duell, ad vnguem*: therefore there is no more to bee done, but to gouerne your selues according to his direction, and let mee beare the blame if you doe amisse. Besides, as you are now told, tis a folly to be ashamed to heare one Bray; for I remember when I was a boy, I could haue brayed at any time I listed, without any bodies Linderance, which I did so truly and cunningly, that when I brayed, all the Asses in the Towne would answer me; and for all this, I vvas held to be the sonne of honest parents, and though for this rare quality I vvas enuid by more then foure of the proudest of my parish, I cared not two strawes; and that you may know I say true, doe but stay & hearken, for this science is like swimming, once known, neuer forgottē, so clapping his hand to his nose he began to bray so strongly, that the vallies neere-hand resounded

N 4

again.

again. But one of them that stood neereſt him, thinking hee had flouted them, liſted vp a good Batte he had in his hand, and gaue him ſuch a blow, that he tumbled him to the ground.

*Don Quixote*, that ſaw *Sancho* ſo euill intreated, ſet vpon him that did it, with his Launce in his hand; but there came ſo many betwixt them, that it was not poſſible for him to bee reuenged: rather ſeeing a cloud of ſtones coming towards himſelfe; and that a thouſand bent Crolle-bowes began to threaten him, and no leſſe quantity of gunnes; turning *Rozinantes* reines, as faſt as he could gallop, he got from among them, recommending himſelfe heartily to God, to free him from that danger, and fearing euery foot, leſt ſome bullet ſhould enter him behinde, and come out at his brelt: ſo he ſtill went fetching his breath, to ſee if it failed him. But they of the Squadron were ſatiſfied vwhen they ſaw him flie, and ſo ſhot not at him. *Sancho* they ſet vpon his Aſſe, (ſcarce yet come to himſelfe) and let him go after his Maſter, not that he could tell how to guide him: but Dapple followed *Rozinantes* ſteppes, without whom he was nobody.

*Don Quixote* being now a pretty way off, looked backe, and ſaw that *Sancho* vvas coming, and marked that nobody followed him. Thoſe of the Squadron were there till darke night, and becauſe their enemies came not to battell vwith them, they returned home to their towne, full of mirth and iollity: and if they had knowne the ancient cuſtome of the Grecians, they would haue raiſed a Trophy in that place.

#### CHAP. XXVIII.

*Of things that Benengeli relates, which be that reades ſhall know, if he read them with attention.*

**W**Hen the Valiant man turns his backe, the aduantage ouer him is manifeſt, and it is the part of wiſe men to reſerue themſelues to better occasions. This truth was verified in *Don Quixote*, vwho giuing way to the fury of the people, and to the ill intentions of that angry Squadron, tooke

tooke his heeles, and without remembring *Sancho*, or the danger he had left him in, got himſelfe ſo farre as he might ſeeme to be ſafe. *Sancho* followed layd a-thwart vpon his Aſſe, as hath been ſaid. At laſt he ouer-took him, being now come to himſelfe, and coming neere, he fell off his Dapple at *Rozinantes* feet, all ſorrowfull, bruised and beaten. *Don Quixote* alighted to ſearch his wounds, but finding him whole from top to toe, very angrily he ſaid, You muſt Bray with a plague to you, and vvhere haue you found that tis good naming the Halter in the hanged mans houſe? to your braying muſick, what counterpoint could you expect but Bat-blowes? And, *Sancho*, you may giue God thanks, that ſince they bleſſed you with a cudgell, they had not made the *Per ſignum crucis* on you with a Scimitar.

I know not what to answer (quoth *Sancho*) for me-thinkes I ſpeake at my backe, pray let's bee gone from hence, and Ile no more braying: yet I cannot but ſay, that your Knight Errants can flye, and leaue their faithfull Squires to bee bruised like Priuet by their enemies:

To retire, is not to flye (ſaid *Don Quixote*) for know, *Sancho*, that Valour that is not founded vpon the Baſis of Wiſedome, is ſiled Temerity, and the raſh mans actions are rather attributed to good fortune, then courage. So that I confeſſe I retired, but fledde not, and in this haue imitated many valiant men, that haue reſerued themſelues for better times; and Hiſtorics are full of theſe, which becauſe now they would be tedious to me, and vnprofitable to thee, I relate them not at preſent:

By this time *Sancho*, vvith *Don Quixote*'s help, got to horſe, and *Don Quixote* mounted *Rozinante*, and by little & little, they had gotten into a little Eline-groue, ſome quarter of a league off: now and then *Sancho* would fetch a moſt deep Heigho, & dolorous ſighes. And *Don Quixote* demanding the reaſon of his pitifull complaints, he ſaid, that from the point of his backe-bone, to the top of his crowne, he was ſo ſore, that he knew not what to doe. The cauſe of that paine vndoubtedly (quoth *Don Quixote*) is, that as the cudgell with which they banged thee was long and ſlender, it lighted vpon thoſe parts of thy backe all along, that greene thee; and if it had beene thicker, it had grieued

ued thee more. Truly (quoth *Sancho*) you haue resolved mee of a great doubt, and in most delicate tearmes declared it to me. Body of me, was the cause of my griefe so concealed, that you must needs tell me that all of me was sore where the cudgell lighted? If my ankles did paine me, I warrant, you would riddle the cause of it; but tis poore riddling to tell that my brusing grieues me. Yfaith, yfaith, Master mine, other mens ills are slightly regarded; and euery day I discover land, and see how little I can expect from your seruice; for if at this time you suffered me to be dry-beaten, we shal come a hundred & a hundred times to the Blanket-tossing you wotte of, and other childish trickes, which if they now lighted on my shoulders, they will after come out at mine eyes. It were a great deale better for mee, but that I am a beast, and shall neuer do ought vwell while I liue. It were a great deale better (I say againe) for me to get mee home to my Wife and Children, to maintaine and bring them vp with that little God hath giuen me, and not to follow you vp and downe these by-waies, drinke ill, and eating worse. And for your bedde, good honest Squire, euen count mee out seven foot of good earth; and if you will haue any more, take as many more; for you may feed at pleasure, stretch your selfe at your ease. I would the first that made stich in Knight Errantry were burned, or beaten to powder, or at least hee that first would be Squire to such fooles, as all your Knight-Errants in former times haue beene, of the present I say nothing; for your selfe being one, I respect them, and because I know that you know an Ace more then the Deuill in all you speake or thinke.

I durst venter a good wager with thee, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, that now thou talkest and no body controules thee, thou feelest no paine in all thy body: Talke on, childe mine, all that is in thy minde, or comes to thy mouth, for so thou beest not grien'd, I will be pleased with the distaste that thy impertinencies might giue mee. And if you desire so much to bee at home with your wife and children, God forbid I should gaine-say it: you haue money of mine, and see how long tis since our third fall from home, and how much is due to you for euery moneth, and pay your selfe.

When

When I serued (quoth *Sancho*) *Tomè Carrasco*, Father to the Bachelor *Carrasco*, whom you know well, I had two Ducats a moneth besides my victuals: of you I know not how much I shall haue, though I am sure it is a greater toyle to be a Squire to a Knight Errant, then to serue a rich Husbandman; for indeed, we that serue Husbandmen, though wee labour neuer so much in the day time, if the worst come to the worst, at night we sup with the Portage-pot, and lye in a bed, which I haue not done euer since I serued you, except it were that short time wee were at *Don Diego de Miranda's* house, and after when I had the eheere of the skimmings of *Camacho's* pots, and when I ate and drunke and slept at *Basilus* his house; all the rest hath been vpon the cold ground, to the open ayre, and subiect, as you would say, to the inclemencies of the heauens, onely liuing vpon bits of cheese, and scraps of bread, and drinking water, sometimes of brookes, sometimes of springs, which we met withall by the waies we went.

I confesse, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) that all thou sayest may be true; how much more thinkest thou should I giue thee, then *Tomè Carrasco*?

You shall please me (quoth *Sancho*) with twelue-pence more a moneth, and that concerning my wages for my seruice; but touching your word and promise you gaue mee, that I should haue the Government of an Iland, it were fit you added the tother three shillings, which in all make vp fiftene.

It is very well, said *Don Quixote*, and according to the wages that you haue allotted vnto your selfe, it is now twenty five daies since our last fallie, reckon, *Sancho*, so much for so much, and see how much is due to you, and pay your selfe, as I haue bidden you.

Body of mee (said *Sancho*) you are cleane out of the reckoning; for touching the promise of gouerning the Iland, you must reckon from the time you promised, til this present. Why, how long is it (quoth hee) since I promised it? If I be not forgetfull (said *Sancho*) it is now some twenty yeeres, vwanting two or three dayes. *Don Quixote* gaue himselfe a good clappe on the forehead, and began to laugh heartily, saying, Why, my being

\* A Tricke to  
giue a tucke  
with the  
thumbe vpon  
ones lips, as  
fresh men are  
vsed in a Vni-  
uersity.

being about *Sierra Morena*, and our whole trauels were in lesse then two Moneths, and dost thou say it was twenty yeeres since I promised thee the Iland? I am now of opinion, that thou wouldst haue all the mony thou hast of mine, consumed in paying thee wages: which if it be so, & that thou art so minded, from hence-forward take it, much good may it doe thee; for so I may not be troubled with such a Squire, I shall be glad to be poore, and without a farthing. But tell mee, thou Preuaricator of the Squirely lawes of Knight-Errantry, where hast thou euer scene or read of any Squire belonging to Knight Errant, that hath capitulated with his Master, to giue him thus much or so much: Lanch, lanch, thou base lewd fellow, thou Hobgoblin; Lanch? I say, into the *Mare magnum* of their Histories; and if thou finde that any Squire haue sayd, or so much as imagined, what thou hast sayd, I will giue thee leaue to brand my fore-head, and to boot, to scale me with a foure tuckes in the mouth: Turne thy reines, or thine Asses halter, and get thee to thy house, for thou shalt not goe a step further with me. Oh ill-giuen bread, and ill-placed promises! Oh man more beast then man! now when I thought to haue put thee into a fortune, and such a one, that in spite of thy wife, thou shouldest haue beene stiled, *My Lord*: Thou leauest me? Now dost thou goe, when I had a purpose to haue made thee Lord of the best Iland in the world? Well, well, as thou thy selfe hast sayd many times; The hony is not for the Asses mouth: An Ass thou art, an Ass thou wilt be, and an Ass thou shalt die, and till then wilt thou remaine so, before thou fallest into the reckoning that thou art a beast.

*Sancho* beheld *Don Quixote* earnestly, all the while hee thus rated him, and was so moued, that the teares stood in his eyes, and with a dolorous low voyce hee sayd; Master mine, I confesse that, to be altogether an Ass, I want nothing but a taile: if you will put one on me, I will be contented, and will serue you like an Ass all dayes of my life. Pardon me, Sir, and pittie my youth, and consider my folly; for if I speake much, it proceedes rather out of simplicity then knauery. *Who erres and mends, so God himselfe commends.*

I would be sorry, little *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) but that thou

thou shouldst mingle some by-pretty Prouerb in thy Dialogue. Well, I pardon thee for this once, vpon condition heereafter thou mend, and shew not thy selfe so couetous, but that thou rouze vp thy spirits, and encourage thy selfe with hope of the accomplishment of my promise; For better late then not at all. *Sancho* answered him, he would; though it were to make a vertue of necessity.

Heereupon they put into the Elme-groue, and *Don Quixote* got to the foot of an Elme, & *Sancho* to the foot of a Beech; for these kind of trees & such like, haue alwaies feet, but no hands. *Sancho* had an ill night on it; for his Bat-blow made him more sensible in the cold. *Don Quixote* fell into his vsuall imaginations: yet they both slept, and by day-peepe they were on their way, searching after the famous bankes of *Heber*, where they happened vpon what shall be told in the ensuing Chapter.

## CHAP. XXIX.

## Of the famous Aduenture of the Enchanted Barke.

**D**ON *Quixote* and *Sancho*, by their computation, two dayes after they were out of the Elme-groue, came to the Riuer *Heber*, whose sight was very delightfome to *Don Quixote*; for first he contemplated on the amenity of those bankes, the cleernesse of the water, the gentle current, and the abundancy of the liquid Cristall, whose pleasing sight brought a thousand amorous thoughts into his head, especially hee fell to thinke what he had scene in *Montesino's* Caue: for though Master *Peters* Ape had told him, that part of it was true, and part false, he leaned more to the truth then to the other, contrary to *Sancho*, who held all, as false as Falshood it selfe.

As they were thus going on, *Don Quixote* might see a little Boat, without oares or any other kinde of tackling, which was tied by the brinke of the Riuer, to a trees stump on the banke. *Don Quixote* looked round-about him, but could see no body; so, without more adoe, hee alighted from *Rozinante*, and commanded:



manded *Sancho* to doe the like from Dapple, and that he should tye both the Beasts very well, to the root of an Elme or Willow there. *Sancho* demanded of him the cause of that sudden lighting, and of that tying. *Don Quixote* made answer; Know, *Sancho*, that this Boat thou seest directly (for it can bee nothing else) calls and inuites me to goe and enter into it, to giue ayde to some Knight, or other Personage of ranke and note, that is in distresse: for this is the stile of bookes of Knight-hood, and of Enchanters that are there intermingled, that when any Knight is in some danger, that he cannot bee freed from it, but by the hand of some other Knight, although the one bee distant from the other, two or three thousand leagues or more, they either snatch him into a cloud, or prouide him a Boat to enter in, and in the twinkling of an eye, either carry him thorow the aire, or thorow the sea, as they list, and where his assistance is needfull; so that, *Sancho*, this Boat is put heere to the same effect, and this is as cleare as day, and before wee goe, tye Dapple and *Rozinante* together, and let's on in Gods Name: for I will not faile to imbarke my selfe, though Bare-foot Friars should intreat me.

Well, seeing tis so (sayd *Sancho*) and that you will euery foot run into these (I know not what I shall call them) fopperies, there's no way but to obey, and lay downe the necke, according to the Prouerbe; Doe as thy Master commands thee, and sit downe at Table with him: But for all that, for discharge of my conscience, let me tell you, that (methinkes) that is no Enchanted Boat, but one that belongs to some Fisher-men of the Riuer, for heere the best *Saboga's* in the world are taken.

This he spoke whilst he was tying his Beasts, leauing them to the protection and defence of Enchanters, which greued him to the soule. *Don Quixote* bad him he should not bee troubled for the leauing those beasts; for hee that should carry them thorow such longinque wayes and regions, would also looke to the other. I vnderstand not your Lognicke (quoth *Sancho*) neither haue I heard such a word in all the dayes of my life. Longinque (sayd *Don Quixote*) that is, farre, remote: and no maruell thou vnderstandest not that word, for thou art not bound to the vnderstanding of Latin, though yee haue some that presume to know

know when they are ignorant. Now they are bound (sayd *Sancho*) what shall we doe next?

What? (sayd *Don Quixote*) blesse our selues & weigh anchor, I meane, let vs imbarke our selues, and cut the rope by which this boat is tyed: so leaping into it, and *Sancho* following him, he cut the cord, and the Boat faire and tofly fell off from the Banke; and when *Sancho* saw himselfe about a two rods length within the Riuer, hee began to tremble, fearing his perdition: but nothing so much troubled him, as to heare Dapple bray, and to see that *Rozinante* struggled to vnloose himselfe: and hee told his Master, Dapple brayes and condoles for our absence, *Rozinante* strives to bee at liberty, to throw himselfe after vs. Oh most deare friends, remaine you there in safety, and may the madnesse that seuers vs from you, conuerted into repentance, bring vs back to your Presence: and with that he began to weep so bitterly, that *Don Quixote*, all moody and cholericke, began to cry out; What makes thee feare, thou cowardly Impe? what cryest thou for, thou heart of curds? who persecutes thee? who bailes thee, thou soule of a Milk-sop? or what wantest thou in the middest of all abundance? art thou happily to goe bare-foot ouer the *Riphean* mountaines? Rather vpon a seat like an Arch-Duke, thorow the calme current of this delightfull Riuer: from whence we shall very quickly passe into the maine sea: but hitherto wee haue gone and sayled some seuen or eight hundred leagues, and if I had an *Astrolabe* heere, to take the height of the Pole, I could tell thee how farre wee haue gone, though, either my knowledge is small, or wee haue now, or shall quickly passe the *Aequinoctiall* Line, which diuides & cuts the two contraposed Poles in equall distance.

And when you come to this Line you speake of, how farre shall we haue gone? A great way (answered *Don Quixote*;) For of three hundred and sixty degrees, which the whole Globe containeth of Land and water, according to *Ptolemies* Computati-<sup>a</sup> Mistakes of on, who was the greatest Cosmographer knowne, we shall haue the words, *Pto-* gone the halfe, when we come to the Line I haue told you of. *tema* and *Com-* Verily (quoth *Sancho*) you haue brought me a pretty witnesse, *pute* for so it is in the Spa- to confirme your saying, <sup>a</sup> *To* is my & Comtation, and I know nish.

not what. *Don Quixote* laugh't at *Sancho's* interpretation he had giuen to the name, and to the Computation and account of the Cosmographer *Ptolomeus*, and sayd to him; You shall vnderstand, *Sancho*, that when the Spanyards, and those that imbarke themselves at *Cadiz*, to goe to the *East Indies*, one of the greatest signes they haue, to know whether they haue passed the *Aequinoctiall*, is, that all men that are in the ship, their Lice dye vpon them, and not one remains with them, nor in the Vessell, though they would giue their waight in gold for him: so that, *Sancho*, thou mayst put thy hand to thy thigh, and if thou meet with any liue thing, we shall be out of doubt; if thou findest nothing, then we haue passed the Line.

I cannot beleue any of this, quoth *Sancho*: but yet I will doe what you will haue mee, though I know no necessity for these trials; since I see with these eyes, that we haue not gone five rods lengths from the Banke; for there *Rozinante* and Dapple are, in the same places where we left them, and looking well vpon the matter, as I now doe, I sweare by Me, that wee neither mooue nor goe faster then an Ant.

Make the triall that I bade you, and care for no other; for thou knowest not, what *Columnes* are, what *Lines*, *Paralels*, *Zodiacks*, *Clipticks*, *Poles*, *Solstices*, *Aequinoctials*, *Planets*, *Signes*, *Poynts*, and *Measures*, of which the *Celestiall* and *Terrestriall Spheres* are compos'd: for if thou knewest all these, or any part of them, thou mightst plainly see what *Paralels* wee haue cur, what *Signes* we haue scene, and what *Images* wee haue left behinde, and are leauing now. And let me wish thee againe, that thou search and feele thy selfe: for I doe not thinke, but that thou art as cleane as a sheet of white smooth paper.

*Sancho* began to feele, and comming softly and warily with his hand to the left side of his necke, hee lifted vp his head, and sayd to his Master; Either your experience is false, or else we are not come neere the place you speake of, by many leagues. Why (quoth *Don Quixote*) hast thou met with some thing? I, with some things (sayd hee) and shaking his fingers, hee washed his whole hand in the riuer; by which, and in the Current, the boat softly slid along, without being meeu'd by any secret influence

or hidden Enchantment, but the very course it selfe of the water, as yet soft and easie.

By this they discovered two great water-mills in the midst of the Riuer: and *Don Quixote*, as soone as hee saw them, cried aloud to *Sancho*; See'st thou, Friend, that City, Castle, or Fortresse that shewes it selfe, where some Knight is sure opprell'd, or some Queene or Princesse in ill plight, for whose succour I am brought hither?

What the Deuill of City, Castle, or Fortresse, Sir, doe you talke of (quoth *Sancho*?) doe you not see that those are water-mills in the Riuer to grinde corne? Peace, *Sancho* (sayd hee) for though they looke like Water-mills, yet they are not, and I haue told thee already, that these Enchantments chop and change things out of their naturall being: I say not that they change them out of one being into another really, but in appearance, as was scene by experience in the transformation of *Dulcinea*, the onely refuge of my hopes.

Now the Boat being gotten into the midst of the Current, began to mooue somewhat faster then before. They of the Mills, that saw the Boat come downe the riuer, and that it was now euen gotten into the swift streame of the wheeles, many of them came running out with long poles to stay it: and as their faces and clothes were all couered with meale-dust, they made a strange shew, and cryed out, saying; Demils of men, whither goe you? Are you mad to drowne your selues, or bee beaten to pieces against these wheeles?

Did not I tell thee, *Sancho* (sayd *Don Quixote*) then, that we should come where I should shew the force of mine Arme? look what wicked vncouth fellowes come to encounter mee; looke what a troope of Hobgoblins oppose themselves against mee; looke what vgly visages play the Bull-beggars with vs: Now you shall see, you Rascals; and standing vp in the Boat, he began aloud to threaten the Millers, saying; You base Scumme and ill-advised, free and deliuer that person, which is in your Fortresse or Prison opprest, bee hee high or low, or of what sort or quality soeuer; for I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, otherwise called *The Knight of the Lyons*, for whom the happy ending of this

this Aduenture is referued by order of the high Heauens: and this sayd, hee layd hand to his sword, and beganne to fence in the aire against the Millers, who hearing, but not vnderstanding those madneses, stood with their poles to stay the Boat, which was now entring the source and channell of the wheeles. *Sancho* kneeled deuoutly vpon his knees, praying Heauen to free him from so manifest a danger, which succeeded happily, by the quicknesse and skill of the Millers, who opposing their staues to the Boat, stayd it: but so, that they ouerturned it, and *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* topted into the Riuer: but it was well for *Don Quixote*, who could swimme like a Goose, though the waight of his Armes carried him twice to the bottome, and had it not beene for the Millers, who leaped into the water, and pulled them out both, as if they had waighed them vp, there they had both perished.

When they were both on land, more wet then thirsty, *Sancho*, vpon his knees, with ioyned hands, and his eyes nailed to Heauen, prayed to God with a large and deuout prayer, to free him from thence-forward, from the rash desires and enterprizes of his Master. And now the Fisher-men came, the Owners of the Boat, which was broken to pieces by the wheeles, who seeing it spoyled, began to dis-robe *Sancho*, and to demand payment of *Don Quixote*, who very patiently, as if he had done nothing, sayd to the Milers and Fisher-men, that hee would very willingly pay for the Boat, vpon condition they should freely deliuer him, without fraud or guile, the person or persons that were oppressed in their Castle.

What person, or what Castle mad-man? (sayd one of the Millers) will you, throw, carry away those that came hither to grinde their corne? Enough, thought *Don Quixote* to himselfe, here a man may preach in a wildernes, to reduce a base people to a good worke. In this Aduenture two deep Enchanters haue met, and the one disturbs the other: the one provided me the Barke, and the other ouerthrew me out of it; God helpe vs, all this world is tricks and deuices, one contrary to the other; I can doe no more: and raising his voyce, he went on, saying; Friends, who soeuer you are, locked vp in this prison, pardon mee; for,

by

by my ill fortune and yours, I cannot deliuer you from your pain: this Aduenture is kept & referued for some other Knight. When he had said this, he agreed with the fishers, and paid 25. shillings for the boat, which *Sancho* gaue with a very good will, saying, With two of these boat-trickes we shall sink our whole stocke.

The Fishermen and the Millers were in a great admiration, to see two such strange shapes, quite from the ordinary fashion of other men, and neuer vnderstood to what purpose *Don Quixote* vsed all those discourses to them; so holding them for mad-men, they left them, and got to their Milles, and the Fishers to their quarters. *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* like beastes turne to their beasts: and this end had the Aduenture of the Enchanted Barke.

## CHAP. XXX.

What happened to Don Quixote with the faire Hum-tresse.

VERY melancholy and ill at ease went the Knight and Squire to horse-backe, especially *Sancho*, for it grieved him at the soule to meddle with the stocke of their money; for it seemed to him, that to part with any thing from thence, was to part with his eye-balls. To be briefe, vvithout speaking a word, to horse they vvvent, and left the famous riuer. *Don Quixote*, buried in his amorous cogitations, and *Sancho* in those of his preferment; for as yet hee thought he was farre enough off from obtaining it: for although he were a foole, yet hee well perceiued, that all his Masters actions, or the greatest part of them were idle: so hee sought after some occasion, that without entring into farther reckonings, or leaue-taking vvith his Master, hee might one day get out of his clutches, and goe home, but fortune ordered matters contrary to his feare. It fell out then, that the next day about Sun-setting, and as they were going out of a wood, *Don Quixote* spreads his eyes about a green

meadow, and at one end of it saw company, & comming neere, he saw they were Falconers; he came neerer, and amongst them beheld a gallant Lady vpon her Palfrey, or milke-white Nagge, with greene furniture, and her Saddle-pummell of silver. The Lady her selfe was all clad in greene, so braue and rich, that brauery it selfe was transformed into her. On her left hand shee carried a Soare-Falcon, a signe that made *Don Quixote* think she was some great Lady, and Mistresse to all the rest, as true it vvas: so hee cried out to *Sancho*; Runne, sonne *Sancho*, and tell that Lady on the Palfrey with the Soare-hawke, that I, *The Knight of the Lyons*, doe kisse her most beautifull hands; and if her magnificence giue me leaue, I will receiue her commands, and be her seruant to the vttermost of my power, that her highnesse may please to command mee in; and take heede, *Sancho*, how thou speakest, and haue a care thou mixe not thy Ambassage vvith some of those Prouerbs of thine. Tell me of that? as if it were now the first time that I haue carried Embassies to high and mighty Ladies in my life? Except it were that thou carriedst to *Dulcinea* (quoth *Don Quixote*): I know not of any other thou hast carried, at least whilest thou wert with mee. That's true, said *Sancho*; but a good pay-matter needs no surety: and where there is plenty, the ghests are not empty, I meane, there is nothing nor aduising mee ought; for of all things I know a little: I beleue it (said *Don Quixote*) get thee gone in good time, and God speed thee.

*Sancho* went on, putting Dapple out of his pace with a Carreer, and comming where the faire Huntresse was, alighting, he kneeled downe, and said; Faire Lady, that Knight you see there, called *The Knight of the Lyons*, is my Master, and I am a Squire of his, whom at his house they call *Sancho Panza*; this said *Knight of the Lyons*, who not long since was called, *The Knight of the sorrowfull Countenance*, sends me to tell your Greatnesse, That you be pleased to giue him leaue, that with your liking, good will, & consent, he put in practice his desire, which is no other (as he sayes, and I beleue) then to serue your lofty high-flying beauty; and if your Ladiship giue him leaue, you shall doe a thing that may redound to your good, and hee shall

receiue

receiue almost remarkable fauour and content.

Truely, honest Squire, said the Lady, thou hast deliuered thy Ambassage with all the circumstances that such an Ambassage requires: rise, rise, for the Squire of so renowned a Knight as he of the sorrowfull countenance (of whom wee haue heere speciall notice) tis not fit should kneele: rise vp friend, and tell your Master that he come neere on Gods name, that the Duke my Husband and I may doe him seruice at a house of pleasure we haue heere.

*Sancho* rose vp astonisht, as well at the good Ladies beauty, as her court-ship and courtesie, especially for that shee told him she had notice of his Master, *The Knight of the sorrowfull Countenance*; for in that she called him not *Knight of the Lyons*, it was because it was so lately put vpon him. The Duchesse asked him (for as yet we know not of what place shee was Duchesse) tell me, Sir Squire, is not this your Master, one, of whom there is a History printed, & goes by the name of, The ingenious Gentleman, *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, the Lady of whose life is likewise, one *Dulcinea del Toboso*? The very self same (said *Sancho*) and that Squire of his, that is, or should be in the History, called *Sancho Panza*, am I, except I were changed in my cradle, I mean that I were changed in the Presse. I am glad of all this (quoth the Duchesse) goe, brother *Panza*, and tell your Master that he is welcome to our Dukedome, and that no newes could haue giuen me greater content. *Sancho* with this so acceptable an answer, with great pleasure returned to his Master, to vvhom he recounted all that the great Lady had said to him, extolling to the heauens her singular beauty, with his rusticall tearmes, her affableness and courtesie. *Don Quixote* pranked it in his saddle, sat stiffe in his stirrups, fitted his Visor, rowled vp *Rozinante*, and with a comely boldnesse went to kisse the Duchesses hands, who causing the Duke her husband to be called, told him, whilest *Don Quixote* was comming, his whole Embassie: so both of them hauing read his first part, and vnderstood by it his besotted humour, attended him with much pleasure and desire to know him, with a purpose to follow his humour, and to giue way to al he should say, and to treat with him as a Knight Errant,

\* For so it is in the Spanish to make the simple Squire speake absurdly enough, for in stead of *Altos*, the Author makes him say *Altos*.

as long as he should be with them, with all the accustomed ceremonies in bookes of Knight Errantry, which they had read, and were much affected with.

By this, *Don Quixote* came with his Visor pulled vp, and making shew to alight, *Sancho* came to haue held his stirrop: but he was so vn lucky, that as hee was lighting from Dapple, one of his feet caught vpon a halter of the packe-saddle, so that it was not possible for him to dis-intangle himself, but hung by it, with his mouth and his brest to the ground ward. *Don Quixote*, who vsed not to alight without his stirrops being held, thinking *Sancho* was already come to hold it, lighted sodainely downe, but brought saddle and all to ground, (belike being ill-girt) to his much shame, and curses inwardly layd vpon the vn happy *Sancho*, that had still his legge in the stocks. The Duke commanded some of his Falconers to helpe the Knight and Squire, who raised *Don Quixote* in ill plight with his fall, and limping, as well as he could, he went to kneele before the two Lordings: but the Duke would not by any meanes consent, rather alighting from his horse, he embraced *Don Quixote*, saying:

I am very sorry, Sir Knight of the sorrowfull Countenance, that your first fortune hath beene so ill in my ground; but the carelesnesse of Squires is oft the cause of worse succelles. It is impossible, valerous Prince, that any should be bad, since I haue seene you, although my fall had cast me to the profound Abissine; since the glory of seeing you would haue drawne mee out, and raised mee vp. My Squire (a curse light on him) vties his tongue better to speake maliciously, then hee girts his horses saddle to sit firmly: but how soeuer I am downe or vp, on foot or on horsebacke, I will alwaies bee at yours, and my Lady the Duchesse seruice, your worthy Consort, the worthe Lady of beauty, and vniuersall Princeesse of courtesie. Softly, my Signior (*Don Quixote de la Mancha*) quoth the Duke, for where my Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso* is present, there is no reason other beauties should be praised.

Now *Sancho Panza* was free from the noose, & being at hand, before his Master could answer a word, he said, It cannot be denied, but affirmed, that my Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso* is very faire;

faire; but where we least thinke, there goes the Hare away: for I haue heard say, that since you call Nature, is like a Potter that makes vessels of Clay, and he that makes a handsome vessel, may also maketwo or three, or an hundred: this I say, that you may know, my Lady the Duchesse comes not a whit behinde my Mistresse the Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*. *Don Quixote* turned to the Duchesse, and said, Your Greatnesse may suppose that neuer any Knight in the world had euer such a prater to his Squire, nor a more conceited then mine, and he will make good vvhath I say, if your Highnesse shall at any time be pleased to make triall. To which (quoth the Duchesse) that honest *Sancho* may be conceited, I am very glad, a signe hee is wise; for your pleasant conceits, Signior, as you very wel know, rest not in dull braines, and since *Sancho* is witty and conceited, from hence-forward I confirme him to be discreet: And a Prater, added *Don Quixote*. So much the better (said the Duke) for many conceits cannot be expresse in few words: and that we may not spend the time in many, come, Sir Knight of the sorrowfull Countenance: of the Lyons, your Highnesse must say (quoth *Sancho*;) for now vve haue no more sorrowfull countenance. And now let the Lyons beare countenance. The Duke proceeded: I say let the Knight of the Lyons come to my Castle, vvhich is neere heere, where he shall haue the entertainment that is iustly due to so high a personage, and that, that the Duchesse and I are wont to giue to Knights Errant that come to vs.

By this time *Sancho* had made ready and girded *Roxinantes* saddle vvell; and *Don Quixote* mounting him, and the Duke vpon a goodly horse, set the Duchesse in the middle, and they went toward the Castle. The Duchesse commanded that *Sancho* should ride by her; for she was infinitely delighted to heare his discretions. *Sancho* was easily entreated, and weaued himselfe betweene the three, and made a fourth in their conuersation. The Duke and Duchesse were much pleased, vvhich held it for a great good fortune, to haue lodged in their Castle such a Knight Errant, and such a Squire Erred.

## CHAP. XXXI.

*That treates of many and great affaires.*

**G**reat was the ioy that *Sancho* conceived to see himselfe a fauourite to the Duchesse, as he thought; for it shap'd out vnto him, that he should finde in her Castle, as much as in *Don Diego's*, or that of *Basilius*: for he was alwaies affected with a plentiful life, and so layd hold vpon Occasions locke, euer when it was presented. The History then tells vs, that before they came to the house of pleasure or Castle, the Duke went before, and gaue order to all his followers how they should behaue themselves towards *Don Quixote*, vvhich as he came on vwith the Duchesse to the Castle gates, there came out two Lackeyes, or Palfrey-boyes, clothed down to the feete in coates like night-gownes, of fine Crimson Sattin, and taking *Don Quixote* in their armes, vwithout hearing or looking on him, they said, Goe, and let your Greatnesse help my Lady to alight. *Don Quixote* did so, & there was great complementing betwixt both about it: but in the end, the Duchesses earnestnesse preuailed, and shee would not descend or alight from her Palfrey, but in the Dukes armes, saying: That shee was too vnworthy to bee so vnprofitable a burden to so high a Knight. At length the Duke helped her, and as they entred a great Base Court, there came two beautiful Damozels, & cast vpon *Don Quixote's* shoulders, a faire mantle of finest Scarlet, and in an instant all the leads of the Courts and entries were thronged with men and maide-seruants of the Dukes, who cried aloud, Welcome, oh Flower and Creame of Knights Errant, and all or most of them sprinkled pots of sweet water vpon *Don Quixote*, and vpon the Duke, all which made *Don Quixote* admire, and neuer till then did he truly belieue that he was a Knight Errant, really and not fantastically, seeing that he was vsed iust as hee had read Knights Errant were in former times.

*Sancho*, forsaking Dapple, shewed himselfe to the Duchesse, and entered into the Castle, but his conscience pricking him,

that

that he had left his Asse alone, he came to a reuerend old waiting woman, that came out amongst others to wait vpon the Duchesse, and very softly spoke to her, Mistresse *Gonzalez*, or vvhich is your name forsooth? *Donna Rodriguez de Gysbalna*, said the waiting woman, what would you haue, brother, with me? To which (quoth *Sancho*) I pray will you doe me the fauour as to goe out at the Castle-gate, where you shall finde a Dapple Asse of mine, I pray vwill you see him put, or put him your selfe in the stable; for the poore wretch is fearefull, and cannot by any meanes endure to be alone. If the Master (quoth she) be as wise as the man, we shall haue a hot bargaine on it: get you gone with a Murrin to you, and him that brought you hither, and looke to your Asse your selfe, for the waiting women in this house are not vsed to such drudgeries. Why truly (quoth *Sancho*) I haue heard my Master say, who is the very Wizard of Histories, telling that story of *Lanzarote*, vvhich he came from Britaine, that Ladies looked to him, and waiting women to his Courser: and touching my Asse in particular, I would not change him for *Lanzarotes* horse. Brother (quoth she) if you be a lesser, keepe your witte till you haue vse of it, for those that will pay you; for I haue nothing but this <sup>a</sup> figge to giue you. Well yet (said <sup>a La higa: a</sup> *Sancho*) the figge is like to be ripe, for you vwill not lose the word of dis- <sup>Prima vista</sup> <sup>of your yeeres by a peepe lesse.</sup> Sonne of a vvhore, <sup>grace.</sup> said the waiting-woman all incensed with choller, whether I am olde or no, God knowes, I shall giue him account, and not to thee, thou rascall, that stinkest of Garlicke: all this shee spoke so loud, that the Duchesse heard her, who turning, and seeing the woman so altered, and her eyes so bloudy red, she asked her with whom she was angry?

Here (said shee) vwith this Idiot, that hath earnestly entreated me to put vp his Asse in the stable, that is at the Castle-gate, giuing mee for an instance, that they haue done so I know not where, that certaine Ladies looked to one *Lanzarote*, and vwaiting vvhomen to his horse, and to mend the matter, in mannerly tearms calls me <sup>b</sup> old one. That wold more disgrace me (quoth the Duchesse) then all he should say, and speaking to *Sancho*, shee said, Looke you friend *Sancho*, *Donna Rodriguez* <sup>b Victoria name</sup> <sup>that a woman</sup> <sup>in Spain can-</sup> <sup>not endure to</sup> <sup>heare though</sup> <sup>shee were as</sup> <sup>old as Methu-</sup> <sup>salem.</sup>



is very young, and that *Stole* she weares, is more for authority, and for the fashon, then for her yeeres. A pox on the rest of my yeeres I haue to liue (quoth *Sancho*) if I meant her any ill, I onely desired the kindnesse, for the loue I beare to mine Ase, and because I thought I could not recommend him to a more charitable person, then *Mistris Rodriguez*. *Don Quixote*, that heard all, sayd; Are these discourfes, *Sancho*, fit for this place? Sir (sayd *Sancho*) let every man expresse his wants wherefoere he be. Heere I remembred my Dapple, and heere I spoke of him, and if I had remembred him in the stable, there I would haue spoken.

To this (quoth the Duke) *Sancho* is in the right, and there is no reason to blame him. Dapple shall haue prouander, as much as he will, and let *Sancho* take no care, he shall be vsed as well as his owne person. With these discourfes, pleasing vnto all but *Don Quixote*, they went vp staires, and brought *Don Quixote* into a goodly Hall, hung with rich cloth of Gold and Tissue, six Damozels vn-armed him, & serued for Pages, all of them taught and instructed by the Duke and Dutchesse, what they should doe, and how they should behaue themselves towards *Don Quixote*, that hee might imagine and see they vsed him like a Knight Errant.

*Don Quixote* once vn-armed, was in his straight trouses and doublet of Chamois, dry, high, and lanke, with his iawes, that within and without buffed one another; a picture, that if the Damozels that serued him, had not had a care to hold in their laughter (which was one of the precise orders their Lords had giuen them) had burst with laughing. They desired him to vnclothe himselfe, to shift a shirt: but he would by no meanes consent, saying; That honestly was as proper to a Knight Errant, as valour. Notwithstanding, hee bad them giue a shirt to *Sancho*: and locking himselfe vp with him in a chamber, where was a rich bed, hee pluckt off his clothes, and put on the shirt; and as *Sancho* and he were alone, he thus spoke to him:

Tell me (moderne Iester and old Iolt-head) is it a fit thing, to dishonour and affront so venerable an old waiting-woman, and so worthy to be respected, as she? Was that a fit time to remem-

ber

ber your Dapple? Or thinke you, that these were Lords to let Beasts fare ill, that so neatly vse their Masters? For Gods loue, *Sancho*, looke to thy selfe, and discouer not thy course thred, that they may see thou art not wouen out of a bale web. Know, Sinner as thou art, that the Master is so much the more esteemed, by how much his seruants are honest, and mannerly; and one of the greatest aduantages that great men haue ouer inferiours, is, that they keep seruants as good as themselves. Know'st thou not, poore fellow, as thou art, & vnhappy that I am, that if they see thee to bee a grosse Pefant, they will thinke that I am some *Montibanke*, or shifting Squire? No, no, friend *Sancho*, shun, shun these inconueniencies; for he that stumbles too much vpon the Prater and Wit-monger, at the first toe-knocke fals, and becomes a scornfull Iester: bridle thy tongue, consider and ruminat vpon thy words, before they come from thee, and obserue, that wee are now come to a place, from whence, with Gods helpe and mine armes valour, we shall goe bettered threefold, nay, siue-fold in fame and wealth.

*Sancho* promised him very truly, to sow vp his mouth, or to bite his tongue, before he would speake a word that should not be well considered and to purpose, as he had commanded; and that he should not feare, that by him they should euer bee disco-uered. *Don Quixote* dressed himselfe, buckled his sword to his belt, and clapped his skarlet mantle vpon him, putting on a Hunters cap of greene sattin, which the Damozels had giuen him: and thus adorned, to the great chamber he went, where he found the Damozels all in a row, six on one side, and six on the other, and all with provision for him to wash, which they ministered to him with many courtesies and ceremonies.

Betwixt them straight they got him full of pompe and Maiesty, and carried him to another roome, where was a rich table, with seruice for foure persons. The Duke and Dutchesse came to the doore to receiue him, and with them a graue Clergy-man, a one of those that gouerne great mens houses, one of those, that as they are not borne nobly, so they know not how to instruct those that are: one of those that would haue great mens liberalities, measured by the straightnesse of their mindes: of those, that teaching

A good Character of a poore Pedant.

teaching those they gouerne, to bee frugall, would make them miserable : such a one, I say, this graue Clergy-man was, that came with the Duke to receiue *Don Quixote*, there passed a thousand louing complements, and, at last, taking *Don Quixote* betweene them, they sate downe to dinner.

The Duke inuited *Don Quixote* to the vpper end of the table, which, though he refused ; yet the Duke so importuned him, that he was forced to take it. The Clergy-man sate ouer against him, and the Duke and Duchesse on each side. *Sancho* was by at all, gaping in admiration, to see the honour those Princes did to his Master, and seeing the many ceremonies and intreaties, that passed betwixt the Duke and him, to make him sit downe at the tables end, he sayd, If your Worships will giue mee leaue, Ile tell you a tale that happened in our towne, concerning places. Scarce had *Sancho* sayd this, when *Don Quixote* began to shake, beleeuing certainly he would speake some idle speech. *Sancho* beholding, vnderstood him, and sayd, Feare not, Sir, that I shall be vnmanly, or that I shall say any thing that may not beeto the purpose ; for I haue not forgotten your counsell, touching speaking much or little, well or ill.

I remember nothing, *Sancho* (quoth *Don Quixote*) speake what thou wilt, so thou speake quickly. Well, what I shall speak (quoth *Sancho*) is as true, as my Master, *Don Quixote*, will not let me lie, who is heere present. For me (replide *Don Quixote*) lie as much as thou wilt, for Ile not hinder thee : but take heede what thou speakest. I haue so heeded and re-heeded it, that you shall see I warrant yee. Twere very fit (quoth *Don Quixote*) that your Greatnesses would command this Coxcombe to bee thrust out ; for he will talke you a thousand follies.

Assuredly (quoth the Duchesse) *Sancho* shall not stirre a jot from me ; for I know, hee is very discreet. Discreet yeeres liue your Holiness (quoth *Sancho*) for the good opinion you haue of me, although I deserue it not, and thus sayes my tale : A Gentle-man of our towne, very rich and well borne ; for hee was of the bloud of the *Alami* of *Medina del Campo*, and married with *Dona Mencia de Quinones*, that was daughter to *Don Alonso de Maranon*, Knight of the order of Saint *Iacques*, that was drowned

drowned in the *Herradura*, touching whom that quarrell was not long since in our towne ; for, as I remember, my Master, *Don Quixote*, was in it, where little *Thomas* the Mad-cap, sonne to *Baluaastro* the Smith, was wounded. Is not all this true, Master mine ? Say by your life, that these Lords may not hold me for a prating Lier.

Hitherto (sayd the Clergy-man) I rather hold thee for a Prater, then a Lier : but from henceforward, I know not for what I shall hold thee. Thou giuest so many witnesses, and so many tokens, *Sancho*, that I cannot but say (quoth *Don Quixote*) thou tellest true : on with thy tale, and make an end ; for I thinke thou wilt not haue ended these two dayes. Let him goe on (quoth the Duchesse) to doe me a pleasure, and let him tell his tale, as he pleaseth, though hee make not an end these six dayes ; for if they were so many yeeres, they would bee the best that euer I passed in my life.

I say then, my Masters, that the sayd Gentle-man I told you of at first, and whom I know, as well as I know one hand from another (for, from my house to his, tis not a bow-shoot) inuited a poore, but honest Husband-man. On, Brother (sayd the Clergy-man) for, mee thinkes, you trauell with your tale, as if you would not rest till the next world. In lesse then halfe this, I will, if it please God (quoth *Sancho*) and so I proceed : The sayd Husband-man comming to the said Gentle-man Inuiters house, (God be mercifull to him, for he is now dead) and for a further token, they say, died like a Lambe ; for I was not by : for at that time I was gone to another towne to reaping.

I prethee (quoth the Clergy-man) come backe from your reaping, and without burying the Gentle-man (except you meane to make more obsequies) end your tale. The businesse then (quoth *Sancho*) was this, that both of them being ready to sit downe at table ; for, me thinkes, I see them now, more then euer. The Dukes receiued great pleasure, to see the distaste that the Clergy-man tooke, at the delayes and pawses of *Sancho's* tale. And *Don Quixote* consumed himselfe in choller and rage. Then thus (quoth *Sancho*) both of them being ready to sit downe, the Husband-man contended with the Gentle-

After he had begun a tale without head or foot, hee asks a question.

man not to sit vppermost, and he with the other, that he should, as meaning to command in his owne house: but the Husband-man presuming to be mannerly, and courteous, neuer vvould, till the Gentleman very moody, laying hands vpon him, made him sit downe perforce, saying, Sit downe, you Thresher; for where-soere I sit, that shall be the Tables end to thee: and now you haue my Tale, and truly I beleue, it was brought in heere pretty-well to the purpose.

*Don Quixote's* face was in a thousand colours, that Iaspered vpo his browe. The Lords dissembled their laughter, that *Don Quixote* might not be too much abashed, when they perceiued *Sancho's* knauery: and to change discourse, that *Sancho* might not proceed with other fooleries, the Duchesse asked *Don Quixote* what newes he had of the Lady *Dulcinea*, and if hee had sent her for a Present lately, any Gyants, or Bug-beares, since he could not but haue overcome many. To which *Don Quixote* answered, Lady mine; my misfortunes, although they had a beginning, yet they will neuer haue ending: Gyants, Elues, and Bug-beares I haue ouer-come and sent her; but where should they finde her that is enchanted, and turned into the foulest creature that can be? I know not (quoth *Sancho*) me-thinkes she is the fairest creature in the world, at least I know well, that for her nimblenisse and leaping, shee'll giue no aduantage to a Tumbler: In good faith, my Lady Duchesse, shee leapes from the ground vpon an Asse, as if she were a Carte. Haue you seene her enchanted, *Sancho*, said the Duke? How? seene her? (quoth *Sancho*) Why, who the Deuill but I was the first that fell into the trick of her Enchantment? shee is as much Enchanted as my Asse?

The Clergy-man, that heard them talke of Gyants, Elues, and Bug-beares, and Enchantments, fell into reckoning, that that was *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, whose story the Duke ordinarily read, and for which hee had diuers times reprehended him, telling him, twas a madnesse to read such fopperies, and being assured of the certainty which he suspected, speaking to the Duke very angrily, hee said: Your Excellency ought to giue God Almighty an accout for this mans folly. This *Don Quixote*,

a A good mts-  
take.

or Don Cox-combe, or how doe you call him, I suppose hee is not so very an Ideot as your Excellency would make him, giuing him ready occasions to proceed in his empty-brain'd madnesse. And framing his discourse to *Don Quixote*, he said:

And who, good-man Dull-pate hath thrust into your braine, that you are a Knight Errant, that you ouercome Gyants, and take Bug-beares? get you in Gods name, so be it spoken, returne to your house, and bring vp your children if you haue them, and looke to your stocke, and leaue your ranging thorow the vvorld, blowing bubbles, and making all that know you, or not know you, to laugh. Where haue you euer found vvith a mischief, that there haue beene, or are Knights Errant? vvhere any Gyants in Spaine? or Bug-beares in *Mancha*? or Enchanted *Dulcinea's*, with the rest of your troope of simplicities?

*Don Quixote* was very attentiu to this Venerable mans discourse, and seeing him now silent, vvithout any respect of the Dukes, vvith an angry countenance, he stood vp and said, But his answer deserues a Chapter by it selfe.

## CHAP. XXXII.

Of *Don Quixotes* answer to his Reprehender, with other successes as wise as witty.

**D**On *Quixote* being thus vpon his legges, and trembling from head to foot, like a man filled with quicke-siluer, with a hasty and thicke voyce, said, The place, and Presence before whom I am, and the respect I haue, and alwaies had to men of your Coat, do binde and tye vp the hands of my iust wrath; so that as well for what I haue said, as for I know, all know that women, & gowned mens weapons are the same, their tongues: I vvill enter into single combat with you with mine, though I rather expected good counsaile from you, then infamous reuillings; good and well-meant reprehensions require and aske other circumstances, other points; at least, your publicke and so bitter reprehensions haue passed all limits, and your gentle:

gentle ones had beene better: neyther was it fit that without knowledge of the sinne you reprehend, you call the sinner without more adoe, Cox-combe and Ideot. Well, for which of my Coxcombs scene in mee, doe you condemne and reuile mee, and command me home to my owne house, to looke to the gouerning of it, my wife and children, without knowing whether I haue any of these? Is there no more to be done, but in a hurry to enter other mens houses, to rule their owners? nay one that hath beene a poore *Pedagogue*, or hath not scene more world then twenty miles about him, to meddle so roundly to giue Lawes to Chivalry, and to iudge of Knights Errant? Is it happily a vaine plotte, or time ill spent, to range thorow the world, not seeking it's dainties, but the bitterness of it, whereby good men aspire to the seat of immortality? If your Knights, your Gallants, or Gentlemen should haue called me Cox-comb, I should haue held it for an affront irreparable: but that your poore Schollers account mee a madde-man, that neuer trod the paths of Knight Errantry, I care not a chip; a Knight I am, a Knight Ile die, if it please the most Highest. Some goe by the spacious field of proud ambition, others by the way of seruile and base flattery, a third sort by deceitfull hypocrisie, and few by that of true Religion: But I by my starres inclination goe in the narrow path of Knight-Errantry; for whose exercise I despise wealth, but not honor. I haue satisfied grieuances, redressed wrongs, chastised insolencies, overcome Gyants, trampled ouer Sprites; I am enamoured, onely because there is a necessity Knights Errant should bee so, and though I be so, yet I am not of those vicious Amorists, but of your chaste *Platonick*. My intentions alwaies aime at a good end, as, to doe good to men, & hurt to none: If he that vnderstands this, if he that performs it, that practiseth it, deserue to be called foole, let your Greatness iudge, excellent Duke and Duchesse.

Well, I aduise you (quoth *Sancho*) Master mine, speake no more in your owne behalfe, for there is no more to bee said, no more to be thought, no more persecuting in the world: besides this Signior, denying as he hath done, that there neyther is, nor hath beene Knight Errant in the world, no marvell though he know

knowes not what he hath said. Are you trow (quoth the Clergy man) that *Pansa*, whom they say your Master hath promised an Iland? Marry am I (said he) and I am hee that deserues it, as well as any other, and I am he that <sup>a He blunders out Prouerbs as usually to no purpose, which is Sancho's parts alwaies.</sup> keepe company with good men, and thou shalt be as good as they: and I am one of those that: Not with whom thou wert bred, but with whom thou hast fedde: and of those that: Leane to a good tree, and it will shadow thee: I haue leane to my Master, and it is many months since I haue kept him company, and I am his other selfe. If God please, liue he, and I shall liue, hee shall not want Emperors to command, nor I Islands to gouerne.

No surely, friend *Sancho*, straight, said the Duke, for I in Signior *Don Quixote's* name, will giue thee an odde one of mine, of no small worth. Kneele downe, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, & kisse his Excellencies foot, for the fauour hee hath done thee: which *Sancho* did: but when the Clergy-man saw this, hee rose vp vnderfull angry, saying; By my holy Order, I am about to say, Your Excellency is as mad as one of these sinners, and see if they must not needs be madde, when wise men cano- nize their madnesse; your Excellency may doe well to stay with them, for whilest they be heere, Ile get mee home and saue a labour of correcting what I cannot amend, and without any more adoe, leauing the rest of his dinner, he went away, the Duke & the Duchesse not being able to pacifie him, though the Duke said not much to him, as being hindred with laughter at his vn- seasonable choller.

When he had ended his laughter, he said to *Don Quixote*, Sir Knight of the Lyons, you haue answered so deeply for your selfe, that you left nothing vn-satisfied to this your grieuance, which though it seeme to be one, yet is not; for as women haue not the power to wrong, neyther haue Church-men; as you best know. Tis true (quoth *Don Quixote*) the cause is, that hee who cannot be wronged, can doe no wrong to any body; women, children, and Churchmen, as they cannot defend themselves, when they are offended, so they cannot suffer an affront and a grieuance, there is this difference (as your Excellency best knowes: The affront comes from one that may doe it, and be

able to make it good, the grievance may come from eyther party without affronting. For example. One stands carelesly in the street, some ten men come armed, and bastonadoing him, he claps hand to his sword, and doth his deuoir: but the multitude of his assailants hinder him of his purpose, which is to bee reuenged; this man is wronged, but not affronted, and this shal be confirmed by another example. One stands vvith his backe turned, another comes and strikes him, and when he hath done, runnes away, th'other followes, but ouertakes him not: he that receiued the blow, is wronged, but not affronted, because the affront ought to haue beene maintained: if he that strooke him (though he did it basely) stand still and face his enemy, then hee that was strooke is wronged and affronted both together: wronged, because he was strooke cowardly; affronted, because he that strooke him, stood still to make good what he had done: and so according to the Lawes of cursed *Duel*, I may be wronged, but not affronted; for children nor women haue no apprehension, neyther can they flye, nor ought to stand still: and so is it vvith the Religious; for these kindes of people want Armes offensive and defensiu, so that though they be naturally bound to defend themselves, yet they are not to offend any body: and though euen now I said I was wronged, I saw now I am not; for hee that can receiue no affront, can giue none: for which causes I haue no reason to resent, nor doe I, the words that that good man gaue me; onely I could haue wished he had stayed a little, that I might haue let him see his error, in saying or thinking there haue beene no Knights Errant in the world; for if *Amadis* had heard this, or one of those infinite numbers of his linage, I know it had not gone well with his Worship.

He sweare that (quoth *Sancho*) they would haue giuen him a slash, that should haue cleaued him from head to foot, like a Pomegranate, or a ripe Muske Melon; they were pretty Youths to suffer such iests. By my Holidam, I thinke certainly if *Rinaldos de Montalnan* had heard these speeches from the poore knaue, he had bung'd vp his mouth that he should not haue spoken these three yeeres; I, I, hee should haue dealt with them, and see how he would haue scaped their hands.

The

The Duchesse was ready to burst with laughter at *Sancho*, and to her minde, she held him to be more conceited, and madder then his Master, and many at that time were of this opinion.

Finally, *Don Quixote* was pacified, and dinner ended, and the cloth being taken away, there came foure Damozels, one vvith a silver Bason, the other with an Ewre, a third with two fine white Towels, the fourth with her arms tucked vp to the middle and in her white hands (for white they were) a white Naples washing ball. Shee with the Bason came very mannerly, and set it vnder *Don Quixote's* chinne, who very silent, and wounding at that kinde of ceremony, taking it to bee the custome of the Country, to wash their faces in stead of their hands, he stretcht out his face as far as he could, & instantly the Ewre began to rain vpon him, and the Damozell with the soape ran ouer his beard apace, raising white flakes of snow, for such were those scow-rings, not only vpon his beard, but ouer all the face and eyes of the obedient Knight, so that he was forced to shut them.

The Duke and Duchesse that knew nothing of this, stood expecting what would become of this Lauatory. The Barber Damozell, when she had soaped him well with her hand, feined that she wanted more water, and made her with the Ewre, to goe for it, whilest *Signior Don Quixote* expected; which shee did, and *Don Quixote* remained one of the strangest pictures to moue laughter that could be imagined. All that were present (many in number) beheld him, and as they saw him with a neck halfe a yard long, more then ordinary swarthy, his eyes shutte, and his beard full of soape, it was great marnell, and much discretion, they could forbear laughing. The Damozels of the iest cast downe their eyes, not daring to looke on their Lords; whose bodies with choller and laughter euen tickled againe, and they knew not what to doe; eyther to punish the boldnes of the girdles, or reward them for the pastime they receiued to see *Don Quixote* in that manner.

Lastly, she with the Ewre came, and they made an end of washing *Don Quixote*, & straight she that had the towels, wiped & dried him gently, & all foure of them at once making him a low courtesie, would haue gone: but the Duke, because *Don Quixote*



should not fall into the iest) called to the Damozell with the bason, saying, Come and wash me too, and see that you haue water enough. The wench, that was wily and carefull, came and put the bason vnder the Duke, as she had done to *Don Quixote*, and making halte, they washed and scowred him very well, and leauing him dry and cleane, making curtesies, they went away. After, it was knowne that the Duke swore, that if they had not washed him as well as *Don Quixote*, he would punish them for their lightnesse, which they discreetly made amends for, vwith soaping him.

*Sancho* marked all the ceremonies of the Lauatory, and said to himselfe; Lord (thought he) if it be the custome in this Countrie to wash the Squires beards, as well as the Knights? for of my soule and conscience I haue need of it, and if they would, to runne ouer me with a Rasor too.

What saist thou to thy selfe, *Sancho*, said the Duchesse? I say, Madam, (quoth he) that I haue heard that in other Princes Palaces they vse to giue water to wash mens hands when the cloth is taken away, but not lie to scowre their beards, and therefore I see tis good to liue long, to see much; although tis said also, that he that liues long, suffers much, though to suffer one of these Lauatories, is rather pleasure then paine.

Take no care *Sancho*, quoth the Duchesse, for Ile make one of my Damozels wash thee, and if need be, lay thee a bucking. For my beard (quoth *Sancho*) I should bee glad for the present, for the rest, God will prouide hereafter. Looke you, Caruer, said the Duchesse, what *Sancho* desires, doe iust as hee would haue you. The Caruer answered, that Signior *Sancho* should be punctually serued, and so he went to dinner, and carried *Sancho* with him, the Dukes and *Don Quixote* sitting still, and conferring in many and seuerall affaires, but all concerning the practice of Armes and Knight Errantry.

The Duchesse requested *Don Quixote*, to delineate and describe vnto her (since he seemed to haue a happy memory) the beauty & feature of the Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, for according to Fames Trumpet, she thought that shee must needs be the fairest creature in the world, and also of the *Mancha*.

Don

*Don Quixote* sighed at the Duchesses command, and sayd, If I could take out my heart, and lay it before your Greatnesses eyes, vpon this table in a dish, I would saue my tongue a labour to tell you that, which would not be imagined; for in my heart, your Excellency should see her liuely depainted: but why should I be put to describe and delineate exactly, piece for piece, each seuerall beauty of the peerlesse *Dulcinea*, a burden fitter for other backes then mine; an enterprize, in which the pentils of *Parraius*, *Timantes*, and *Apelles*, and the tooles of *Lisippus*, should indeed be employed, to paint and carue her in tables of Marble and Brasse, and *Ciceronian* and *Demosthenian Rhetorike* to praise her.

What meane you by your *Demosthenian*, Signior *Don Quixote*, quoth the Duchesse? *Demosthenian Rhetorike* (quoth hee) is as much to say, as the *Rhetorike* of *Demosthenes*, as *Ciceronian* of *Cicero*, both which were the two greatest *Rhetoricians* in the world. Tis true (quoth the Duke) and yett hee asked your ignorance in asking that question: but for all that, Sir *Don Quixote* might much delight vs, if he would paint her out; for Ile warrant, though it bee but in her first draught, shee will appeare so well, that the most faire will enuy her. I would willingly (syd he) if misfortune had not blotted out her *Idea*, that nor long since befell her, which is such, that I may rather bewaile it, then describe her; for your Greatnesses shall vnderstand, that as I went heeretofore to haue kissed her hands, and receiue her benediction, leaue and licence, for this my third fally, I found another manner of one then I looked for, I found her enchanted, and turned from a Princess to a Countrey-wench, from faire to foule, from an Angell to a Deuill, from sweet to contagious, from well-spoken to rusticke, from modest to skittish, from light to darknesse, and finally from *Dulcinea del Toboso*, to a Peasantesse of *Sayago*.

Now God defend vs (quoth the Duke) with a loud voyce, who is he that hath done so much hurt to the world? Who hath taken away the beauty that cheered it? the quicknesse that entertained it? and the honesty that did credit it? Who, sayd hee? who but some cursed Enchanter? one of those many enuious



ones that persecute mee? This wicked race borne in the world, to darken and annihilate the exploits of good men, and to giue light and raise the deedes of euill. Enchanters haue me persecuted: Enchanters me persecute: and Enchanters will mee persecute, till they cast me and my lofty Chivalry, into the profound Abysme of forgetfulnesse, and there they hurt and wound mee, where they see I haue most feeling; for to take from a Knight Errant, his Lady, is to take away his eye-sight, with which hee sees the sunne that doth lighten him, and the food that doth nourish him. Oft haue I sayd, and now I say againe, that a Knight Errant without a Mistresse, is like a tree without leaues, like a building without cement, or a shadow without a body, by which it is caused.

There is no more to be sayd (quoth the Duchesse:) but yet if we may giue credit to the History of *Don Quixote*, that not long since came to light, with a generall applause, it is sayd (as I remember) that you neuer saw *Dulcinea*, and that there is no such Lady in the world; but that she is a meere fantastick creature ingendred in your braine, where you haue painted her with all the graces and perfections that you please.

Here is much to be sayd (quoth he?) God knowes, if there be a *Dulcinea* or no in the world, whether she be fantastick, or not: and these be matters, whose iustifying must not be so far searcht into. Neither haue I ingendred or brought forth my Lady, though I contemplate on her, as is fitting, she being a Lady that hath all the parts that may make her famous thorow the whole world: as these; faire, without blemish; graue, without pride; amorous, but honest; thankfull, as courteous; courteous, as well-bred: And finally, of high descent; by reason that beauty shines and marcheth vpon her noble blood, in more degrees of perfection, then in meane-borne beauties.

It is true (sayd the Duke:) but *Don Quixote* must giue mee leaue, to say what the History, where his exploits are written, sayes; where is inferred, that though there be a *Dulcinea* in *Toboso*, or out of it, and that she be faire in the highest degree, as you describe her, yet in her highnesse of birth shee is not equall to your *Oriana's*, your *Alasraxon's*, or your *Madasima's*, with

<sup>a</sup> Names of  
fained Ladies  
in bookes of  
Knight-hood.

with others of this kinde, of which your Histories are full, as you well know. To this I answer you (quoth *Don Quixote*) *Dulcinea* is vertuous, and Vertue addes to Linage, and one that is meane and vertuous, ought to be more esteemed, then another noble and vicious: besides, *Dulcinea* hath one shred that may make her Queene with Crowne and Scepter: for the merit of a faire and vertuous woman, extends to doe greater miracles, and although not formally, yet virtually shee hath greater fortunes layd vp for her.

I say, Signior *Don Quixote* (quoth the Duchesse) that in all you speake, you goe with your leaden plummet, and, as they say, with your sounding line in your hand, and that henceforward I will beleue, and make all in my house beleue, and my Lord the Duke too, if neede be, that there is a *Dulcinea* in *Toboso*, and that at this day she liues, that she is faire, and well-borne, and deserues that such a Knight, as *Don Quixote*, should serue her, which is the most I can, or know how to endeere her. But yet I haue one scruple left, and, I know not, some kind of inckling against *Sancho*: the scruple is, that the History sayes, that *Pansa* found the sayd Lady *Dulcinea* (when he carried her your Epistle) winnowing a bag of wheat, and for more assurance, that it was red wheat, a thing that makes mee doubt of her high birth.

To which *Don Quixote* replide: Lady mine, you shall know, that all or the most part of my affaires, are cleane different from the ordinary course of other Knights Errant, whether they bee directed by the vnscrutable will of the Destinies, or by the malice of some enuious Enchanter, and as it is euident, that all, or the most of your famous Knights Errant, one hath the fauor not to be enchanted; another, to haue his flesh so impenetrable, that he cannot be wounded, as the famous *Roldan*, one of the twelue Peeres of *France*, of whom it was sayd, that hee could not bee wounded, but vpon the sole of his left foot; and that this too must be with the poynt of a great Pin, and with no other kinde of weapon; so that when *Bernardo del Carpio* did kill him in *Roncesuall*, seeing he could not wound him with his sword, he lifted him in his armes from ground, and stifled him, as minde-

full of the death that *Hercules* gaue *Anteon*, that horrid Gyant, that was sayd to be the sonne of the earth. From all this I infer, that it might be I might haue had some of these fauours, as not to be wounded; for many times, experience hath taught mee, that my flesh is soft and penetrable, or that I might haue the power not to be enchanted; but yet I haue seene my selfe clapt in a cage, where all the world was not able to inclose me, had it not been by vertue of Enchantments; but since I was free, I shall beleue that no other can hinder me: So that these Enchanters, who see, that vpon me they cannot vse their sleights, they reuenge themselves vpon the things I most affect, and meane to kill me, by ill-intreating *Dulcinea*, by whom I liue: and so I beleue, that when my Squire carried my Amballage, they turned her into a Pesant, to bee employed in so base an office, as winnowing of wheat: but I say, that wheat was neither red, nor wheat; but seedes of Orientall Pearles, and for prooffe of this, let me tell your Magnitudes, that comming a while since by *Toboso*, I could neuer finde *Dulcinea's* Palace; and *Sancho*, my Squire, hauing seene her before in her owne shape, which is the fairest in the world, to me she then seemed a foule course Country-wench, and meanly nurtured, being the very Discretion of the world: And since I am not enchanted, neither can I be in all likely-hood, she is she that is enchanted, greeued, turned, chopped and changed, and my enemies haue reuenged themselves on me in her, and for her I must liue in perpetuall sorrow, till shee come to her pristline being.

All this haue I spoken, that no body may stand vpon what *Sancho* sayd, of that sifting and winnowing of hers: for since to me she was changed, no maruell though for him shee were exchanged. *Dulcinea* is nobly borne, & of the best bloud in *Toboso*, of which, I warrant, she hath no small part in her: & for her, that towne shall be famous in after-ages, as *Troy* for *Helen*, and *Spaine* for a *Catua*, though with more honour and reputation: On the other side, I would haue your Lordships know, that *Sancho Panza* is one of the prettiest Squires that euer serued Knight Errant: sometimes he hath such sharpe simplicities, that to thinke whether he be Foole or Knaue, causeth no small content: hee

\* Daughter to an Earle, that betrayed Spaine to the Moores.  
Vide Marian. Hist. de Reb. Hisp.

hath

hath malice enough to be a Knaue; but more ignorance to bee thought a foole; hee doubts of euery thing, and yet beleeueth all: when I thinke sometimes hee will tumble headlong to the foot, hee comes out with some kinde of discretion that lifts him to the clouds.

Finally, I would not change him for any other Squire, though I might haue a City to boot; therefore I doubt, whether it bee good to send him to the Government, that your Greatnesse hath bestowed on him, though I see in him a certaine fitnesse for this you call gouerning; for, trimming his vnderstanding but a very little, hee would proceede with his gouernment, as well as the King with his customes: besides, wee know by experience, that a Gouernour needes not much learning, or other abilities: for you haue a hundred, that scarce can read a word, and yet they gouerne like *Ier-Falcons*: the butinesse is, that their meaning be good, and to hit the matter aright they vndertake; for they shall not want Counsellours, to teach them what they shall doe, as your Gouernours that be Sword-men, and not Schollers, that haue their Assitants to direct them. My counsell should bee to him: That neither bribe he take, nor his due forsake, and some other such toys as these, that I haue within mee, and shall bee declared at fit time to *Sancho's* profit, and the Islands which hee shall gouerne.

To this poynt of their discourse came the Duke, Duchesse, and *Don Quixote*, when straight they heard a great noise of people in the Palace: and *Sancho* came in, into the Hall, vlookt for, all in a maze, with a strainer in stead of a Bib, and after him many Lads, or to say better, Scullions of the kitchen, and other inferior people, & one came with a little kneading tub with water, that seemed, by the colour and sluttishnesse, to bee dish-water, who followed and persecuted *Sancho*, and sought by all meanes to ioyne the vessell to his chinne, and another would haue washed him.

What's the matter, Hoe (quoth the Duchesse?) What's the matter yee to this home? man? What? doe yee not know I am your Gouernour-Elect? To which the Barber-Scullion replied, Gentle-man will not suffer himselfe to bee washed, according

the custome, as my Lord the Duke, and his Master were. Yes marry will I (sayd *Sancho*) in a great huffe: but I would haue cleaner towels, and cleerer sudds, and not so sluttish hands; for there is no such difference betweene my Master and mee, that they should wash him with rose-water, and me with the Devils lie: the customes of great mens Palaces are so much the better, by how little trouble they cause: but your Lauatory custome heere, is worse then Penitentiaries, my beard is cleane, and I neede no such refreshing; and hee that comes to wash mee, or touch a haire of my head (of my beard, I say) sir-reuerence of the company, Ile giue him such a boxe, that Ile set my fist in his skull; for these kinde of ceremonies and soape-layings, are rather flouts, then entertainers of ghests.

The Duchesse was ready to die with laughter, to see *Sancho's* choller, and to heare his reasons; but *Don Quixote* was not very well pleased to see him so ill dressed with his iasperd towell, and hemmed in by so many of the Kitchin Pensioners; so making a low legge to the Dukes, as if he intended to speake, with a graue voyce he spoke to the skoundrels:

Harke, ye Gentlemen, pray let the Youth alone, and get you gone as ye came, if you please, for my Squire is as cleanly as another, and these troughs are as straight and close for him, as your little red clay drinking cups: take my counsaile and leave him, for neither he nor I can abide iells. *Sancho* caught his words out of his mouth, and went on, saying; No, let vm come to make sport with the setting dogge, and Ile let vm alone, as sure as it is now night; let vm bring a comb hither, or what they wil, and curry my beard, and if they finde any thing foule in it, let vm sheare me to fitters. Then quoth the Duchesse (vnable to leaue laughing) *Sancho* sayes well, he is cleane, as he sayes, and needes no washing: and if our custome please him not, let him take his choyce, besides, you ministers of cleanlinesse haue bene very slacke and carelesse, I know not whether I may say, presumptuous, to bring to such a personage and such a beard, in stead of a Bason & Ewre of pure gold, and Diaper towels, your knea ling-troughs and dish-clouts; but you are vmannerly raskals, and like wicked wretches must needs shew the grudge you

you beare to the Squires of Knights Errant.

The raskall regiment, together with the Caruer that came with them, thought verily the Duchesse was in earnest: so they tooke the liue-cloth from *Sancho's* necke, & euen ashamed went their waies, and left him, who seeing himselfe out of that (as he thought) great danger, kneeled before the Duchesse, saying, From great Ladies, great fauors are still expected, this that your worship hath now done me, cannot be recompenced with lesse, then to desire to see my self an armed Knight Errant, to employ my selfe all daies of my life in the seruice of so high a Lady. I am a poor Husbandman, my name is *Sancho Pansa*, children I haue, and serue as a Squire, if in any of these I may serue your Greatnesse, I will be swifter in obeying, then your Ladiship in commanding.

Tis well scene, *Sancho*, quoth the Duchesse, that you haue learnt to be courteous in the very schoole of courtesie: I meane, it seemes well, that you haue been nursed at *Don Quixote's* brest, who is the Creame of complement, and the flower of ceremonies: well fare such a Master, and such a Seruant; the one for North-stare of Knight Errantry, the other for the Starre of Squire-like fidelitie: Rise, friend *Sancho*, for I will repay your courtesie, in making my Lord the Duke as soone as he can, performe the promise he hath made you, of being Gouvernor of the Iland.

With this, their discourse ceased, and *Don Quixote* went to his after-noones sleepe, and the Duchesse desired *Sancho*, that if he were not very sleepeie, hee would passe the afternoone vvith her and her Damozels in a coole roome. *Sancho* answered, that though true it were, that he was vsed in the afternoones to take a some siue houres nappe, yet to doe her goodnesse seruice, hee would do what he could, not to take any that day, and would obey her command: so he parted.

The Duke gaue fresh order for *Don Quixote's* vsage, to be like a Knight Errant, without differing a iot from the ancient stile of these Knights.

## CHAP. XXXIII.

*Of the wholesome discourse that passed betwixt the Duchesse and her Damozels with Sancho Panza, worthy to be read and noted.*

**W**ell the Storie tells vs, that *Sancho* slept not that day, but according to his promise, came, when he had dined, to see the Duchesse, who for the delight she receiued to heare him, made him sit downe by her in a low chaire, though *Sancho*, out of pure mannerlinesse would not sit: but the Duchesse bade him sit as he was Gouvernour, and speake as hee was Squire, though in both respects he deserved the very seate of *Cid Ruydiaz* the Champion.

a The Spaniards lowlie humility.

*Sancho* a shrunk vp his shoulders, obeyed and sate downe, and all the Duchesses Waiting-women and Damozels stood round about her, attending with great silence to *Sancho's* discourse: but the Duchesse spake first, saying;

Now that we are all alone, & that no body heares vs, I would, Signior Gouvernour would resolue me of certaine doubts I haue, arising from the printed History of the Graund *Don Quixote*, one of which is, that since honest *Sancho* neuer saw *Dulcinea*, I say, the Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, neither carried her *Don Quixotes* letter, for it remained in the note-booke in *Sierra Morena*, how he durst feigne the answer, and that he found her lifting of wheat; this being a mocke and a lye, and so preiudiciall to the Lady *Dulcinea's* reputation, and so vnbesitting the condition and fidelity of a faithfull Squire.

Here *Sancho* rose without answering a word, & softly crooking his body, and with his finger vpon his lippes, he went vp and downe the roome, lifting vp the hangings: which done, he came and sate downe againe, and said, Now I see, Madam, that nobody lies in wait to heare vs, besides the by-standers. I will answer you without feare or flight, all that you haue asked, and all that you will aske mee. And first of all I say, that I hold my Master *Don Quixote*; for an incureable Madde-man, though some-

sometimes he speakes things, that, in my opinion, and so in all theirs that heare him, are so discreet, and carried in so euen a tracke, that the Deuill himselfe cannot speake better; but truly and without scruple, I take him to be a very Franticke; for so I haue it in my mazard, I dare make him beleue that, that hath neither head nor foot, as was the answer of that letter, and another thing that hapned some eight dayes agoe, which is not yet in print, to wit, the Enchantment of my Lady *Dulcinea*; for I made him beleue she is enchanted, it being as true, as the Moone is made of greene cheefe.

The Duchesse desired him to tell her that Enchantment and conceit: which he did, iust as it passed: at which the hearers were not a little delighted. And prosecuting her discourse, the Duchesse sayd, I haue one scruple leapes in my minde, touching what *Sancho* hath told mee, and a certaine buzze comming to mine eares, that tels me; If *Don Quixote de la Mancha* be such a shallow mad-man and Widgin, and *Sancho Panza* his Squire know it; yet why for all that, he serues and followes him, and relies on his vaine promises; doubtlesse, hee is as very a Mad-man and Block-head, as his Master, which being so as it is, it will bee very vnfitting for my Lord the Duke, to giue *Sancho* an Iland to gouerne; for hee that cannot gouerne himselfe, will ill gouerne others.

By'r Lady (quoth *Sancho*) that scruple comes in pudding-time: but bid your Buzze speake plaine, or how hee will; for I know he sayes true; and if I had beene wise, I might long since haue left my Master: but twas my lucke, and this vilde Errantry, I cannot doe withall, I must follow him, wee are both of one place, I haue eaten his bread, I loue him well, he is thankfull, hee gaue me the Asse-colts, and aboue all, I am faithfull, and it is impossible any chance should part vs, but death: and if your Altitude will not bestow the Gouvernement on mee, with lesse was I borne, and perhaps, the missing it might bee better for my conscience; for though I be a foole, yet I vnderstand the Prouerbe that sayes, The Ant had wings to doe her hurt, and it may bee, *Sancho* the Squire may sooner goe to Heauen, then *Sancho* the Gouvernour. Heere is as good bread made, as in France; and in the

\* Their Lem-  
ster breed  
came first out  
of England.

the night *Lono* is as good as my Lady; and vnhappy is that man, that is to breake his fast at two of the clocke in the after-noone; and there's no heart a handfull bigger then another; and the stomacke is filled with the courtest victuals; and the little Fowles in the aire, haue God for their Prouider and Cater; and foure yards of course *Cuenca* cloth, keepe a man as warme, as foure of fine \* *Lemster* wooll of *Segonia*; and when wee once leaue this world, and are put into the earth, the Prince goes in as narrow a path as the Iourney-man; and the Popes body takes vp no more roome then a Sextons, though the one be higher then the other; for when we come to this pit, all are euen, or made so in spite of their teethes, and good-night.

Let mee say againe, If your Lady-ship will not giue mee the Island, as I am a foole, Ile refuse it, for being a wise-man: for I haue heard say, The neerer the Church, the further from God; and, All is not gold that glistreth; and that from the oxen, plough and yokes, the Husband-man *Bamba* was cholen for King of *Spaine*: and that *Rodrigo*, from his tilles, sports, and riches, was cast out to be eaten by snakes (if we may beleue the rimes of the old *Romants*, that lye not.)

Why, no more they doe not (sayd *Donna Rodriguez*, the Wayting-woman, that was one of the Auditours) for you haue one *Romant* that sayes, that *Don Rodrigo* was put aliue into a Tombe full of Toades, Snakes, and Lizards, and some two dayes after, from within the Tombe, hee cryed with a low and pitifull voyce, *Now they eat; now they eat me in the place where I sinned most*: and according to this, this man hath reason to say, he had rather be a Labourer then a King, to bee eaten to death with vermine.

The Duchesse could not forbear laughing, to see the simplicity of her woman; nor to admire to heare *Sancho's* proverbiall reasons, to whom she sayd; Honest *Sancho* knowes, that when a Gentle-man once makes a promise, he will performe it, though it cost him his life. My Lord and Husband the Duke, though he be no Errant, yet hee is a Knight, and so hee will accomplish his promise of the Island, in spite of enuy or the worlds malice. Be of good cheere, *Sancho*; for when thou least dreamest  
of

of it, thou shalt be seated in the Chayre of thy Island, & of Estate, and shalt claspe thy Gouvernement in thy robes of Tissue. All that I charge thee, is, that you looke to the governing your Vassalls, for you must know, they are all well-borne and loyall.

For governing (quoth *Sancho*) there's no charging mee; for I am naturally charitable and compassionate to the poore, and of him that does well they will not speake ill, and by my Holidam they shall play me no false play: I am an old dog, & vnderstand all their Hitt, hitt: and I can snuffe my selfe when I see time, and I will let no cobwebs fall in my eyes, for I know vvhether my shoo wrings me: this I say, because honest men shall haue hand and heart, but wicked men neyther foot nor fellowship. And me-thinkes for matter of Gouvernement, there is no more but to begin, and in fifteene daies Gouvernour, I could manage the place, and know as well to gouerne, as to labour, in which I was bredde. You haue reason, *Sancho*, quoth the Duchesse, for no man is borne wise, and Bishops are made of men, and not of stones. But turning to our discourse that wee had touching the Lady *Dulcinea's* Enchantment, I am more then assured, that that imagination that *Sancho* had to put a tricke vpon his Master, and to make him thinke the Country wench was *Dulcinea*, that if his Master knew her not, all was inuented by some of those Enchanters that persecute Signior *Don Quixote*; for I know partly, that that Country wench that leapt vpon the Asse-colt, was, and is *Dulcinea*, and *Sancho* thinking to be the deceiver, is himselfe deceived; and there is no more to be doubted in this, then in things that we neuer saw: and know, *Sancho*, that here we haue our Enchanters too, that loue, and tell vs plainly and truly, what passeth in the world, without trickes or deuices; and beleue me, *Sancho*, that leaping wench was, and is *Dulcinea*, who is enchanted as the Mother that brought her forth, and when we least thinke of it, we shall see her in her proper shape, and then *Sancho* will thinke he was deceived.

All this may be (quoth *Sancho*) and now will I beleue all that my Master told me of *Montesino's* Caue, where he said he saw our Mistresse *Dulcinea*, in the same apparell and habit, that I said I had seene her in, when I enchanted her at my pleasure;  
and



and it may be, Madam, all is contrary (as you say) for from my rude witte, it could not be presumed that I should in an instant make such a witty lye; neyther doe I belecue that my Master is so madde, that with so poore & weake a perswasion as mine, he should beleue a thing so incredible: but for all that, good Lady, doe not thinke me to be so maleuolent, for such a Leeke as I am, is not bound to boare into the thoughts and maliciousnesse of most wicked Enchanters. I fained that, to scape from my Masters threats, and not with any purpose to hurt him, and if it fell out otherwise, God is aboue that iudgeth all harts. Tis true, said the Duchesse, but tell me, *Sancho*, what is that you said of *Montesinos* Caue? I should be glad to heare it. Then *Sancho* began to tell word for word, all that passed in that Aduenture. Which when the Duchesse heard, shee said, Out of this successe may be inferred, that since the Grand *Don Quixote* sayes that he saw there the same labouring wench that *Sancho* saw at their comming from *Toboso*, without doubt it is *Dulcinea*, and that in this the Enchanters heere are very listning and wary. This I said (quoth *Sancho*) that if my Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso* be enchanted, at her peril bee it, for Ile haue nothing to doe with my Masters Enemies, who are many, and bad ones. True it is, that she that I saw was a Country wench, & so I held her, & so I iudged her to be; & if that were *Dulcinea*, Ile not meddle with her, neyther shall the Blowze passe vpon my account. I, I, let's haue giuing & taking euery foot. *Sancho* said it, *Sancho* did it, *Sancho* turned, *Sancho* return'd, as if *Sancho* were a dish-clout, & not the same *Sancho Panza* that is now in Print all the world ouer, as *Samson Carrasco* told mee, who at least is one that is Bachelorized in *Salamanca*, and such men cannot lye, but when they list, or that it much concernes them: so there is no reason any man should deale with me, since I haue a good report, and as I haue heard my Master say, Better haue an honest name then much wealth. Let vniioyne mee to this Gouvernement, and they shall see wonders: for hee that hath beene a good Squire, will easily be a good Gouvernour.

Whatsoeuer *Sancho* hitherto hath said (quoth the Duchesse) is *Catonian* sentences, or at least taken out of the very entrailes

of

of *Michael Verinus*, *Florentibus occidit annis*. Well, well, to speake as thou dost, a badde cloake often hides a good drinker. Truly Madam, said *Sancho*, I neuer drunke excelliue in my life, to quench my thirst sometimes I haue, for I am no hypocrite, I drinke when I am dry, and when I am vrged too, for I loue not to be nice or vmannerly; for what heart of marble is there, that will not pledge a friends carowse? but though I take my cup, I goe not away drunke: besides, your Knight Errants Squires ordinarily drinke water, for they alwaies trauell by Forrests, Woods, Medowes, Mountaines, cragy Rockes, and meete not with a pittance of wine, though they would giue an eye for it.

I beleue it, said the Duchesse, and now, *Sancho*, thou maist repose thy selfe, and after we will talke at large, and giue order how thou maist be ioyned, as thou saist, to the Gouvernement.

*Sancho* againe gaue the Duchesse thankses, but desired her she would doe him the kindnesse, that his Dapple might bee vuell lookt to. What Dapple (quoth shee?) My Aisse (said *Sancho*) for not to call him so, I say my Dapple: and when I came into the Castle, I desired this waiting woman to haue a care on him, and she grew so loud with me, as if I called her vgly or old, for I held it fitter for them to prouender Aisses, then to authorize Roomes: Lord God, a Gentleman of my towne could not endure these waiting women. Some Pefant, quoth *Donna Rodriguez* the waiting woman; for if he had beene a Gentleman, and well bredde, hee would haue extolled them aboue the Moone. Goe too, no more (quoth the Duchesse) Peace *Rodriguez*, and be quiet, *Sancho*, and let mee alone to see that *Sancho's* Aisse be made much of; for being *Sancho's* household-stuffe, I will hold him on the Apples of mine eyes. Let him be in the stable (quoth *Sancho*) for neither hee nor I am worthy to be so much as a minute vpon those Apples of your Greatnesse eyes, and I had as lief stabbe my selfe, as consent to that; for although my master sayes, that in courtesies one should rather lose by a card too much, then too little; yet in these Aisse-like courtesies, and in your Apples, it is fit to bee wary and proceed with discretion. Carry him *Sancho* (quoth the Duchesse) to thy Gouvernement,

Q

for



for thiere thou maist cherish him at thy pleasure, and mantime him from his labour. Doe not thinke you haue spoken iestingly, Lady Duchesse, (quoth *Sancho*) for I haue seene more then two Asses goe to Gouvernments, and 'twould be no nouelty for me to carry mine.

*Sancho's* discourse renewed in the Duchesse more laughter and content, and sending him to repose, shee went to tell the Duke all that had passed betweene them, and both of them plotted and gaue order, to put a iest vpon *Don Quixote* that might be a famous one, and suting to his Knightly stile, in which kind they played many pranks with him, so proper and handsome, that they are the best contained amongst all the Aduentures of this Grand History.

#### CHAP. XXXIV.

*How notice is giuen for the disenchanting of the peerelesse Dulcinea Del Toboso, which is one of the most famous Aduentures in all this booke.*

Great was the pleasure the Duke and Duchesse received with *Don Quixote* and *Sancho Pansa's* conuersation, and they resolved to play some trickes with them, that might carry some twi-lights and appearances of Aduentures. They tooke for a Motiue that which *Don Quixote* had told vnto them of *Montesinos* Caue, because they would haue it a famous one: but that which the Duchesse most admired at, was, that *Sancho's* simplicity should be so great, that he should beleue for an infallible truth, that *Dulcinea* was enchanted, hee himselfe hauing beene the Enchanter, and the Impostor of that businesse: So giuing order to their seruants for all they would haue done, some weeke after they carried *Don Quixote* to a Boare-hunting, with such a troope of wood-men and hunters, as if the Duke had beene a crowned King. They gaue *Don Quixote* a hunters sute, and to *Sancho* one of finest Greene cloth: but *Don Quixote* would not put on his, saying; That shortly hee must returne a-

again to the hard exercise of Armes, and that therefore he could carry no Wardrobes or Sumpters. But *Sancho* tooke his, meaning to sell it with the first occasion offered.

The wisht for-day being come, *Don Quixote* armed himselfe, and *Sancho* clad himselfe, and vpon his Dapple, (for hee would not leaue him, though they had giuen him a horse) thrust himselfe amongst the troope of the Wood men. The Duchesse was brauely atired, and *Don Quixote* out of pure courtesie and manners, tooke the reines of her Palfrey, though the Duke would not consent: at last they came to a wood that was betweene two high mountaines, where taking their stands, their lanes and paths, and the hunters deuided into seuerall stands, the chase began with great noyse, hooting and hollowing, so that one could scarce heare another, as well for the cry of the dogges, as for the sound of the Hornes. The Duchesse alighted, and with a sharpe Iauelin in her hand, shee tooke a stand, by which she knew some wilde Boares were vsed to passe. The Duke also alighted and *Don Quixote*, and stood by her. *Sancho* stayed behinde them all, but stirred not from Dapple, whom hee durst not leaue, lest some ill chance should befall him, and they had scarce lighted, and set themselues in order with some seruants, when they saw there came a huge Boare by them, baited vwith the dogges, and followed by the hunters, gnashing his teeth & tuskes, and foaming at the mouth: and *Don Quixote* seeing him, buckling his shield to him: and laying hand on his sword, went forward to encounter him, the like did the Duke with his Iauelin; but the Duchesse would haue beene formost of all, if the Duke had not stopped her. Onely *Sancho*, when he saw the valiant Beast, left Dapple, and began to scudde as fast as hee could, and strining to get vp into a high Oake, it was not possible for him, but being euen in the midst of it, fastned to a bough, and strining to get to the toppe, he was so vn lucky and vnfortunate, that the bough broke, and as he was tumbling to the ground, he hung in the ayre fastned to a snagge of the Oake, vnable to come to the ground, and seeing himselfe in that perplexity, and that his Greene coat was torne, and thinking, that if that wilde beast should come thither, he might lay hold on him, he began

to cry out and call for helpe so outrageously, that all that heard him, and saw him not, thought verily some wilde beast was deuouring him.

Finally, the Tuskie Boare was laid along, with many iauelins points, and *Don Quixote* turning aside to *Sancho's* noyse, that knew him by his note, he saw him hanging on the Oake, and his head downward, and Dapple close by him, that neuer left him in all his calamity, and *Cid Hamete* sayes, that hee seldome saw *Sancho* without Dapple, or Dapple without *Sancho*, such was the loue and friendship betwixt the couple.

*Don Quixote* went and vnhung *Sancho*, who seeing himselfe free, and on the ground, beheld the torne place of his hunting sute, and it grieved him to the soule, for hee thought hee had of that sute at least an inheritance. And now they layed the Boare athwart vpon a great Mule, and couering him with Rosemary bushes, and Myrtle boughes, he was carried in signe of their victorious spoiles, to a great field-Tent, that was set vp in the midst of the wood, where the Tables were set in order, and a dinner made ready, so plentifull and well drest, that it well shewed the bounty and magnificence of him that gaue it.

*Sancho*, shewing the wounds of his torn garment to the Duchesse, said, If this had beene hunting of the Hare, my coate had not seene it selfe in this extremity: I know not what pleasure there can be in looking for a beast, that if he reach you with a tuske, he may kill you: I haue often heard an olde song, that sayes, *Of the Beares maist thou be eat; as was Faula the great.* He was a Gothish King (quoth *Don Quixote*) that going a hunting in the mountaines, a Beare ate him. This I say (said *Sancho*) I would not that Kings and Princes should thrust themselues into such dangers, to enioy their pleasure; for what pleasure can there be to kill a beast that hath committed no fault?

You are in the wrong, *Sancho*, quoth the Duke; for the exercise of beast-hunting is the necessariest for Kings and Princes that can bee. The chase is a shew of Warre, vvhether there be stratagems, crafts, deccits, to ouercome the enemy at pleasure;

sure; in it you haue sufferings of cold and intolerable heates, sleepe and idleness are banished, the powers are corroborated, the members agilitated. In conclusion, tis an exercise that may be vsed vvithout preiudice to any body, and to the pleasure of euery body, and the best of it is, that it is not common, as other kindes of sports are, except flying at the fowle, onely fit for Kings and Princes. Therefore (*Sancho*) change thy opinion, and when thou art a Gouverneur, follow the chase, and thou shalt be a hundred times the better.

Not so, quoth *Sancho*, tis better for your Gouverneur, to haue his legges broken, and be at home: twere very good that poore suiters should come and seeke him, and hee should be taking his pleasure in the woods: twould bee a sweet Government yfaith. Good faith sir, the Chase and Pastimes are rather for idle companions then Gouvernours: My sport shall be Vyed Trumpe at Christinas, and at Skettle pinnes Sundaies and Holidais; for your hunting is not for my condition, neyther doth it agree with my conscience.

Pray God, *Sancho* it be so (quoth the Duke) for to doe and to say, goe a fenerall way. Let it be how twill, (said *Sancho*) for a good paymaster needes no pledge, and Gods helpe is better then early rising, and the belly carries the legges, and not the legges the belly; I meane, that if God helpe mee, and I doe honestly what I ought, vvithout doubt I shall gouerne as well as a *Ier-Falcon*, I, I, put your finger in my mouth, and see if I bite or no.

A mischiese on thee, cursed *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, and when shall wee heare thee (as I haue often told thee) speake a wise speech, without a Prouerbe? My Lords, I beseech you leaue this Dunce, for he will grinde your very soules, not with his two, but his two thousand Prouerbs, so seasonable, as such be his health or mine, if I hearken to them.

*Sancho's* Prouerbs (quoth the Duchesse) although they bee more then *Mallars*, yet they are not lesse to be esteemed then his, for their sententious breuity. For my part, they more delight mee then others, that bee farre better, and more fitting.

With these & such like saucy discourses, they went out of the tent to the wood, to seeke some more sport, and the day was soone past, and the night came on, and not so light and calme as the time of the yeere required, it being about Mid-summer: but a certaine dismalnesse it had, agreeing much with the Dukes intention, and so as it grew to be quite dark, it seemed that vpon a sudden, all the wood was on fire, thorow euery part of it, and there were heard heere and there, this way and that way, an infinite company of Cornets, and other warlike instruments, and many troopes of horse that passed thorow the wood; the light of the fire, and the sound of the warlike instruments, did as it were blinde, and stunn'd the eyes and eares of the by-standers, and of all those that were in the wood. Straight they heard a company of a Moorish cries, such as they vse when they ioyne battell, Drums and Trumpets sounded, and Fifes, all, as it were, in an instant, and so fast, that he that had had his senses, might haue lost them, with the confused sound of these instruments.

The Duke was astonish'd, the Duchesse dismay'd, *Don Quixote* wondred, *Sancho* trembled: And finally, euen they that knew the occasion, were frighted: their feare caused a generall silence, and a Post in a Devils weede passed before them, sounding, in stead of a Corner, a huge hollow Horne, that made a hoarse and terrible noyse. Harke you, Post, quoth the Duke, What are you? Whither goe you? And what men of warre are they that crosse ouer the wood? To which the Post answered, with a horrible and free voyce; I am the Deuill, I goe to seeke *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and they which come heere, are six troopes of Enchanters, that bring the peerelesse *Dulcinea del Toboso* vpon a triumphant Chariot, she comes here enchanted with the braue French man *Montesinos*, to giue order to *Don Quixote*, how she may be dis-enchantred.

If thou wert a Deuill, as thou sayest (quoth the Duke) and as thy shiape shewes thee to bee, thou wouldst haue knowne that Knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*: for hee is heere before thee. In my soule and conscience (quoth the Deuill) I thought not on it; for I am so diuerted with my seuerall cogitations, that I quite forgot the chiefe, for which I came for. Certainly (sayd *Sancho*)

Like the cries  
of the wilde  
Irish.

(*cho*) this Deuill is an honest fellow, and a good Christian; for if he were not, he would not haue sworne by his soule and conscience: And now I belecue, that in Hell you haue honest men. Straight the Deuill, without lighting, directing his sight toward *Don Quixote*, sayd; The vn lucky, but valiant Knight *Montesinos*, sends mee to thee, O Knight of the Lyons (for mee thinkes now I see thee in their pawes) commanding mee to tell thee from him, that thou expect him heere, where he will meet thee; for he hath with him *Dulcinea del Toboso*, and meanes to giue thee instruction, how thou shalt dis-enchant her; & now I haue done my message, I must away, and the Devils (like me) be with thee: and good Angels guard the rest. And this sayd, he winds his monstrous Horne, and turned his backe, and went, without staying for any answer.

Each one began afresh to admire, especially *Sancho* and *Don Quixote*. *Sancho*, to see that in spite of truth, *Dulcinea* must bee enchanted: *Don Quixote*, to thinke whether that were true that betell him in *Montesinos*'s Caue, and being eleuated in these dumps, the Duke sayd to him; Will you stay, Signior *Don Quixote*? Should I not, quoth he? Heere will I stay couragious and vndanted, though all the Devils in Hell should close with mee. Well (quoth *Sancho*) if I heare another Deuill and another Horne, I'll stay in *Flanders* as much as heere.

Now it grew darker, and they might perceiue many lights vp and downe the wood, like the dry exhalations of the earth in the skie, that seeme to vs to be shooting-stars: besides, there was a terrible noyse heard, iust like that of your creaking wheelles of Oxe-waines, from whose piercing squeake (they say) Beares and Wolves doe flye, if there be any the way they passe. To this tempest, there was another added, that increast the rest, which was, that it seemed, that in all foure parts of the wood, there were foure encounters or battels in an instant: for there was first a sound of terrible Canon-shot, and an infinite company of Guns were discharged, and the voyces of the Combatants seemed to bee heard by and by a farre off, the Moorish cries reiterated.

Lastly, the Trumpets, Cornets, & Hornes, Drums, Canons, and

and Guns, and about all, the fearefull noyse of the Carts, all together made a most confused & horrid sound, which tried *Don Quixotes* uttermost courage, to suffer it: but *Sancho* was quite gone, and fell in a swoond vpon the Duchesses coats, who receiued him, & commanded they should cast cold water in his face; which done, he came to himselfe, iust as one of the Carts of those whistling wheelles came to the place, foure lazie Oxen drew it, couered with blacke clothes; at euery horne they had a lighted Torch tyed, and on the top of the Cart there was a high seat made, vpon which a venerable old man sate, with a beard as white as snow, and so long, that it reached to his girdle: his garment was a long gowne of blacke buckoram; for because the Cart was full of lights, all within it might very well bee discerned and scene: two vgly spirits guided it, clad in the said buckoram, so monstrous, that *Sancho*, after hee had scene them, winked, because he would see vnder no more: when the Cart drew neere to their standing, the venerable olde man rose from his seat, and standing vp with a loud voyce, sayd; *I am the wise Lyr-gander*: and the Cart passed on, hee not speaking a word more.

After this, there passed another Cart in the same manner with another olde man inthronized; who making the Cart stay, with a voyce no lesse lofty then the other, sayd; *I am the wise Al-quise*, great friend to the vngatefull *Vrganda*; and on he went: and straight another Cart came on, the same pace; but hee that sate in the chiefe seat, was no old man (as the rest) but a good robustious fellow, and ill-fauoured, who when hee came neere, rose vp, as the rest; but with a voyce more hoarse and diuellish, sayd; *I am Archelauus* the Enchanter, mortall enemy to *Amadis de Gaule*, and all his kindred: And so on hee passed, all three of these Carts turning a little forward, made a stand, and the troublesome noyse of their wheelles ceased, and straight there was heard no noyse, but a sweet and consenting sound of well-formed musike, which comforted *Sancho*, and hee held it for a good signe, and hee sayd thus to the Duchesse, from whom hee thirled not a foot, not a jot.

Madam, where there is musike, there can bee no ill. Neither  
(quoth

(quoth the Duchesse) where there is light and brightnesse. To which (sayd *Sancho*) the fire giues light, and your bon-fires (as wee see) and perhaps might burne vs: but musike is alwayes a signe of feasting and iollity. You shall see that (quoth *Don Quixote*) for he heard all, and he sayd well, as you shall see in the next chapter.

## CHAP. XXXV.

where is prosecuted the notice, that *Don Quixote* had, of dis-enchanting *Dulcinea* with other admirable accidents.

WHEN the delightfull musike was ended, they might see one of those you call triumphant chariots come towards them, drawne by six dun Mules, but couered with white linnen, and vpon each of them came a Penitentiary with a Torch, clothed likewise all in white: the Cart was twice or thrice as big as the three former, and at the top and sides of it, weretwelve other Penitentiaries, as white as snow, all with their torches lighted, a sight that admired and astonishd ioyntly: and in a high throne sate a Nymph, clad in a vail of cloth of siluer, a world of golden spangles glimmering about her, her face was couered with a fine cloth of Tiffany, for all whose wrinkles the face of a most delicate Damozell was scene thorow it, and the many lights, made them easily distinguish her beauty and yeeres, which (in likely-hood) came not to twenty, nor were vnder senenteene: Next her came a shape, clad in a gowne of those you call Side-garments, downe to her foot, her head was couered with a blacke vayle: but euen as the Cart came to bee iust over-against the Dukes and *Don Quixote*, the musike of the Hoboyes ceased, and the Harps and Lutes that came in the Cart began, and the gowned shape rising vp, vnfolding her garment on both sides, and taking her vail off from her head, shee  
discouered

discouered plainly the picture of raw-boned Death, at which *Don Quixote* was troubled, and *Sancho* afraid, and the Dukes made shew of some timorous resenting. This liue Death standing vp, with a drowzie voice, and a tongue not much waking, began in this manner:

Verſes made  
on purpoſe  
abſurdly, as  
the ſubiect re-  
quired, and ſo  
translated ad  
-verbum.

*I Merlin am, he that in Hiſtories,  
They ſay, the Denill to my Father had,  
(A tale by age ſucceeding authorized)  
The Prince and Monarch of the Magicke Art,  
And Register of deepe Aſtologie,  
Succeeding ages, ſince, me emulate,  
That onely ſeek to ſing and blazon forth  
The rare exploitſ of thoſe Knights Errant braue,  
To whom I bore, and bare a liking great.*

*And howſoeuer of Enchanters, and  
Thoſe that are Wizards or Magicians be,  
Hard the condition rough and diuellish is,  
Yet mine is tender, ſoft, and amorous,  
And unto all friendly, to doe them good.*

*In the obſcure and darkeſt Caues of Diſ,  
whereas my ſoule hath ſtill beene entertain'd  
In forming Circles and of Characters,  
I heard the lamentable note, of faire  
And peerleſſe Dulcinea del Toboſo.*

*I knew of her Enchantment and hard hap,  
Her transformation, from a goodly Dame  
Into a Ruſticke wench, I ſorry was,  
And ſhutting vp my ſpirit within this hollow,  
This terrible and ſierce Anatomy,*

when

*when I had turn'd a hundred thouſand bookes  
Of this my diuellish Science and vnconth,  
I come to giue the remedy that's fit,  
To ſuch a griefe, and to an ill ſo great.*

*Oh Glory thou of all, that doe put on  
Their coats of ſteele and hardeſt Diamond,  
Thou light, thou Lanthorne, Path, North-ſtar, and  
To thoſe that caſting of their ſluggiſh ſleepe, (Guide  
And feather-beds, themſelues accommodate  
To uſe the exerciſe of bloody Armes,  
To thee, I ſay, oh neuer praiſ'd enough,  
Not as thou ought'ſt to be: oh Valiant!*

*Oh ioyntly wiſe! to thee, oh Don Quixote,  
The Mancha's Splendour, and the Star of Spain,  
That to recover to her firſt eſtate,  
The peerleſſe Dulcinea del Toboſo.  
It is conuenient that Sancho thy Squire,  
Himſelfe three thouſand, and three hundred giue  
Laſhes, vpon his valiant buttocks both  
Vnto the aire diſcouer'd, and likewise  
That they may vex, and ſmart, & griue him ſore;  
And vpon this, let all reſolued be,  
That of her hard miſfortunes Authors were  
My Maſters, this my cauſe of comming was.*

By Gad (quoth *Sancho*) I ſay not threethouſand; but I will  
as ſoone giue my ſelfe three ſtaps, as three; the Deuill take this  
kinde of diſ-enchanting. What haue my buttocks to doe with  
Enchantments? Verily, if Maſter *Merlin* haue found no other  
meanes to diſ-enchant the Lady *Dulcinea del Toboſo*, ſhee may  
goe enchanted to her graue.

Good-man.

Good-man Rascall (quoth *Don Quixote*) you Garlicke flinkard; I shall take you, and binde you to a tree, as naked as your mother brought you forth, and let mee not say three thousand and three hundred, but Ile giue you sixe thousand and sixe hundred, so well layd on, that you shall not claw them off at three thousand and three hundred plucks, and reply not a word, if thou dost, Ile teare out thy very soule.

Which when *Merlin* heard, quoth he, It must not be so, for the stripes that honest *Sancho* must receiue, must bee with his good will, and not perforce, and at what time hee will, for no time is prefixed him: but it is lawfull for him, if he will redeeme one halfe of this beating, he may receiue it from anothers hand that may lay it on well.

No other, nor laying on (quoth *Sancho*) no hand shall come neere mee: am I *Dulcinea del Toboso's* Mother trow ye? that my buttocks should pay for the offence of her eyes? My Master indeed, he is a part of her, since euery stich while, hee calls her, My life, my soule, my sustenance, my prop; he may be whipped for her, and doe all that is fitting for her dis-enchanting, but for me to whip my selfe, I a bernounce.

\* Mistaken in  
stead of re-  
nounce, for so  
it goes in the  
Spanish.

*Sancho* scarce ended his speech, when the siluer Nymph that came next to *Merlins* Ghost, taking off her thin vaile, she discovered her face, which seemed vnto al to be extraordinary faire, & with a manly grace, and voice not very amiable, directing her speech to *Sancho*, she said, Oh thou vnhappy Squire, soul of lead, & heart of corke, and entrailles of flint, if thou hadst bin bidden, thou face-slaying theefe, to cast thy selfe from a high towie downe to the ground: if thou hadst been wisht, enemy of mankinde, to eat a dozen of Toads, two of Lizardes, and three of Snakes: if thou hadst beene perswaded to kill thy wife and children with some truculent & sharpe Scimitar: no maruel though thou shouldst shew thy selfe nice and squeamish? but to make doe for three thousand and three hundred lashes (since the poorest schoole-boy that is, hath them euery moneth) admires, & stonishes, and affrights all the pittifull entrailles of the Auditors, and of all them that in proceffe of time shall come to the hearing of it: Put, oh miserable and flinty brest; put, I say, thy skittish

Moyles

Moyles eyes, vpon the bals of mine, compared to shining stars, and thou shalt see them weep drop after drop, making furrowes, careeres and pathis, vpon the faire fields of my cheekes. Let it moue thee, knauish and vntoward Monster, that my flourishing age (which is yet but in it's ten, and some yeeeres; for I am nineteene, and not yet twenty) doth consume and wither vnder the barke of a rusticke Labourer: and if now I seeme not so to thee, tis a particular fauour that Signior *Merlin* hath done me who is heere present, onely that my beauty may make thee relent; for the teares of an afflicted fairenesse, turne rockes into cotton, and Tygres into Lambes: Lash, lash that thicke flesh of thine, vn-tamed beast, and rowze vp thy courage from sloth, which makes thee onely fit to eat till thou burst, and set my smooth flesh at liberty, the gentlenesse of my condition, and the beauty of my face, and if for my sake thou wilt not bee mollified, and reduc'd to some reasonable termes, yet doe it for that poore Knight, that is by thee; for thy Master (I say) whose soule I see is trauerfed in his throte, not ten fingers from his lips, expecting nothing, but thy rigid or soft answer, either to come out of his mouth, or to turne backe to his stomacke.

*Don Quixote* hearing this, felt to his throte, and turning to the Duke, sayd; Before God, Sir, *Dulcinea* hath sayd true; for my soule indeed is trauerfed in my throte, like the nocke of a crosse-bow. What say you to this, *Sancho*, quoth the Duchesse? I say what I haue sayd (quoth *Sancho*) that the lashes I bernounce. Renounce thou wouldst say, *Sancho*, sayd the Duke. Let your Greatnesse pardon me, sayd *Sancho*, I am not now to looke into subtilties, nor your letters too many, or too few; for these lashes that I must haue, doe so trouble mee, that I know not what to doe or say: but I would faine know of my Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, where mee learnt this kinde of begging shee hath: shee comes to desire mee to teare my flesh with lashes, and calls mee Leaden Soule, and Vntamed Beast, with a Catalogue of ill names, that the Deuill would not suffer. Doz shee thinke my flesh is made of brasle? Or will her dis-enchantment bee worth any thing to me or no? What basket of white linnen, of shirts, caps, or socks (though I weare none) doth shee bring with her,

to



to soften me with ? onely some kinde of railing or other, knowing that the vsuall prouerbe is, An Ass laden with gold, will go lightly vp hill ; and that Gifts doe enter stone-wals ; and Serue God, & work hard ; and, Better a bird in the hand, then two in the bush. And my master too, that should animate mee to this task, & comfort me, to make me become as soft as wool, he saies, that he will tye me naked to a tree, and double the number of my lashes, & therefore these compassionate Gentles should consider, that they doe not onely wish a Squire to whip himselfe, but a Gouvernour also, as if it were no more, but drinke to your Cherries, let vñ learne, let vñ learne with a pox, to know how to aske, and to demand ; for all times are not alike, and men are not alwayes in a good humor: I am now ready to burst with greese, to see my torne coat, and now you come to bid mee whip my selfe willingly, I being as farre from it, as to turne *Cacicke*.

*Caciques*, are  
great Lords  
amongst the  
West-Indians.

By my faith, *Sancho* (quoth the Duke) if you doe not make your selfe as soft as a ripe fig, you finger not the Gouvernment. Twere good indeede, that I should send a cruell flinty-hearted Gouvernour amongst my Ilanders, that will not bend to the teares of afflicted Damozels, nor to the intreaties, of discreet, imperious, ancient, wise Enchanters. To conclude, *Sancho*, either you must whip your selfe, or bee whipt, or not bee Gouvernour.

Sir (quoth *Sancho*) may I not haue two dayes respite to consider ? No, by no meanes, quoth *Merlin*, now at this instant, and in this place this businesse must bee dispatcht, or *Dulcinea* shall returne to *Montesinos*'s Caue, & to her pristine being of a Country-wench, or as she is, she shall be carried to the *Elyzian* fields, there to expect till the number of these lashes be fulfilled. Goe to, honest *Sancho*, sayd the Duchesse, be of good cheere, shew your lone for your Masters bread that you haue eaten, to whom all of vs are indebted for his pleasing condition, and his high Chiuallry. Say I, sonne, to this whipping-cheere, and hang the Deuill, and let feare goe whistle, a good heart conquers ill fortune, as well thou knowest.

To this, *Sancho* yeelded these foolish speeches, speaking to *Merlin*: Tell me, Signior *Merlin*, sayd he, when the Deuill Post passed

passed by heere, and deliuered his message to my Master from Signior *Montesinos*, bidding him from him hee should expect him heere, because he came to giue order, that my Lady *Dulcinea* should be dis-encharnted, where is he, that hitherto wee haue neither scene *Montesinos*, or any such thing ?

To which, said *Merlin*, Friend *Sancho* ; The Deuill is an Ass, and an arrant Knaue, I sent him in quest of your Master : but not with any message from *Montesinos*, but from me, for he is still in his Caue, plotting, or to say truer, expecting his dis-enchantment, for yet he wants something toward it ; and if hee owe thee ought, or thou haue any thing to doe with him, Ile bring him thee, and set him where thou wilt : and therefore now make an end, and yeeld to his disciplining, and beleue me it will doe thee much good, as well for thy minde as for thy body : for thy minde, touching the charity thou shalt performe, for thy body (for I know thou art of a sanguine complexion, and it can doe thee no hurt to let out some blood.

What a company of Physicians there be in the world, said *Sancho* ? euen the very Enchanters are Physicians. Well, since every body tells me so, that it is good (yet I cannot thinke so) I am content to giue my selfe three thousand & three hundred lashes, on condition that I may bee giuing of them as long as I please, and I will be out of debt as soone as tis possible, that the world may enioy the beauty of the Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, since it appeares, contrary to what I thought, that shee is taken. On condition likewise that I may not draw blood with my whip, and if any lash goe by too, it shall passe for currant: Item, that Signior *Merlin*, if I forget any part of the number (since he knowes all) shall haue a care to tell them, and to let me know how many I want, or if I exceed. For your exceeding, quoth *Merlin*, there needs no telling, for comming to your iust number, forth-with *Dulcinea* shall be dis-encharnted, and shall come in all thankfulness to seeke *Sancho*, to gratifie and reward him for the good deed. So you need not bee scrupulous, eyther of your excellẽce or defect, and God forbid I should deceiue any body in so much as a haire breadth.

Well (quoth *Sancho*) a Gods name bee it, I yeeld to my ill

ill fortune, and with the aforesaid conditions accept of the penitence.

Scarce had *Sancho* spoken these words, when the Waites began to play, and a world of guns were shot off, & *Don Quixote* hung about *Sancho's* necke, kissing his cheekes and forehead a thousand times. The Duke, the Duchesse, and all the by-standers, were wonderfully delighted, and the Cart began to go on, and passing by, the faire *Dulcinea* inclined her head to the Dukes, and made a low courtisie to *Sancho*, and by this the merry morne came on apace, and the flowers of the field began to bloome and rise vp, and the liquid Cristall of the brookes, murmuring thorow the gray pebbles, went to giue tribute to the Riuers, that expected them, the sky was cleere, and the ayre wholesome, the light perspicuous, each by it selfe, and all together shewed manifestly, that the day, whose skirts *Aurora* came trampling on, should be bright and cleere.

And the Dukes being satisfied with the Chase, & to haue obtained their purpose so discreetly and happily, they returned to their Castle, with an intention to second their ieast; for to them there was no earnest could giue them more content.

#### CHAP. XXXVI.

*Of the strange and vn-imagined Aduenture of the afflicted Matron, alias, the Countesse Trifaldi, with a letter that Sancho Panfa wrote to his wife Teresa Panfa.*

**T**He Duke had a Steward of a very pleasant and concealed witte, who played *Merlins* part, and contriued the whole furniture for the passed Aduenture, he it was that made the verses, and that a Page should act *Dulcinea*. Finally, by his Lords leaue, he plotted another piece of worke, the pleasantest and strangest that may be imagined.

The Duchesse asked *Sancho* the next day, if he had yet begun his taske of the penance, for the dis-enchanting of *Dulcinea*; he told her, yes; and that as that night, he had giuen himselfe five lashes.

lashes. The Duchesse asked him, With what? hee answered, with his hand. Those (quoth the Duchesse) are rather claps then lashes: I am of opinion that the sage *Merlin* will not accept of this softnesse, 'twere fitter that *Sancho* tooke the discipline of rowels or bullets with prickles, that may smart, for the butinesse will be effected with blood, and the liberty of so great a Lady will not be wrought so slightly, or with so small a price; and know, *Sancho*, that works of charity are not to be done so slow and lazily, for they will merit nothing.

To which *Sancho* replied, Giue me, Madam, a conuenient lash of some bough, and I will lash my selfe, that it may not smart too much; for let me tell your Worship this, that though I am a Clowne, yet my flesh is rather Cotton then Mattresse, and there's no reason I should kill my selfe for anothers good. You say well (quoth the Duchesse) to morrow Ile giue you a whip that shall fit you, and agree with the tendernesse of your flesh, as if it were a kinne to them. To which (quoth *Sancho*) Lady of my soule, I beseech you know, that I haue written a letter to my wife *Teresa Panfa*, letting her know all that hath hapned to me since I parted from her; heere I haue it in my bosome, and it wants nothing but the superscription: I would your discretion would read it, for mee thinkes it goes fitte for a Gouvernour, I meane, in the same stile that Gouvernours should write. And who penned it, said the Duchesse? Who should, said he, Sinner that I am, but I my selfe? And did you write it (quoth shee)? Nothing lesse (said he) for I can neither write nor read, though I can set to my firme. Let's see your letter, quoth the Duchesse, for I warrant, thou shewest the ability and sufficiency of thy wit in it. *Sancho* drew the Letter open out of his bosome, and the Duchesse taking it of him, read the Contents, as followeth.

#### *Sancho Panfa's Letter to his wife Teresa Panfa.*

**I**F I were well lashed, I got well by it; If I got a Gouvernement, it cost me many a good lash. This, my *Teresa*, at present thou vnderstandest not, heereafter thou shalt know it. Know now, *Teresa*, that I am determined thou goe in thy Coach, for all o-  
R ther

ther kinde of going, is to goe vpon all foure. Thou art now a Gouvernours wife, let's see if any body will gnaw thy flumps: I haue sent thee a greene hunters sure, that my Lady the Duchesse gaue me, fit it so, that it may serue our daughter for a Coate and Bodies. My Master *Don Quixote*, as I haue heard say in this Country, is a mad wise man, and a conceited Coxcombe, and that I am ne're a whit behinde him. Wee haue beene in *Montesinos* Caue, and the sage *Merlin* hath laid hands on me for the dis-enchanting my Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, whom you there call *Aldonza Lorenzo*, with three thousand and three hundred lashes lacking tme, that I giue my selfe, she shall be dis-enchantred as the Mother that brought her forth: but let no body know this; for put it thou to descant on, some will cry white, others blacke. Within this little while I will goe to my Gouvernement, whither I goe with a great desire to make money, for I haue beene told, that all your Gouvernours at first goe with the same desire. I will looke into it, and send thee word whether it bee fit for thee to come to me or no. Dapple is well, and commends him heartily to thee, and I will not leaue him, although I were to goe to bee Great Turke. My Lady the Duchesse kisses thy hands a thousand times: returne her two thousand, for there's nothing costs lesse, nor is better cheape, as my Master tells mee, then complement. God Almighty hath not yet beene pleased to blesse mee with a Cloke-bag, and another hundreth Pistolets as those you wot of: but be not grieued, my *Teresa*, theres no hurt done, all shall be recompenced when we lay the Gouvernement a bucking; onely one thing troubles me, for they tell me that after my time is expired, I may die for hunger, which if it should be true, I haue pay'd deere for it, though your lame and maimed men get their living by begging & almes; so that one way or other thou shalt be rich and happy: God make thee so, and keepe me to serue thee. From this Castle, the twentieth of Iuly, 1614.

The Gouvernour thy Husband,

*Sancho Panza.*

When the Duchesse had made an end of reading the Letter, she said to *Sancho*; in two things the good Gouvernour is out of the way: the one, In saying or publishing, that this Gouvernement hath beene giuen him for the lasses hee must giue himselfe, hee knowing, for hee cannot deny it that when my Lord the Duke promised it him, there was no dreaming in the world of lasses: The other is, that he shewes himselfe in it very couetous, and I would not haue it so preiudiciall to him; for Couetousnesse is the root of all euill, and the couetous Gouvernour does vngouerned Iustice. I had no such meaning, Madam (quoth *Sancho*) and if your Worship think the Letter be not written as it should be, let it be torne, and wee le haue a new, and perhaps it may be worse, if it be left to my noddle. No, no, (quoth the Duchesse) 'tis well enough, and Ile haue the Duke see it. So they went to a garden where they were to dine that day: the Duchesse shewd *Sancho's* Letter to the Duke, which gaue him great content. They dined, and when the cloth was taken away, and that they had entertained themselves a pretty while with *Sancho's* sauoury conuersation, vpon a sodaine they heard a dolefull sound of a Flute, and of a hoarse and vtuned Drum; all of them were in some amazement, at this confused, martiall, and sad harmony, especially *Don Quixote*, who was so troubled, he could not sit still in his seat; for *Sancho* there is no more to be said, but that feare carried him to his accustomed refuge, which was the Duchesses side or her lap; for in good earnest, the sound they heard was most sad and melancholy. And all of them being in this maze, they might see two men come in before them into the Garden, clad in mourning weeds, so long that they dragged to the ground, these came beating of two Drums, couered likewise with blacke: with them came the Fife, blacke and besmeared as well as the rest. After these there followed a personage of a Gyantly body, bemantled, and not clad in a cole-blacke Cassocke, whose skirt was extraordinarily long, his Cassocke likewise was girt with a broad blacke belt, at which there hung an vnmeasurable Scimitar with hilts and scabberd; vpon his face hee wore a transparent blacke vail, thorow which they might see a huge long beard as white as snow. His pace was very graue and stay-

ed, according to the sound of the Drum and Fife. To conclude, his hugeness, his motion, his blackness, and his comforts, might haue held all that knew him not, and looked on him, in suspence.

Thus he came with the state and *Prosopopeia* aforesaid, and kneeled before the Duke, who with the rest that stood vp there, awaited his coming: but the Duke would not by any means heare him speake till he rose, which the prodigious Scar-crow did; and standing vp, he pluckt his maske from off his face, and shewed the most horrid, long, white, and thicke beard, that ere till then humane eyes beheld; and straight he let loose and rooted out from his broad and spreading brest, a maiestickall loud voyce, and casting his eyes toward the Duke, thus said:

High and mighty Sir, I am called *Trifaldin* with the white beard, Squire to the Countesse *Trifaldi*, otherwise called The Afflicted Matron, from whom I bring an Ambassage to your Greatness, which is, that your Magnificence be pleased to giue her leaue and licence to enter and relate her griefes, which are the most strange and admirable that euer troubled thoughts in the world could thinke: but first of all, she would know whether the valorous & inuincible Knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha* be in your Castle, in whose search she comes afoot, and hungry from the kingdome of *Candaya*, euen to this your Duke-dome: a thing miraculous, or by way of Enchantment: she is at your Fortresse gate, and onely expects your permission to come in; thus he spoke, and forthwith coughed and wiped his beard from the top to the bottome, with both his hands, and with a long pause attended the Dukes answer, which was;

Honest Squire *Trifaldin* with the white beard, long, since the misfortune of the Countesse *Trifaldi* hath come to our notice, whom Enchanters haue caused to be stiled, *The afflicted Matron*: tell her, stupendious Squire, shee may come in, and that heere is the valiant Knight *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, from whose generous condition shee may safely promise her selfe all aide and assistance: and you may also tell her from me, that if she need my fauour, she shall not want it, since I am obliged to it by being a Knight, to whom the fauouring of all sorts of her sexe

is

is pertaining and annexed, especially Matrons widdows ruin'd, and afflicted, as her Ladiship is. Which when *Trifaldin* heard, he bent his knee to the ground, and making signes to the Drum and Fife, that they should play to the same pace and sound as when they entred, he returned backe out of the garden, and left all in admiration of his presence and posture.

And the Duke turning to *Don Quixote*, said; In fine, Sir Knight, neyther the clouds of malice or ignorance can darken or obscure the light of valour and vertue. This I say, because it is scarce sixe daies since that your <sup>a</sup> bounty hath beene in this my Castle, when the sad and afflicted come from remote parts, on foot, and not in Carroches and on Dromedaries to seeke you, confident that in this most strenuous arme they shall find the remedy for their griefes and labours, thanks to your braue exploits, that runne ouer and compasse the whole world.

Now would I, my Lord, quoth *Don Quixote*, that that same blessed Clergy-man were present, who the other day, at table, seemed to be so distasted, and to beare such a grudge against Knights Errant, that he might see with his eyes, whether those Knights are necessary to the world; he might feele too with his hands that your extraordinary afflicted and comfortlesse, and great affaires and enormous mis-haps goe not to seeke redresse to Booke-mens houses, or to some poore Country Sextons, nor to your Gentleman that neuer stirred from home, nor to the lazie Courtier that rather harkens after newes which hee may report againe, then procures to performe deeds and exploits, that others may relate and write; the redresse of griefes, the succouring of necessities, the protection of Damozels, the comfort of widdows, is had from no sort of persons so wel as from Knights Errant; and that I am one, I giue heauen infinite thanks, and I thinke my disgrace well earned that I may receiue in this noble calling. Let this Matron come, and demand what shee will, for I will giue her redresse with this my strong arme, and vndanted resolution of my courageous spirit.

<sup>a</sup> A forced word put in, in mockage purposely.

## CHAP. XXXVII.

*Of the Prosecution of the famous Adventure of the Afflicted Matron.*

**T**He Duke and Duchesse were extremely glad, to see how well *Don Quixote* satisfied their intentions, & then *Sancho* sayd; I should be loth this Mistris Matron should lay any stumbling blocke in the promise of my Gouvernement: for I haue heard a *Toledo* Apothecary say (and hee spoke like a Bull-finch) that where these kinde of <sup>a</sup> women were intermedling, there could no good follow. Lord, what an enemy that Apothecary was to them? for since all your Matrons, of what condition or quality soeuer they bee, are irksome and foolish, what kinde of ones shall your Afflicted bee? as this Countesse, <sup>b</sup> Three skirts, or Three tailes; for tailes and skirts, all is one. Peace, friend *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*; for since this Matron-Lady comes from so remote parts to seeke mee, she is none of those that the Apothecary hath in his bed-roll: besides, this is a Countesse, and when your Countesses are Wayting-women, tis either to Queenes or Empresses, who in their houses are most absolute, and are serued by other Wayting-women. To this (quoth *Donna Rodriguez*, that was present) My Lady the Duchesse hath women in her seruice, that might haue beene Countesses, if Fortune had beene pleased: but the weakest goe to the wals, and let no man speake ill of Wayting-women, and especially of ancient Mayds; for although I am none, yet I well and cleerly perceiue the aduantage, that your Mayden Wayting-women haue ouer Widdow-women, and one paire of sheeres went betweene vs both.

For all that (quoth *Sancho*) there is so much to bee sheered in your Wayting-women. (according to mine Apothecary) that, The more you stirre this businesse, the more it will stinke. Alwayes these Squires (quoth *Donna Rodriguez*) are malicious against vs; for, as they are Fairies that haunt the out-rooms, and

<sup>a</sup> *Ducenas*, Heere *Sancho* takes *Duenna* in the former sence, for an old Wayting-woman.  
<sup>b</sup> Alluding to the name *Trifaldi*, as if shee had beene called *tres faldas*, which signifies three skirts, and this was his mistake.

euery foot spy vs, the times that they are not at their deuotions (which are many) they spend in back-biting vs, vndigging our bones, and burying our reputation. Well, let me tell these moouing Blockes, that in spite of them, wee will liue in the world, and in houses of good fashion, though wee starue for it, or couer our delicate or not delicate flesh with a blacke Monkes weede, as if we were old wals covered with tapistrie, at the passing of a ProceSSION. I faith, if I had time and leisure enough, I would make all that are present, know, that there is no vertue, but is contained in a Wayting-woman. I belceue (sayd the Duchesse) my honest *Donna Rodriguez* is in the right: but she must stay for a fit time to answer for her selfe, and the rest of Wayting-women, to confound the Apothecaries ill opinion, and to root it out altogether from *Sancho's* brest. To which (quoth *Sancho*) since the Gouvernourship smokes in my head, all Squirely fumes are gone out, and I care not a wilde figge for all your Wayting-women.

Forward they had gone with this Wayting-woman discourse, had they not heard the Drum and Fife play, wherby they knew that the Afflicted Matron was entring: the Duchesse askt the Duke, if they should meet her, since shee was a Countesse, and noble personage. For her Countesship (quoth *Sancho*) before the Duke could answer, I like it that your Greatnesse meet her: but for her Matronship, that yee stirre not a foot. Who bids thee meddle with that, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*? Who, Sir (sayd he?) I my selfe, that may meddle, that, as a Squire, haue learnt the termes of courtesie in your Worships Schoole, that is the most courteous and best bred Knight in all Courtship, and as I haue heard you say in these things, Better play a card too much, then too little; and, Good wits will soone meet. Tis true as *Sancho* sayes (quoth the Duke) we will see what kinde of Countesse she is, and by that, ghesse what courtesie is due to her. By this the Drum and Fife came in, as formerly: and heere the Author ended this brieft Chapter, beginning another, which continues the same Adventure, one of the notablest of all the History.

*The Afflicted Matron recounts her ill Errantry.*

**A**fter the Musicke, there entred in at the Garden, about some twelue Matron-wayters, diuided into two rankes, all clad in large Monks weedes, to see to, of fulled Serge, with white Stoles of thin Callico, so long, that they onely shewed the edge of their blacke weedes. After them came the Countesse *Trifaldi*, whom *Trifaldin* with the white beard led by the hand, clad all in finest vn-napped Bayes; for had it been napped, euery graine of it would haue been as big as your biggest pease: her taile or her traine (cal it whether you will) had three corners, which was born by three Pages, clad likewise in mourning; thus making a sightly and Mathematicall shew with those three sharp corners, which the poynted skirt made, for which belike she was called the Countesse <sup>a</sup> *Trifaldi*, as if we should say the Countesse of the three traines, and *Benengeli* sayes, it was true, and that her right name was the Countesse *Lobuna*, because there were many Wolues bred in her Countrey; and if they had beene Foxes, as they were Wolues, they would haue called her the Countesse <sup>b</sup> *Zorrana*, by reason that in those parts it was the custome, that great ones took their appellations, from the thing or things that did most abound in their States: but this Countesse, taken with the strangenes of her three-fold traine, left her name of *Lobuna*, and tooke that of *Trifaldi*.

The twelue Wayters and their Lady came a Proceßion-pace; their faces couered with blacke vayles, and not transparent, was as *Trifaldins*, but so close, that nothing was seen thorow. Iust as the Matronly Squadron came in, the Duke, the Duchesse, and *Don Quixote* stood vp, and all that beheld the large Proceßion. The twelue made a stand, and a Lane, thorow the middest of which, The Afflicted came forward, *Trifaldin* still leading her by the hand, which the Duke, the Duchesse, and *Don Quixote* seeing, they aduanced some doozen paces to meet her. Shee kneeling on the ground, with a voyce rather course and hoarse, then fine and cleere, sayd; May it please your Greatnesses to spare this courtesie to your seruant, I say, to mee your seruant;

<sup>a</sup> The word in Spanish importing so.

<sup>b</sup> *Zorra*, in Spanish, a Fox.

seruant; for as I am *The Afflicted*; I shall not answer you as I ought, by reason that my strange and vnderheard of misfortune, hath transported my vnderstanding, I know not whither, and sure tis farre off; since the more I seeke it, the lesse I finde it. He should want it, Lady (quoth the Duke) that by your person could not iudge of your worth, the which without any more looking into, deserues the Creame of courtesie, & the Flower of al mannerly ceremonies: so taking her vp by the hand, he led her to sit downe in a chaire by the Duchesse, who welcommed her also with much courtesie.

*Don Quixote* was silent, and *Sancho* longed to see the *Trifaldi's* face, and some of her Wayting-women: but there was no possibility, till they of their owne accords would shew them: so all being quiet and still, they expected who should first breake silence, which was done by the Afflicted Matron with these words. <sup>a</sup> Confident I am (most powerfull Sir, most beautifull Lady, and most discreet Auditors) that my most Miserablenesse shall finde in your most valorous breasts shelter, no lesse pleasing, then generous and compassionate; for it is such, as is able to make marble relent, to soften the Diamonds, and to mollifie the Steele of the hardest hearts in the world: but before it come into the market-place of your hearing (I will not say your cares) I should be glad to know, if the most Purifiediferous *Don Quixote* of the *Manchissima*, and his Squiriferous *Pansa*, bee in this Lap, this Quire, this Company.

*Pansa* is heere (quoth *Sancho*) before any body else could answer, and *Don Quixotissimo* too, therefore most Afflictedissimous *Matronissima*, speake what you will-issimus, for we are all ready & most forward to be your *Seruitorissimus*. Then *Don Quixote* rose vp, and directed his speech to the Afflicted Matron, and sayd; If your troubles, straightned Lady, may promise you any hope of remedy, by the valour and force of any Knight Errant; Behold, heere are my poore and weake armes, that shall bee employed in your seruice. I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, whose Function is to succour the needy, which being so (as it is) you neede not, Lady, to vse any *Rhetoricke*, or to seeke any Preambles; but plainly, and without circumstances, tell your griefes,

<sup>a</sup> A Rustian speech on purpose, and so continued,

<sup>b</sup> *Sancho* strues to answer in the same key.



griefes; for they shall be heard by those, that if they cannot redresse them, yet they will commiserate them.

Which when the Afflicted Matron heard, she seem'd to fall at *Don Quixotes* feet, and cast her selfe downe, striving to embrace them, & sayd; Before these feet & legs I cast my selfe, oh invincible Knight: since they are the *Basis* and *Columnes* of Knight Errantry, these feet will I kisse, on whose steps the whole remedy of my misfortunes doth hang and depend. Oh valorous Errant! whose valorous exploit do obscure & darken the fabulous ones of the *Amadis*, *Esplandiasus*, and *Belianiser*: And leaving *Don Quixote*, she layd hold on *Sancho Panza*, and griping his hands, sayd; Oh thou the loyallest Squire that euer serued Knight Errant, in past or present times I longer in goodnesse then my Vsher *Trifaldins* beard, well mayest thou vaunt, that in seruing *Don Quixote*, thou seruest, in Cipher, the whole Troope of Knights, that haue worne armes in the world: I comiure thee, by thy most loyall goodnesse, that thou be a good Intercessour with thy Master, that hee may est-soones fauour this most humble, most vnfortunate Countesse.

To which (sayd *Sancho*) that my goodnes, Lady, be as long as your Squires beard, I doe not much stand vpon, the businesse is, bearded or with mustacho's, let mee haue my soule goe to Heauen when I die: for, for beards heere I care little or nothing: but without these clawings or entreaties, I will desire my Master (for I know he loues me well, and the rather, because now in a certaine businesse he hath neede of mee) that he fauour and helpe your Worship as much as he may: but pray vncage your griefes, and tell them vs, and let vs alone to vnderstand them.

The Dukes were ready to burst with laughter, as they that had taken the pulse of this Aduenture, and commended within themselves the wit and dissimulation of the *Trifaldi*, who sitting her downe, sayd; Of the famous Kingdome of *Taprobana*, which is betweene the great *Taprobana* and the South sea, some two leagues beyond Cape *Comorin*, was Queene the Lady *Donna Maguncia*, widdow to King *Archipiolo*, her Lord and Husband, in which matrimony they had the Princesse *Antonomasia*, heire to the Kingdome: the sayd Princesse was brought

vp,

vp, and increased vnder my tutorage and instruction, because I was the ancientest and chiefeest Matron that waited on her mother. It fell out then, that times conuining and going, the childe *Antonomasia* being about foureteene yeeres of age, shee was so faire, that Nature could giue no further addition. Discretion it selfe was a Snotty-nose to her, that was as discreet as faire, and she was the fairest in the world, and is, if enuious Fates and inflexible Destinies haue not cut the thred of her life: but sure they haue not; for Heauen will not permit, that Earth suffer such a losse, as would be the lopping of a branch of the fairest Vine in the world.

On this beauty (neuer-sufficiently extolled by my rude tongue) a number of Princes were enamoured, aswell Neighbours as Strangers, amongst whom, a priuate Gentle-man durst raise his thoughts to the Heauen of that beauty, one that liued in Court, confident in his youth and gallantry, and other abilities, and happy facilities of wit; for let mee giue your Greatnesses to vnderstand (if it be not tedious) hee played on a Gitterne, as if he made it speake, he was a Poet, and a great Dancer, and could very well make Bird-cages, and onely with this Art, might haue gotten his liuing, when he had beene in great necessity: so that all these parts and adornments were able to throw downe a mountaine, much more a delicate Damozell: but all his gentry, all his graces, all his behauiour and abilities, could haue little preuailed, to render my childe's fortresse, if the cursed theefe had not conquered mee first. First, the cursed Rascall *Vagamund* sought to get my good will, and to bribe me, that I, ill keeper, should deliuer him the keyes of my fortresse.

To conclude, he inueigled my vnderstanding, and obtained my consent, with some toyes and trifles (I know not what) that he gaue mee: but that which most did prostrate mee, and made me fall, was certaine verses, that I heard him sing one night from a grated window, toward a Lane where he lay, which were as I remember these.

An ill vpon my soule doth scale,  
From my sweetest enemy:  
And it more tormenteth me  
That I seele, yet must conceale.

The

The Ditty was most precious to me, and his voyce as sweet as sugar, & many a time since haue I thought, seeing the mis-hap I fell into, by these and such other like verses, and haue considered, that Poets should be banisht from all good and well-gouerned Common-wealths, as *Plato* counsell'd, at least lasciuious Poets; for they write lasciuious verses, not such as those of the Marquesse of *Mantua*, that delight and make women and children weepe, but piercing ones, that like sharp thornes, but soft, trauerse the soule, and wound it like lightning, leauing the garment sound, and againe he sung,

*Come death, hidden, without paine,  
(Let me not thy comming know)  
That the pleasure to die so,  
Make me not to liue againe.*

Other kindes of songs he had, which being sung, enchanted, and written, suspended: for when they daigned to make a kinde of verse in *Candaya*, then in vse, called *Roundelaies*, there was your dancing of soules, and tickling with laughter and vnquietnesse of the body: and finally, the quick-siluer of all the senses. So, my Masters, let me say, that such Richmers ought iustly to be banished to the Iland of Lizards: but the fault is none of theirs, but of simple creatures that commend them, and foolish wenches that belecue in them: and if I had been as good a Wayting-woman, as I ought to haue beene, his over-nights conceits would not haue moued mee, neither should I haue giuen credit to these kinde of speeches: I liue dying, I burne in the frost, I shake in the fire, I hope hopelesse, I goe, and yet I stay: with other impossibilities of this scumme, of which his writings are full: and then, your promising the Phoenix of *Arabia*, *Ariadne's* Crowne, the Lockes of the Sunne, the Pearles of the South, the Gold of *Tyber*, and *Balsamm* of *Pancaia*: and heere they are most liberall in promising that, which they neuer think to performe.

But whither, aye mee vnhappy, doe I diuert my selfe? What folly or what madnesse makes mee recount other folkes fautes, hauing so much to say of mine owne? Aye mee againe, vnfortunate, for not the verses, but my folly, vanquished mee; not  
his

his musike, but my lightnesse, my ignorance softned mee; that, and my ill fore-sight opened the way, and made plaine the path to *Don Clanixo*, for this is the aforesayd Gentle-mans name; so that I being the Bawde, hee was many times in the chamber of the (not by him, but mee) betrayed *Antonomasia*, vnder colour of being her lawfull Spouse; for though a sinner I am, I would not haue consented, that without being her Husband, hee should haue come to the bottome of her shoo-sole.

No, no, Matrimony must euer bee the colour in all these busineses, that shall bee treated of by mee: onely there was one mischief in it, that *Don Clanixo* was not her Equall, hee being but a priuate Gentle-man, and shee such an Inheritrix. A while this iuggling was hid and concealed, with the sagacity of my warinesse, till a kinde of swelling in *Antonomasia's* belly, at last discouered it, the feare of which made vs all three enter into counsell, and it was agreed, that before the mis-hap should come to light, *Don Clanixo* should demand *Antonomasia* for wife before the Vicar, by vertue of a bill of her hand, which shee had giuen him to bee so: this was framed by my inuention so forcibly, that *Samson* himselfe was not able to breake it.

The matter was put in practice, the Vicar saw the bill, and tooke the Ladies confession: who confessed plainly, hee committed her prisoner to a Sargeants house. Then (quoth *Sancho*) haue you Sargeants too in *Candaya*, Poets, and Roundelayes? I sweare I thinke, the world is the same euery-where: but make an end, Madam *Trifaldi*: for it is late, and I long to know the end of this large story. I will, answered the Countesse.

## CHAP. XXXIX.

where the Trifaldi prosecutes her stupendious and memorable History.

**A**T euery word that *Sancho* spoke, the Duchesse vvas as vvell pleased as *Don Quixote* out of his wits, and commanding him to bee silent; the Afflicted went on, saying: The short and the long vvas this, after many giuings and takings, by reason the Princesse stood euer stiffely to her tackling, the Vicar sentenced in *Don Clanixos* fauour, vvhereat the Queene *Donna Maguncia Antonomasia's* Mother vvas so full of wrath, that some three daies after wee buried her. Well, Sir Squire, quoth *Sancho*, it hath beene scene ere now, that one that hath beene but in a swoond, hath beene buried, thinking he was dead; and me thinkes that Queene *Maguncia* might but rather haue beene in a swoond, for with life many things are remedied, and the Princesses error vvas not so great, that she should forsent it. If shee had married with a Page or any other seruant of her house (as I haue heard many haue done) the mischance had beene irreparable: but to marry with so worthy a Gentleman, and so vnderstanding as hath beene painted out to vs, truly, truly, though 'twere an ouer-sight, yet twas not so great as vvee thinke for; for according to my Masters rules here present, who will not let mee lye, as Schollers become Bishops, so priuate Knights (especially if they be Errant) may become Kings and Emperours.

Thou hast reason, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) for a Knight Errant, giue him but two inches of good fortune, he is in *potencia proxima* to be the greatest Soueraigne of the world. But let the Afflicted proceed, for to mee it appeares, the bitterest part of her sweet History is behinde. The bitterest, quoth you, said shee? Indeed so bitter, that in comparison of this, Treacle and Elicampane is sweet.

The Queene being starke dead, and not in a trance, wee buried her, and scarce had wee couered her with earth, and tooke

out

our *ultimum vale*, when *Quis talia fando temperet a lacrimis?* the Gyant *Malambruuo*, *Maguncia's* Cousin Germane, appeared before her graue vpon a wooden horse, who besides his cruelty, was also an Enchanter, who with his Art to reuenge his Cousins death, & for *Don Clanixos* boldnesse, and for despight of *Antonomasia's* ouer-sight, enchanted them vpon the same Tombe, turning her into a brazen Ape, and him into a fearefull Crocodile of vnknowne metall, and betwixt them both is likewise set a Register of metall, written in the *Siriacke* tongue, which being translated into the *Candayan*, and now into the *Castilian*, containes this sentence:

*These two bold Lovers shall not recover their naturall forme, till the valiant Manchegan come to single combat with me, for the Desinies reserve this vn-heard of Adventure only for his great valour.*

This done, he vn sheathed a broad and vnwiely Scimitar, and taking me by the haire of the head, he made as if he would haue cut my throat, or sheared off my necke at a blow. I was amazed, my voice cleaued to the roose of my mouth, I was troubled extremely: but I enforced my selfe as well as I could, and vwith a dolorous and trembling voyce, I told him such and so many things, as made him suspend the execution of his rigorous punishment.

Finally, hee made all the waiting-Women of the Court be brought before him, which are heere present now also; and after he had exaggerated our faults, and reuiled the conditions of Waiting-women, their wicked wiles, and worse slights, and laying my fault vpon them all, hee said hee would not capitally punish vs, but with other dilated paines, that might giue vs a ciuill and continuat death: and in the very same instant & moment that he had said this, we all felt that the Pores of our faces opened, and that all about them wee had prickles, like the pricking of needles: by and by we clapped our hands to our faces, and found them iust as you see them now; with this the Afflicted, and the rest of the Waiting-women lifted vp their masks which they had on, and shewed their faces all vwith beards, some red, some

some blacke, some white, and line-smear'd: at sight of vvhich, the Duke & Duchesse admired; *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* were astonisht, and all the by-standers wonder-strooken, and the *Trifaldi* proceeded: Thus that fellow, and hard-hearted *Malambruno* punished vs, couering the softnesse and smoothnesse of our faces with these rough bristles: would God he had beheaded vs with his vnweldy Scimitar, and not so dimmed the light of our faces with these blots that hide vs; for, my Masters, if vvee fall into reckoning, (and that which now I say, I vvould speake it vvith mine eyes running a fountaine of teares, but the consideration of our misfortunes, and the Seas that hitherto haue rained, haue drawne them as dry as eares of Corne, and therefore let mee speake vvithout teares.) Whither shall a Waiting-woman with a beard goe? What Father or Mother vvill take compassion on her? For vvhen her flesh is at the smoothest, and her face martyriz'd with a thousand sorts of slobber-slabbers & waters, she can scarce finde any body that vvill care for her, what shall she doe then when she vveares a vvood vpon her face? O Matrons, Companions mine, in an ill time vvere vve borne, in a lucklesse howre our Fathers begat vs; and saying this, she made shew of dismayng.

## CHAP. XL.

*Of matters that touch and pertaine to this Aduenture, and most memorable History.*

Certainely, all they that delight in such Histories as this, must be thankfull to *Cid Hamete* the Author of the Original, for his curiosity in setting downe euery litle title, without leauing out the smallest matter, that hath not beene distinctly brought to light: hee paints out conceits, discouers imaginations, answers secrets, cleeres doubts, resolves arguments: To conclude, manifest the least moat of each curious desire. Oh famous Author! Oh happy *Don Quixote*! Oh renowned *Dulcinea*! Oh pleasant *Sancho*! all together, and each in particular,

long

long may you liue, to the delight and generall recreation of mortals. The Story then goes on, that iust as *Sancho* saw the Afflicted disinaid, he said, As I am honest man, and by the memory of the *Pansa's*, I neuer heard nor saw, nor my master neuer told me, nor could he euer conceit in his fancy such an Aduenture as this. A thousand Satans take thee (not to curse thee) for an Enchanteras thou art, Gyant *Malambruno*, and hadst thou no kinde of punishment for these sinners but this bearding them? What? had it not beene better & fitter for them, to haue bereaued them of halfe their noses, though they had snuffed for it, and not to haue clapt these beards on them? I hold a wager they haue no money to pay for their shauing. You say true Sir, quoth one of the twelue, we haue nothing to cleanse vs with, therefore some of vs haue vsed a remedy of sticking Plasters, which, applied to our faces, and clapped on vpon a sodain, make them as plaine and smooth as the bottome of a stone mortar; for though in *Candaya* there be women that goe vp and downe from house to house to take away the haire of the body, and to trimme the eye-browes, and other slobber-sawces touching women, yet wee my Ladies women would neuer admit them, because they smell something of the Bawde: and if Signior *Don Quixote* doe not helpe vs, wee are like to goe vvith beards to our graues.

I would rather lose mine amongst Infidels, quoth *Don Quixote*, then not ease you of yours. By this the *Trifaldi* came to her selfe againe, and said, The very iynghing of this promise came into my eares in the midst of my Trance, and was enough to recover my senses: therefore once againe, Renowned Errant, and vntamed Sir, let me beseech you that your gracious promise be put in execution. For my part it shall, quoth *Don Quixote*, tell me Lady, what I am to doe, for my minde is very prompt to serue you.

Thus it is (quoth the Afflicted) from hence to the Kingdom of *Candaya*, if you goe by land, you haue five thousand leagues, wanting two or three; but if you goe in the ayre, some three thousand two hundred and seuen and twenty by a direct line. You must likewise know that *Malambruno* told me, that when

S

Fortune

Fortune should bring me to the Knight that must free vs, that he would send a horse much better, and with fewer trickes then your hirelings, which is the selfe-same horse of wood, on which the valiant *Pierres* stole and carried away the faire *Magalona*, which horse is gouerned by a pinne that he hath in his forehead, that serues for a bridle, and flies in the ayre so swiftly, as if the Deuils themselues carried him. This horse, according to Tradition, was made by the Sage *Merlin*, and he lent him to his friend *Pierres*, who made long voyages vpon him, and stole away (as is said) the faire *Magalona*, carrying her in the ayre at his Crupper, leauing all that beheld them on earth in a staring gaze, and he lent him to none but those whom he loued, or that payed him best, and since the Grand *Pierres*, hitherto vvee haue not heard that any else hath come vpon his backe: *Malambruno* got him from thence by his Art, and keepes him, making vse of him in his voyages, which he hath euery foot thorow all parts of the world, and he is heere to day, and to morrow in France, and the next day at Ierusalem: and the best is, that this horse neither eates nor sleepes, nor needs shooing, and hee ambles in the ayre, without wings, that he that rides vpon him, may carry a cup full of water in his hand, without spilling a iot: he goes so soft and so easie, which made the faire *Magalona* glad to ride vpon him.

Then (quoth *Sancho*) for your soft and easie going, my Dapple beares the bell, though hee goe not in the Aire; but vpon earth. He play with him with all the Amblers in the world.

All of them laughed, and the Afflicted went on: and this horse (if *Malambruno* will grant an end of our misfortune) within halfe an houre at night will be with vs; for he told mee, that the signe that I had found the Knight that should procure our liberty, should be the sending of that horse whither hee shou'd come speedily. And how many (quoth *Sancho*) may ride vpon that horse? The Afflicted answered, Two; one in the Saddle, and the other at the Crupper, and most commonly such two are, Knight and Squire, when some stolne Damozell is wanting. I would faine know, Afflicted Madam, quoth *Sancho*, what this horses name is. His name (quoth she) is not like

*Belle.*

*Bellerophons* horse, called *Pegasus* or *Alexanders* the great, *Bucephalus*, or *Orlando Enrioso's Briliadoro*, or *Bayarte Reynaldos de Montaluanas*, or *Rogeros Frontino*, or *Bootes* or *Perithons*, the horses of the *Sunne*, nor *Orelia Rodrigo* the last vnhappy King of the Gothes his Horse, in that battell where hee lost his life and kingdome together.

I hold a wager (said *Sancho*) that since he hath none of all these famous knowne names, that his name neither is not *Rozinante* my Masters horses name, which goes beyond all those that haue been named already.

Tis true (quoth the bearded Countesse) notwithstanding he hath a name that fits him very well, which is a *Clauleno* the swift: first, because he is of wood, and then, because of the pinne in his fore-head, so that for his name he may compare with *Rozinante*. I dislikenot his name (said *Sancho*) but what bridle, or what halter is he gouerned with? I haue told you (said the *Trifaldi*) that with the pinne, turned as pleaseth the party that rides on him, he will goe either in the ayre, or raking and sweeping along the earth, or in a meane which ought to bee sought in all well-ordered actions. I would faine see him (quoth *Sancho*) but to thinke that Ile get vp on him, cyther in the saddle, or at the Crupper, were to aske Peares of the Elme. Twere good indeed, that I, that can scarce sit vpon Dapple, and a packe-saddle as soft as silke, should get vp vpon a wooden crupper without a Cushion or Pillow-beare: by Gad Ile not bruisse my selfe to take away any bodies beard: let euery one shauie himselfe as well as he can; for Ile not goe so long a voyage with my Master: besides, theres no vse of me for the shauing of these beards, as there is for the dis-enchanting my Lady *Dulcinea*. Yes marry is there, said the *Trifaldi*, and so much, that I belecue, without you we shall doe nothing. a God & the King (quoth *Sancho*) what haue the Squires to doe with their Masters Aduentures, they must reape the credit of ending them, and wee must beare the burden? Body of mee, if your Historians would say, Such a Knight ended such an Aduenture, but with the helpe of such a Squire, without whom it had been impossible to end it, twere something: but that they write dryly, *Don Partalipo-*

*menon*, Knight of the three starres, ended the Adventure of the sixe Hob-goblins, without naming his Squires person that was present at all, as if he were not aliue: I like it not, my Masters, I tell you againe, my Master may goe alone, much good may it doe him, and Ile stay heere with my Lady the Duchesse, and it may be when he comes backe, he shall finde the Lady *Dulcinea's* businesse three-fold, nay five-fold bettered, for I purpose at idle times, and when I am at ley sure to giue my selfe a Bout of whipping, bare breech'd. For all that (quoth the Duchesse) if need be, you must accompany him, honest *Sancho*, for all good people will entreat, that for your vnneccessary feare these Gentlewomens faces be not so thick-bearded; for it were great pittie.

God and the King againe (quoth *Sancho*) when this charity were performed for some retired Damozels, as some vvorking girles, a man might vnder take any hazard; but for to vnbeard waiting-women, a pox: I would I might see vm bearded from the highest to the lowest, from the nicest to the neatest. You are still bitter against waiting-women, friend, quoth the Duchesse, you are much addicted to the *Toledanian* Apothecaries opinion: but on my faith you haue no reason, for I haue women in my house, that may be a patterne for Waiting-women, and heere's *Dona Rodriguez*, that will not contradict me. Your Excellency (quoth *Rodriguez*) may say what you will, God knowes all, whether we be good or bad: bearded or smooth, as we are, our Mothers brought vs forth as well as other women, and since God cast vs into the world, he knowes to what end, and I relye vpon his mercy, and no bodies beard.

Well, Mistresse *Rodriguez*, and Lady *Trifaldi*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) I hope to God hee will behold your sorrowes vvith pittying eyes, and *Sancho* shall doe as I vvill haue him, if *Clanileno* vvere come once, and that I might encounter *Malambruno*: for I know, no Rasor vvould shauie you vvith more facility, then my sword should shauie *Malambruno's* head from his shoulders, for God permits the vvicked, but not for euer.

Ah (quoth the Afflicted) now all the starres of the heavenly Regions looke vpon your Greatnesse, valorous Knight, vvith a gentle aspect, and infuse all prosperity into your minde, and all valour

valour, and make you the shield and succour of all dejected and reuiled Waiting-woman-ship, abhominable to Apothecaries, back-bited by Squires, and scoffed at by Pages, and the Deuill take the Queane that in the flower of her youth put not her selfe in a Nunnery, rather then be a Waiting-woman, vnfortunate as we are, for though we descend in a direct line, by man to man from *Hector* the Troian, yet our Mistresses will neuer leaue be-thou-ing of vs, though they might be Queenes for it: O Gyant *Malambruno*, (for though thou beest an Enchanter, thou art most sure in thy promises) send the matchlesse *Clanileno* vnto vs, that our misfortune may haue an end: for if the heates come in, and these beards of ours last, woe be to our ill fortune.

This the *Trifaldi* said with so much feeling, that shee drew teares from all the spectators eyes, and stroaked them euen from *Sancho's*, so that now he resolved to accompany his Master to the very end of the world, so he might obtaine the taking the wooll from those venerable faces.

## CHAP. XLI.

Of *Clanileno's* arriual, with the end of this dilated Adventure.

IT grew now to bee night, and with it the expected time when *Clanileno* the famous horse should come, whose delay troubled *Don Quixote*, thinking that *Malambruno* deferring to send him, argued, that cyther hee was not the Knight for whom the Adventure was reserued, or that *Malambruno* durst not come to single combat with him: But looke ye now, when all vnexpected, foure Sauages entred the Garden, cladde all in greene Yuie, bearing vpon their shoulders a great woodden horse: they set him vpon his legges on the ground, and one of them said, Let him that hath the courage, get vp vpon this Engine.

Then (quoth *Sancho*) not I, I haue no courage, I am no Knight.



Knight, and the Saluager replied, saying, And let his Squire ride behinde, and let him be assured, that no sword but *Malambruno's* shall offend him; and there is no more to be done, but to turne that pinne, which is vpon the horses necke, and hee will carry them in a moment where *Malambruno* attends: but lest the height and distance from earth make them light-headed, let them couer their eyes till the horse neigh; a signe that they haue then finisht their voyage. This said, with a slow pace, they marched out the same way they came.

The Afflicted, as soone as she saw the horse, with very teares in her eyes, she said to *Don Quixote*; Valorous Knight, *Malambruno* hath kept his word, the horse is heere, our beards increase, and each of vs with euery haire of them beseech thee to shauie and sheere vs, since there is no more to be done, but that thou and thy Squire both mount, and begin this your happy new voyage. That will I willingly, said *Don Quixote*, my Lady *Trifaldi*, without a cushion or spurres, that I may not delay time, so much, Lady, I desire to see you and all these Gentlewomen smooth and cleere. Not I (quoth *Sancho*) neyther willingly nor vnwillingly, and if this shauing cannot be performed without my riding at the Crupper, let my Master seeke some other Squire to follow him, and these Gentlewomen some other meanes of smoothing themselves; for I am no Hagge that loue to hurry in the Ayre: and what will my Islanders say, when they heare their Gouvernour is houering in the winde? Besides, there being three thousand leagues from hence to *Candaya*, if the horse should be weary, or the Gyant offended, wee might bee these halfe doozen of yeeres ere we returne, and then perhaps there would be neyther Island nor dry-land in the world to acknowledge me: and since 'tis ordinarily said, that delay breeds danger, and he that will not when he may, &c. these Gentlewomens beards shall pardon mee, for 'tis good sleeping in a whole skinnie, I meane, I am very well at home in this house, where I receiue so much kindnesse, and from whose Owner I hope for so great a good, as to see my selfe a Gouvernour.

To which (quoth the Duke) Friend *Sancho*, the Island that I promised you, is not moueable, nor fugitiue, it is so deepe rooted

ted in the earth, that a great many pulls will not root it vp: and since you know, that I know that there is none of these prync kinde of Officers, that payes not some kinde of bribe, some more, some lesse, yours for this Gouvernement shall be, that you accompany your Master *Don Quixote* to end and finish this memorable Aduenture, that, whether you returne on *Clautleno* with the breuity that his speed promisseth, or that your contrary fortune bring and returne you home on foot like a Pilgrime from Inne to Inne, and from Alehouse to Alehouse; at your coming backe, you shall finde the Island where you left it, and the Islanders with the same desire to receiue you for their Gouvernour, that they haue alwaies had, and my good will shall alwaies bee the same; and doubt not, Signior *Sancho*, of this, for you should do much wrong (in so doing) to the desire I haue to serue you.

No more, Sir, quoth *Sancho*, I am a poore Squire, and cannot carry so much courtesie vpon my backe: let my Master get vp, and blindefold me, and commend me to God Almighty, and tell mee, if, when I mount into this high-flying, I may recommend my selfe to God, or inuoke the Angels that they may fauour me.

To which the *Trifaldi* answered, You may recommend your selfe to God, or to whom you will; for *Malambruno*, though he bee an Enchanter, yet hee is a Christian, and performes his Enchantments with much sagacity, and very warily, without meddling with any body. Goe to then (quoth *Sancho*) God and the holy Trinity of *Gacra* helpe me. Since the memorable Aduenture of the Full-mills (quoth *Don Quixote*) I neuer saw *Sancho* so fearefull as now, & if I were as superstitious as some, his pusillanimity would tickle my conscience: but harke thee, *Sancho*, by these Gentles leaues, I will speake a word or two with thee: and carrying *Sancho* amongst some trees in the garden, taking him by both the hands, he sayd, Thou seest, Brother *Sancho*, the large voyage that we are like to haue, and God knowes when wee shall returne from it, nor the leisure that our affaires heereafter will giue vs. I prethee therefore, retire thy selfe to thy chamber, as if thou wentst to look for some necessary for

the way, and giue thy selfe in a trice, of the three thousand and three hundred lathes, in which thou standest engaged, but five hundred onely : so that the beginning of a businelle is halfe the ending of it.

Verily (quoth *Sancho*) I thinke you haue lost your wits, this is Iust : I am going, and thou art crying out in haste for thy mayden-head, I am now going to sit vpon a bare piece of wood, and you would haue my bunime smart. Beleeue mee, you haue no reason, let's now goe for the shauing these Matrons, and when we returne, Ile promise you to come out of debt : let this content you, and I say no more. *Don Quixote* made answer, Well, with this promise, *Sancho*, I am in some comfort, and I beleeue thou wilt accomplish it ; for though thou beest a foole, yet I thinke thou art honest.

\* Heere I left  
cut a line or  
two of a dull  
conceit ; so it  
was no great  
matter ; for in  
English it  
could not be  
expressed.

So now they went to mount *Clauileno*, and as they were getting vp, *Don Quixote* sayd, Hud-winke thy selfe, *Sancho*, and get vp : for hee that sends from so farre off for vs, will not deceiue vs ; for hee will get but small glory by it, and though all should succcede contrary to my imagination, yet no malice can obscure the glory of hauing vndergone this Aduenture. Lets goe, Master (quoth *Sancho*) for the beards & teares of these Gentle-women are nailed in my heart, & I shal not eat a bit, to doe me good, till I see them in their former smoothnesse. Get you vp, Sir, and hudwinke you selfe first ; for if I must ride behinde you, you must needes get vp first in the saddle.

Tis true indeede, sayd *Don Quixote*, and taking a handkerchiefe out of his pocket, he desired the Afflicted to hide his eyes close : & when it was done, he vncovered himselfe again, & said, As I remember, I haue read in *Virgil* of the *Palladium*, that horse of *Troy*, that was of wood, that the *Grecians* presented to the Goddesse *Pallas*, with childe with armed Knights, which after were the totall ruine of all *Troy*, and so it were fit first to try what *Clauileno* hath in his stomacke.

You neede not (sayd she) for I dare warrant you, and know that *Malabrano* is neither traytor nor malicious, you may get vp without any feare, and vpon me be it, if you receiue any hurt. But *Don Quixote* thought, that euery thing thus spoken

to

to his safety, was a detriment of his valour : so, without more exchanging of words, vp hee got, and tried the pin that easily turned vp and downe : so with his legs at length, without stirrups, hee looked like an Image painted in a piece of *Flanders Arras*, or wouen in some *Roman* triumph. *Sancho* got vp faire and softly, and with a very ill will, and settling himselfe the best hee could vpon the crupper, found it somewhat hard, and nothing soft, and desired the Duke, that if it were possible, hee might haue a cushioner, or for failing, one of the Duchesses cushions of State, or a pillow from one of the Pages beds ; for that horses crupper, he sayd, was rather marble then wood.

To this (quoth *Trisaldi*) *Clauileno* will suffer no kinde of furniture nor trapping vpon him : you may doe well for your ease, to sit on him woman-ways, so you will not feele his hardnesse so much. *Sancho* did so, and saying farewell, hee suffered himselfe to be bound about the eyes, and after vncovered himselfe againe, & looking pittifully round about the garden with teares in his eyes, he desired that they would in that dolefull trance ioyne with him each in a *Pater-noster*, and an *Aue Maria*, as God might prouide them some to doe them that charitable office when they should be in the like trance.

To which (quoth *Don Quixote*) Rascall, are you vpon the Gallowes, trow ? or at the last gaspe, that you vse these kinde of supplications ? Art thou not, thou soule-lesse cowardly creature, in the same place, where the faire *Megalona* sate, from whence she descended not to her graue ; but to bee Queene of *France*, if Histories lie not ? and am not I by thee ? cannot I compare with the valorous *Pierres*, that pressed this seat, that I now presse ? Hudwinke, hudwinke thy selfe, thou dis-heartned Beast, and let not thy feare come forth of thy mouth, at least in my presence. Hudwinke mee (quoth *Sancho*) and since you will not haue me pray to God, nor recommend me, how can I chuse but be afrayd, lest some legion of Devils bee heere, that may carry vs headlong to destruction.

Now they were hudwinked, and *Don Quixote* perceiuing that all was as it should be, layd hold on the pin, and scarce put his fingers to it, when all the Wayting-women, and as many as

were

were present, lifted vp their voyces, saying; God be thy speed, Valorous Knight; God be with thee, Vndaunted Squire: now, now you fly in the aire, cutting it with more speede then an arrow: now you begin to suspend, and astonish as many as behold you from earth. Hold, hold, valorous *Sancho*; for now thou goest wauing in the aire, take heede thou fall not; for thy fall will be worle then the bold Youths, that desired to gouerne his father, the Suns, charriot.

*Sancho* heard all this, and getting close to his Master, hee girt his armes about him, and sayd; Sir, why doe they say we are so high, if wee can heare their voyces? and mee thinkes they talke heere hard by vs. Ne're stand vpon that (quoth *Don Quixote*) for as these kindes of flying are out of the ordinary course of thousands of leagues, thou mayst heare and see any thing, and doe not presse me so hard; for thou wilt throw me downe: and verily, I know not why thou shouldst thus tremble and beafrayd; for I dare sweare, in all my life, I neuer rode vpon an easier-paced horse, he goes as if hee neuer mooued from the place. Friend, banish feare; for the businesse goes on successefully, and we haue winde at will. Indeepe tis true, quoth *Sancho*: for I haue a winde comes so forcibly on this side of mee, as if I were blowed vpon by a thousand paire of bellows: and it was true indeede, they were giuing him aire, with a very good paire of bellows.

This Aduenture was so well contriued by the Duke, the Duchesse, and the Steward, that there was no requisite wanting, to make it perfect. *Don Quixote* too feeling the breath, sayd: Vndoubtedly, *Sancho*, wee are now come to the middle Region, where haile, snow, thunder and lightning, and the thunder-bolt are ingendred in the third Region, & if we mount long in this manner, we shall quickly be in the Region of fire, and I know not how to vte this Pin, that wee mount not where wee shall be scorcht.

Now they heated their faces with flax set on fire, and easie to be quencht, in a caue a far off: and *Sancho*, that felt the heat, said Hang me, if I be not now in that place where the fire is; for a great part of my beard is singed: Ile vnblind-fold my selfe, Ma-

ster, and see whereabouts we are. Doe not (quoth *Don Quixote*) and remember that true tale of the Scholler *Tavalua*, whom the Deuill hoysted a vp into the aire a horse-backe on a reede, with his eyes shut, and in twelue houres hee arrived at *Rome*, and lighted at the Towre of *Nona*, which is one of the streets of the City, & saw all the mis-chance, the assault & death of *Borbon*, and the morrow after returned backe to *Madrid*, where he related all that he had scene: who also sayd, that as hee went in the aire, the Deuill bid him open his eyes, which he did, and saw himselfe, as he thought, so neere the body of the Moon, that he might haue touched her with his hands, and that he durst not looke toward the earth, for feare to be made giddy. So that, *Sancho*, there is no vncovering vs; for hee that hath the charge of carrying vs will looke to vs, and peradventure wee goe doubling of poynts, and mounting on high to fall euen with the Kingdome of *Candaya*, as doth the Sacar or Hawke vpon the Heron to catch her, mount shee neuer so high; and, though it seeme to vs not halfe an houre, since we parted from the garden, beleeue me, we haue trauelled a great way.

I know not what belongs to it (quoth *Sancho*) but this I know, that if your Lady *Magallanes*, or *Magalona* were pleased with my feat, she was not very tender-breecht. All these discourses of the two most valiant were heard by the Duke and Duchesse, and them in the garden, which gaue them extraordinary content: who willing to make an end of this strange and well-composed Aduenture, clapt fire with some flax at *Chantile-no's* taile; and straight the horse, being stuffed with Crackers, flew into the aire, making a strange noyse, and threw *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* both on the ground, and singed. And now all the bearded Squadron of the Matrons vanished out of the garden, and *Trifaldi* too and all, and they that remained, counterfeited a dead swoound, and lay all along vpon the ground.

*Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, ill-intreated, rose vp, and looking round about, they wondred to see themselves in the same garden, from whence they had parted, and to see such a company of people layd vpon the ground: and their admiration was the more increased, when on one side of the garden, they

A Story Learned in Spain as Gospel.

they saw a great lance fastned in the ground, and a smooth white piece of parchment hanging at it, with two twisted strings of greene silke, in which the following words were written with letters of gold.

**T**He famous & valorous Knight, Don Quixote de la Mancha, finishd and ended the Adventure of the Countesse Trifaldi, otherwise called, The Afflicted Matron, and her Company, onely with undertaking it.

Malambruno is satisfied and contented with all his heart, and now the Wayting-womens chins are smooth and cleane, and the Princes Don Clanixio and Antonomalia are in their pristine being, and when the Squires whipping shall bee accomplished, the white Pigeon shall be free from the pestiferous Ier-Falcons that persecute her, and in her loved Lullers armes; for so it is ordained by the sage Merlin, Proto-Enchanter of Enchanters.

When Don Quixote had read these letters of the parchment, he vnderstood plainly, that they spoke of the dis-enchanting of Dulcinea, and giuing many thanks to Heauen, that with so little danger he had ended so great an exployt, as reducing the faces of the venerable Wayting-women, to their former smoothness, that were now gone: he went towards the Duke and the Duchesse, who were not as yet come to themselues, and taking the Duke by the hand, hee sayd; Courage, courage, noble Sir, all's nothing, the Adventure is now ended, without breaking of barres, as you may plainly see by the writing there in that Register.

The Duke (like one that riseth out of a profound sleepe) by little and little came to himselfe, and in the same Tenor the Duchesse, and all they that were downe in the garden, with such shewes of maruell and wonderment, that they did euen seeme to perswade, that those things had happened to them in earnest, which they counterfeited in iest. The Duke read the scrowle with his eyes halfe shut; and straight, with open arme, hee went to embrace Don Quixote, telling him he was the braver Knight that ever was. Sancho looked vp and downe for the Afflicted,

to see what manner of face shee had, now shee was disbearded, and if shee were so faire, as her gallant presence made shew for: but they told him, that as *Clanixio* came downe burning in the aire, and lighted on the ground, all the Squadron of Wayting-women with *Trifaldi* vanished, and now they were shaued and vnfeathered.

The Duchesse asked *Sancho*, how he did in that long voyage? To which he answered, I, Madam, thought (as my Master told me) we passed by the Region of fire, and I would haue vncouered my selfe a little; but my Master (of whom I asked leaue) would not let me: but I that haue certaine curious itches, and a desire to know what is forbidden me, softly, without being perceiued, drew vp the handkerchiffe that blinded me, a little aboue my nose, and there I saw the earth, and me thought it was no bigger then a graine of Mustard-seed, and the men that walked vpon it, somewhat bigger then Hazel-nuts, that you may see how high we were then. To this (sayd the Duchesse) Take heede, friend *Sancho*, what you say; for it seemes you saw not the earth, but the men that walked on it: for it is plaine, that if the earth shewed no bigger then a graine of Mustard-seede, and every man like a Hazel-nut, one man alone would couer the whole earth.

'Tis true indeede (quoth *Sancho*) but I looked on one side of it, and saw it all. Looke you, *Sancho* (quoth the Duchesse) one cannot see all of a thing by one side. I cannot tell what belongs to your seeing. Madam (quoth *Sancho*) but you must thinke, that since wee flew by Enchantment; by Enchantment, I might see the whole earth and all the men, which way soeuer I looked: and if you beleue not this, neither will you beleue, that vncouering my selfe about my eye-browes, I saw my selfe so neere heauen, that betwixt it and me there was not a handfull and a halfe; and I dare sweare, Madam, that 'tis a huge thing: and it hapned that we went that way where the seuen Shee-goat-starrs were, and in my soule and conscience, I hauing been a Goat-headed in my youth, as soone as I saw them, I had a great desire to passe some time with them; which had I not done, I thought I should haue burst. Well, I come then, and I take;

I take; What doe I do? without giuing notice to any body? no, not to my Master himselfe: faire and softly I lighted from *Clanileno*, and playd with the Goats that were like white Violets, and such pretty flowers, some three quarters of an houre, and *Clanileno* moued not a whit all this while.

And while *Sancho* was playing with the Goats all this while, quoth the Duke, what did Signior *Don Quixote*? To which (quoth *Don Quixote*) As all these things are quite out of their naturall course, tis not much that *Sancho* hath sayd: onely for me, I say, I neither perceiued my selfe higher or lower, neither saw I Heauen, or Earth, or Seas, or Sands. True it is, that I perceiued I passed thorow the middle Region, and came to the fire: but to thinke we passed from thence, I cannot belecue it; for the Region of fire being betweene the Moone, and Heauen, and the latter Region of the aire, wee could not come to Heauen, where the seuen Goats are, that *Sancho* talkes of, without burning our selues: which since wee did not, either *Sancho* lies or dreames.

I neither lie nor dreame, quoth *Sancho*; for aske mee the signes of those Goats, and by them you shall see whether I tell true or no. Tell them, *Sancho*, quoth the Duchesse. Two of them (quoth *Sancho*) are greene, two bloud-red, two blew, and one mixt-coloured. Heere's a new kinde of Goats (quoth the Duke) in our Region of the earth wee haue no such coloured ones. Oh, you may bee sure (quoth *Sancho*) there's difference betweene those and these. Tell mee, *Sancho* (quoth the Duke) did you see amongst those Shee's a any He-goat? No, Sir (quoth *Sancho*) for I heard say that none passed the hornes of the Moone.

\* An equiuo-  
call question;  
for in Spaine  
they vse to call  
Cuckolds, Ca-  
broves, He-  
goats.

They would aske him no more touching his voyage; for it seemed to them, that *Sancho* had a clew to carry him all Heauen ouer, and to tell all that passed there, without stirring out of the garden. In conclusion, this was the end of the Aduenture of the Afflicted Matron, that gaue occasion of mirth to the Dukes, not onely for the present; but for their whole life-time, and to *Sancho* to recount for many ages, if he might live so long. But *Don Quixote* whispering *Sancho* in the eare, told him; *Sancho*, since

since you will haue vs belecue all that you haue seene in Heauen, I pray belecue all that I saw in *Montesino's* Cane, and I say no more.

## CHAP. XLII.

Of the aduice that *Don Quixote* gaue *Sancho Panza*, before he should goe to gouerne the Iland, with other matter well digested.

THE Dukes were so pleased with the happy and pleasant successe of the Aduenture of *The Afflicted*, that they determined to goe on with their iests, seeing the fit subiect they had, to make them passe for earnest; so hauing contriued and giuen order to their seruants & vassals, that they should obey *Sancho* in his Government of the promised Iland, the next day after the iest of *Clanileno's* flight, the Duke bade *Sancho* prepare, and put himselfe in order, to goe to be Gouvernor; for that now his Ilanders did as much desire him, as showres in May.

*Sancho* made an obeyfance to him, and sayd; Since I came downe from Heauen, and since from on high I beheld the earth, and saw it so small, I was partly cooled in my desire to be a Gouvernor; for what greatnes can there be, to command in a graine of Mustard-seede? or what dignity or power to gouerne halfe a doozen of men about the bignesse of Hazel-nuts? for to my thinking, there were no more in all the earth. If it would please your Lordship to giue mee neuer so little in Heauen, though twere but halfe a league, I would take it more willingly then the biggest Iland in the world. Looke yee, friend *Sancho* (quoth the Duke) I can giue no part of Heauen to no body, though it be no bigger then my nayle: for these fauours and graces: are onely in Gods disposing. What is in my power, I giue you, that is, an Iland, right and straight, round and well-proportioned, and extraordinarily fertill and abundant, where, if you haue the Art, you may with the riches of earth, hoord vp the treasure of Heauen.

Well

Well then (quoth *Sancho*) giue vs this Iland, and in spight of Rascals Ile go to heauen; and yet for no couetousnesse to leaue my poore Cottage, or to get me into any Palaces, but for the desire I haue to know what kinde of thing it is to bee a Gouvernour.

If once you proue it, *Sancho*, quoth the Duke, you will be in loue with gouerning; so sweet a thing it is to command, and to be obeyed. I warrant, when your Master comes to be an Emperour, for without doubt he vvill be one (according as his affaires goe on) that he vvill not bee drawne from it, and it will grieue him to the soule, to haue beene so long otherwise.

Sir, (quoth *Sancho*) I suppose 'tis good to command, though it be but a head of Cattell.

Let me liue and die with thee, *Sancho*, (quoth the Duke) for thou knowest all, and I hope thou wilt be such a Gouvernour as thy discretion promisseth, and let this suffice; and note, that to morrow about this time thou shalt goe to the Gouvernement of thy Iland, and this afternoone thou shalt be fitted with convenient apparell to carry with thee, and all things necessary for thy departure.

Clad mee (quoth *Sancho*) how you vvill, for howsoeuer ye clad me, Ile be still *Sancho Panza*.

You are in the right (quoth the Duke) but the Robes must be suitable to the Office or dignity which is professed; for it were not fit that a Lawyer should be clad like a Souldier, or a Souldier like a Priest. You, *Sancho*, shall bee clad, partly like a Lawyer, and partly like a Captaine: for in the Iland that I giue you, Armes are as requisite as Learning.

I haue little learning (quoth *Sancho*) for as yet I scarce know my A. B. C. but 'tis enough that I haue my Christs Crosse ready in my memory to bee a good Gouvernour. Ile manage my weapon till I fall againe, and God helpe mee. With so good a memory (quoth the Duke) *Sancho* cannot doe amisse.

By this time *Don Quixote* came, and knowing what passed, and that *Sancho* vvvas so speedily to go to his Gouvernement, with the Dukes leaue, hee tooke him by the hand, and carried him aside, with a purpose to aduise him how hee should behaue himselfe.

selfe in his Office. When they came into *Don Quixote's* chamber, the doore being shut, hee forced *Sancho*, as it vvvere to sit downe by him, and vvith a stayed voyce said:

I giue infinite thanks, friend *Sancho*, that before I haue receiued any good fortune, thou hast mette vvith thine: I that thought to haue rewarded thy seruice with some good lucke of mine to haue saued that labour, and thou sodainely past all expectation hast thy desires accomplished, others bribe, importune, sollicit, rise early, intreat, grow obstinate, and obtaine not what they sue for; and another comes hab-nab, and goes away vvith the place or Office, that many others sought for, & heere the Prouerbe comes in and ioynes well; that, Giue a man luck, and cast him in the Sea. Thou, that in my opinion art a very Goose, without early rising, or late sitting vp, without any labour, onely the breath of Knight-Errantry breathing on thee, without any more adoe art Gouvernour of an Iland, a matter of nothing. All this I say, *Sancho*, that thou attribute not this happiness to thy deserts, but that thou giue God thanks, that sweetly disposeth things; next, thou shalt impute them to the greatness of the profession of Knight Errantry. (Thy heart then disposed to belecue what I haue said) be attentiu, oh my sonne, to this thy *Cato*, that will aduise thee, be thy North-starre and guide to direct and bring thee to a safe port, out of this troublesome Sea where thou goest to ingulfe thy selfe in; for your Offices and great charges are nothing else but a profound gulfe of confusions.

First of all, O sonne, thou must feare God: for to feare him, is wisdom, and bring wise, thou canst erre in nothing.

Secondly, thou must consider who thou art, and know thy selfe, which is the hardest kinde of knowledge that may be imagined: from this knowledge thou shalt learne not to be swolne like the frogge, that would equall himselfe with the Oxe, for if thou doe this, thou shalt (falling downe the wheele of thy madnesse) come to know thou wert but a hogge-keeper.

That's true (quoth *Sancho*) but 'twas when I was a boy: but after, when I grew to be somewhat mannish, I kept Geese, and not Hogges: but this me thinkes is nothing to the purpose, for



all they that gouerne, come not from the loynes of Kings.

Tis true (said *Don Quixote*) therefore these that haue no noble beginnings, must mixe the grauity of their charge they exercise, with milde sweetnesse, which, guided with wisdom, may free them from malicious murmuring, from which no state or calling is free.

Reioyce, oh *Sancho*, in the humility of thy linage, & scorne not to say, thou comest of labouring men, for when thou art not ashamed thy selfe, no body will seeke to make thee so, and alwaies strue to be held meane and vertuous, rather then proud and vicious: an infinite number from low beginnings haue come to great risings, as Pontificall and Imperiall dignities: and to confirme this, I could bring thee so many examples as should weary thee.

Note, *Sancho*, that if you follow Vertue for your meane, and strue to doe vertuous deeds, you need not enuy those that are borne of Princes and great men, for blood is inherited, but vertue is atchieued, vertue is of worth by it selfe alone, so is not birth.

Which being so, if perchance any of thy kindred come to see thee when thou art in thy Iland, refuse him not, nor affront him, but entertaine, welcome, and make much of him, for with this, God will be pleased, that would haue no body despise his making, and thou shalt also in this correspond to good nature.

If thou bring thy wife with thee (for it were not fit that those who are to gouern long, should be without them) teach her, instruct her, refine her naturall rudenesse: for many times all that a discret Governour gets, a clownish foolish woman spills and loses.

If thou chance to be a widdower (a thing that may happen) and desire to marry againe, take not such a one as may serue thee for a baite and fishing rodde to take bribes: for let me tell thee, the husband must giue an account of all that (being a Iudge) his wife receiues, and at the generall resurrection, shall pay fourfold what he hath bene accused for in his life-time.

Neuer pronounce iudgement rash or wilfully, which is very frequent with ignorant Iudges, that presume to be skilfull.

Let

Let the teares of the poore finde more compassion (but not more iustice) then the informations of the rich.

Seeke as well to discouer the truth, from out the promises and corruptions of the rich, as the sobes and importunities of the poore.

When equity is to take place, lay not all the rigour of the law, vpon the delinquent; for the same of the rigorous Iudge, is not better then of the compassionate.

If thou slacken Iustice, let it not be with the waight of a bribe; but with the waight of pitty.

When thou happenest to iudge thine enemies case, forget thy iniury, and respect equity.

Let not proper passion blinde thee in another mans cause, for the errors thou shalt commit in that, most commonly are incurable, or if they be helped, it must be with thy wealth and credit.

If any faire woman come to demand iustice of thee, turne thy eyes from her teares, and thy cares from her lamentations, and consider at leisure the summe of her request, except thou mean that thy reason be drowned in her weeping, and thy goodnesse in her sighes.

\* Him that thou must punish with deeds, reuile not vvith words, since to a wretch the punishment is sufficient, vvithout adding ill language.

\* A good Item to our Iudges of the Commō Law.

For the delinquent that is vnder thy iurisdiction, consider that the miserable man is subiect to the temptations of our depraued nature, and as much as thou canst, without grieuance to the contrary party, shew thy selfe milde & gentle, for although Gods attributes are equall, yet to our sight his mercy is more precious and more eminent then his iustice.

If *Sancho*, thou follow these rules and precepts, thy daies shall be long, thy fame eternall, thy rewards full, thy happinesse indelible, thou shalt marry thy children how thou wilt, they shall haue titles, and thy grand-children, thou shalt liue in peace and loue of all men, and when thy life is ending, death shall take thee in a mature old age, and thy Nephewes shall close thy eyes with their tender and delicate hands.

Those I haue told thee hitherto, are documents, concerning thy

all they that gouerne, come not from the loynes of Kings.

Tis true (saide *Don Quixote*) therefore these that haue no noble beginnings, must mixe the grauity of their charge they exercise, with milde sweetnesse, which, guided with wisdom, may free them from malicious inurmuring, from which no state or calling is free.

Reioyce, oh *Sancho*, in the humility of thy linage, & scorne not to say, thou commest of labouring men, for when thou art not ashamed thy selfe, no body will seeke to make thee so, and alwaies strue to be held meane and vertuous, rather then proud and vicious: an infinite number from low beginnings haue come to great risings, as Pontificall and Imperiall dignities: and to confirme this, I could bring thee so many examples as should weary thee.

Note, *Sancho*, that if you follow Vertue for your meane, and strue to doe vertuous deeds, you need not enuy those that are borne of Princes and great men, for blood is inherited, but vertue is atchieued, vertue is of worth by it selfe alone, so is not birth.

Which being so, if perchance any of thy kindred come to see thee when thou art in thy Iland, refuse him not, nor affront him, but entertaine, welcome, and make much of him, for with this, God will be pleased, that would haue no body despise his making, and thou shalt also in this correspond to good nature.

If thou bring thy wife with thee (for it were not fit that those who are to gouern long, should be without them) teach her, instruct her, refine her naturall rudenesse: for many times all that a discret Governour gets, a clownish foolish woman spills and loses.

If thou chance to be a widdower (a thing that may happen) and desire to marry againe, take not such a one as may serue thee for a baite and fishing rodde to take bribes: for let me tell thee, the husband must giue an account of all that (being a Iudge) his wife receiues, and at the generall resurrection, shall pay fourfold what he hath bene accused for in his life-time.

Neuer pronounce iudgement rash or wilfully, which is very frequent with ignorant Iudges, that presume to be skilfull.

Let

Let the teares of the poore finde more compassion (but not more iustice) then the informations of the rich.

Seeke as well to discouer the truth, from out the promises and corruptions of the rich, as the sobs and importunities of the poore.

When equity is to take place, lay not all the rigour of the law, vpon the delinquent; for the same of the rigorous Iudge, is not better then of the compassionate.

If thou slacken Iustice, let it not be with the waight of a bribe; but with the waight of pitty.

When thou happenest to iudge thine enemies case, forget thy iniury, and respect equity.

Let not proper passion blinde thee in another mans cause, for the errors thou shalt commit in that, most commonly are incurable, or if they be helped, it must be with thy wealth and credit.

If any faire woman come to demand iustice of thee, turne thy eyes from her teares, and thy cares from her lamentations, and consider at leisure the summe of her request, except thou mean that thy reason be drowned in her weeping, and thy goodnesse in her sighes.

<sup>a</sup> Him that thou must punish with deeds, reuile not vvith words, since to a wretch the punishment is sufficient, vvithout adding ill language.

<sup>a</sup> A good Item to our Iudges of the Commō Law.

For the delinquent that is vnder thy iurisdiction, consider that the miserable man is subiect to the temptations of our depraued nature, and as much as thou canst, without grievance to the contrary party, shew thy selfe milde & gentle, for although Gods attributes are equall, yet to our sight his mercy is more precious and more eminent then his iustice.

If *Sancho*, thou follow these rules and precepts, thy daies shall be long, thy fame eternall, thy rewards full, thy happinesse indelible, thou shalt marry thy children how thou wilt, they shall haue titles, and thy grand-children, thou shalt liue in peace and loue of all men, and when thy life is ending, death shall take thee in a mature old age, and thy Nephewes shall close thy eyes with their tender and delicate hands.

Those I haue told thee hitherto, are documents, concerning thy

thy soule, to adorne it, hearken now to those that must serue for the adorning thy body.

## CHAP. XLIII.

*Of the second aduice that Don Quixote gaue Sancho Pança.*

**W**HO could haue heard this discourse, and not held *Don Quixote* for a most wise Personage, and most honest? But as it hath beene often told in the prologue of this large History, he was onely besotted, when he touched vpon his Cauallery, and in the rest of his talke hee shewed a cleere and currant apprehension: so that euery foot his works bewrayed his iudgement, and his iudgement his workes. But in these second documents he gaue now to *Sancho*, he shew'd a great deale of lenity, and ballanced his iudgement and his madnesse in an equall Scale. *Sancho* harkened most attentiuely vnto him, and stroue to beare in minde his instructions, as thinking to obserue them, and by them to be very well deliuered of his big-swolne Government. *Don Quixote* proceeded, saying;

Touching the gouerning thine owne person and household, *Sancho*, the first thing I enioyne thee to, is to be cleanly, and to paire thy nailes, not letting them grow, as some doe, whose ignorance hath made them thinke 'tis a fine thing to haue long nailes, as if that excrement and superfluity that they let grow, were onely their nailes, rather the clawes of a lizard-bearing Castrell, and a foule abuse it is.

Goe not vn-girt or loose, for a slouely garment is a signe of a carelesse minde, if so be this kinde of slouely loosenesse be not to some cunning end, as it was iudged to be in *Julius Caesar*.

Consider with discretion vwhat thy Gouvernement may be worth, & if it will afford thee to bestow liueries on thy seruants, giue them decent and profitable ones, rather then gawdie or lightly, and so giue thy cloth amongst thy seruants & the poore, I meane, that if thou haue sixe Pages, giue three of them liueries,

and

and three to the poore, so shalt thou haue Pages in earth, and in heauen: and your vaine-glorious haue not attained to this kinde of giuing liueries.

Eat not Garlicke or Onions, that thy Pefantry may not be knowne by thy breath: walke softly, and speak stayedly, but not so as if it appeared thou hearkenedst to thy selfe, for all kinde of affectation is naught.

Eat little at dinner, but lesse at supper, for the health of the whole body is forged in the forge of the stomake.

Be temperate in drinking, considering that too much wine neyther keepe secret, nor fulfils promise.

Take heede, *Sancho*, of chewing on both sides, or to rust before any body.

I vnderstand not your rusting, quoth *Sancho*: to rust (quoth he) is as much as to belch, and this is one of the foulest words our language hath, though it be very significant; so your more neat people haue gotten the Latin word, and call belching, ructing, & belchers, ructers: and though some perhaps vnderstand not this, tis no great matter, for vse and custome will introduce them that they may easily be vnderstood, and the power that the vulgar and custome hath, is the enriching of a language.

Truly (said *Sancho*) one of your aduices that I meane to remember, shall be not to belch, for I am vied to do it often. Ruct, *Sancho*, not belch, quoth *Don Quixote*. Ruct I will say, quoth he, hence-forward, and not forget it.

Likewise, *Sancho*, you must not intermixe your discourse with that multiplicity of Proverbs you vse; for though Proverbs be witty short sentences, yet thou bringest them in so by head and shoulders, that they are rather absurdities then sentences. This (quoth *Sancho*) God Almighty can onely helpe, for I haue more Proverbs then a booke will hold, & when I speake, they come so thick to my mouth, that they fall out, & shiue one with another, who shall come out first: but my tongue casts out the first it meetes withall, though they be nothing to the purpose, but I will haue a care hereafter, to speake none but shall be fitting to the gravity of my place; for where there is plency, the ghefts are not empty; and he that works, doth not care for

T

play,

play, and he is in safety that stands vnder the bels, and his iudgement's rare, that can spend and spare.

Now, now, quoth *Don Quixote*, glue, thred, fasten thy proverbs together, no body comes: the more thou art told a thing, the more thou dost it; I bid thee leaue thy proverbs, and in an instant thou shalt call out a Letany of vm, that are as much to the purpose, as, To morrow I found a horse-shoo. Looke thee *Sancho*, I finde not fault with a prouerbe brought in to some purpose, but to load and heap on Proverbs huddling together, makes a discourse wearisome and base.

When thou getst on horse-backe, doe not goe casting thy body all vpon the crupper, nor carry thy legges stiffe downe, and straddling from the horses belly, nor yet so loosely, as if thou wert still riding on thy Dapple, for your horse-riding makes some appeare Gentlemen, others Groomes.

Let thy sleepe be moderate, for hee that riseth not with the Sunne, loseth the day: and obserue, *Sancho*, that diligence is the mother of good Fortune, and sloth the contrary, that neuer could satisfie a good desire.

This last aduice that I meane to giue thee, though it be not to the adorning of the body, yet I would haue thee beare it in thy memory; for I beleue it will bee of no lesse vse to thee, then those that I haue hitherto giuen thee, and it is,

That thou neuer dispute of Linages, comparing them together, since of necessity amongst those that are compared, one must be the better, and of him thou debasest thou shalt be abhorred, and of him ennoblest, not a whit rewarded.

Let thy apparell be a pained hose, and long stockings, a long-skirted iacket, and a cloake of the longest: but long hose by no meanes, for they become neyther Gentlemen nor Gouvernours.

This is all, *Sancho*, I will aduise thee to for the present; as the time and occasions serue hereafter, so shall my instructions bee, so that thou be carefull to let me know how thou dost.

Sir, (quoth *Sancho*) I see well that you haue told me nothing but what is good, holy, and profitable: but to what purpose, if I remember nothing? True it is that, that of not letting my nailes grow, and to marry againe if need be, I shall not forget; but

but your other slabber-sawces, your tricks and quilllets, I cannot remember them, nor shall not, no more then last yeeres clouds: therefore I pray let me haue them in writing, for though I can neyther write nor read, Ile giue them to my Confessor, that he may frame them into me, and make me capable of them at time of need.

Wretch that I am, quoth *Don Quixote*, how ill it appeares in a Gouvernour, not to write or reade! for know, *Sancho*, that for a man not to read, or not to be left-handed, argues that eyther he was a sonne of meane Parents, or so vnhappy and vntowardly, that no good would preuaile on him.

I can set to my name, quoth *Sancho*, for when I was Constable of our Towne, I learnt to make certaine letters, such as are set to marketrusses of stufte, which they said spelt my name: Besides now, Ile saue that my right hand is maimed, and so another shall firme for me; for theres a remedy for euery thing but death; and since I beare sway, Ile doe what I list: for according to the Prouerb, \* He that hath the Iudge to his Father, &c. and I am Gouvernour, which is more then Iudge. I, I, let vm come and play at boe-peepe, let vm backe-bite me, let vm come for wooll, and Ile send them backe shorne; whom God loues, his house is sauoury to him, and euery man beares with the rich mans follies, so I being rich, and a Gouvernour, and liberall too, as I meane to be, I will be without all faults. No, no, pray be dainty, and see what will become on't, haue much, and thou shalt be esteemed much, quoth a Grandame of mine, and might ouercomes right.

Oh, a plague on thee, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) three-score thousand Satans take thee and thy Prouerbs, this howre thou hast beene stringing them one vpon another, and giuing me tormenting potions with each of them: I assure thee, that one of these dayes these Prouerbs will carry thee to the gallows, for them thy vassalls will bereaue thee of thy Gouvernement, or there will be a community amongst them. Tell mee, ignorant, Where dost thou finde them all? or how dost thou apply them, Ninny-hammer? for, for me to speake one and apply it well, it makes me sweat and labour, as if I had digged.

Assuredly, Master mine, quoth *Sancho*, a small matter makes you angry: why the Deuill doe you pine that I make vse of my owne goods? for I haue no other, nor any other stocke but Prouerbs vpon Prouerbs: and now I haue foure that fall out iump to the purpose, like Peares for a working basket: but I will say nothing, for now *Sancho* shall be called Silence: Rather babbling, quoth *Don Quixote*, or Obstinacy it selfe; yet I would faine know what foure Prouerbs they be that came into thy minde; so to the purpose; for I can think vpon none, yet I haue a good memory.

What better) said *Sancho*) then Meddle not with a hollow tooth: And, Go from my house, What will you haue vvith my wife? Theres no answering: and, If the pot fall vpon the stone, or the stone on the pot, ill for the pot, ill for the stone; all which are much to the purpose. That no body meddle with their Gouvernour, nor with their Superiour, lest they haue the worst, as he that puts his hand to his teeth (so they be not hollow, tis no matter if they be teeth). Whatsoeuer the Gouvernour saies, there is no replying, as in saying, Get you from my house, and, What will you haue with my wife? and that of the pot and the stone, a blinde man may perceiue it: so that he that sees the moate in another mans eye, let him see the beame in his owne, that it may not be said by him, The dead was afraid of her that was slayd. And you know, Sir, that the foole knowes more in his owne house, then the wise man doth in anothers.

Not so, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*;) for the foole, neyther in his owne house nor anothers, knowes ought, by reason that no wise edifice is seated vpon the increase of his folly: and let vs leaue this, *Sancho*, for if thou gouerne ill, thou must beare the fault, and mine must be the shame; but it comforts mee that I haue done my duty in aduising thee truly, and as discretely as I could, and with this I haue accomplished with my obligation, and God speed thee *Sancho*, and gouerne thee in thy Gouvernment, and bring mee out of the scruple I am in, that thou wilt turne thy Gouvernment with the heeles vpwards, which I might preuent, by letting the Duke knowv thee better, and telling him, that all that fatnesse, and  
little

little corps of thine, is nothing but a sack of Prouerbs and knauerie.

Sir (quoth *Sancho*) if you thinke I am not fit for this Gouvernment, from henceforward I lose it: I had rather haue a poore little scrap of the naile of my soule, then my whole body: and I can as well keepe my selfe with, plaine *Sancho*, a Loafe and an Onyon, as a Gouvernour with Capons & Partridges: and whilst we are asleepe, all are alike: great and small, poore and rich: and if you consideron't, you shall finde, that you onely put me into this veine of gouerning: for I know no more what belongs to gouerning of Ilands then a Vulture, and rather, then in being a Gouvernour, the Diuell shall fetch my soule; I had rather be *Sancho*, and goe to heauen, then a Gouvernour and go to hell. Truly, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*: for these last words thou hast spoken, I deeme thee worthy to gouern a thousand Ilands; thou hast a good naturall capacitie, without which no science is worth ought; serue God, and erre not in thy maine intentions, I meane that thou alwayes haue a firme purpose and intent, to be sure in all busineses that shall occurre, because Heauen alwayes fauours good desires, and let's goe dine: for I belecue now the Lords expect vs.

#### CHAP. XLIV.

*How Sancho Panfa was carried to his Gouvernment, and of the strange Aduenture that befell Don Quixote in the Castle.*

Is sayd, that in the originall of this History, it is read, that when *Cid Hamete* came to write this Chapter, the Interpreter translated it not as he had written it, which was kinde a of complaint of himselfe, that he vndertooke so dry and barren a story, as this of *Don Quixote*, because it seemed that *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* were the sole speakers, and that he durst not enlarge himselfe with other digressions, or grauer accidents and more delightfull: and he sayd, That to haue his in-  
uention,

vention, his hand and his quill, tyed to one sole subiect, and to speake by the mouthes of few, was a most insupportable labor, and of no benefit to the Author: so that to auoyd this inconuenience, in the first part he vsed the Art of Nouels, as one, of *The Curious Impertinent*, another of *The capti'd Captaine*, which are (as it were) separated from the History, though the rest that are there recounted, are matters that happened to *Don Quixote*, which could not but be set downe: he was of opinion likewise, as he sayd, that many being carried away with attention to *Don Quixotes* exployts, would not heede his Nouels, and skip them, either for haste or irkesomnesse, without noting the cunning worke-manship, and framing of them, which would be plainly shewne, if they might come to light by themselues alone, without *Don Quixotes* madnesse, or *Sancho's* simplicities; therefore in this second part, hee would not engraffe loose Nouels, or adioyning to the Story, but certaine accidents that might bee like vnto them, sprung from the passages that the truth it selfe offers, and these too sparingly, and with words only proper to declare them: and since, he is shut vp and contained in the limits of this narration, hauing vnderstanding, sufficiency and ability to treat of all, his request is, that his labour bee not contemned, but rather that hee bee commended, not for what hee writes, but for what he hath omitted to write: so he goes on with his History, saying;

That when *Don Quixote* had dined, the same day that hee gaue *Sancho* his instructions, in the after-noon he let him haue them in writing, that he might seeke some body to read them to him: but as soone as euer he had giuen him them, he lost them, and they came to the Dukes hands, who shewed them to the Duchesse; and both of them afresh admired at *Don Quixotes* madnesse, and his vnderstanding together: and so going forward with their iests, that afternoone they sent *Sancho* well accompanied to the place, that to him seemed an Island.

It fell out then that the charge of this businesse was laid vpon a Steward of the Dukes, a good wise fellow, and very conceited; for there can be no wit that is not gouerned with discretion; hee it was that playd the Counsellor *Trifaldi's* part, with the cunning

ning that hath beene related, with this and with his Masters instructions how he should behaue himselfe towards *Sancho*, hee performed his taske maruellously. I say then, that it hapned, that as *Sancho* saw the Steward, the very face of *Trifaldi* came into his minde, and turning to his Master, hee said: Sir, the Diuell beare me from hence iust as I belecue, if you doe not confesse, that this Steward of the Dukes heere present, hath the very countenance of the Afflicted.

*Don Quixote* earnestly beheld the Steward, and hauing thorowly seene him, said to *Sancho*: There is no need of the Diuels taking thee iust as thou beleuest (for I know not what thou meanest) for the Afflicteds face is iust the same that the Stewards is: but for all that, the Steward is not the Afflicted; for, to bee so, were a manifest contradiction, and now tis no time to sift out these things, which were to enter into an intricate Labyrinth: beleue me, friend; 'twere fit to pray to God very earnestly, to deliuer vs from these damned Witches and Enchanters. Tis no iesting matter, quoth *Sancho*, for I heard him speak before, and me thought the very voice of *Trifaldi* sounded in my eares.

Well, I will bee silent: but yet I will see henceforward, if I can discover any signe to confirme or forgoe my icalousie. You may doe so, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*; and you shall giue me notice of all that in this businesse you can discover, and of all that shall befall you in your Gouvernement.

*Sancho* in conclusion departed with a great troope, clad like a Lawyer, & vpon his backe he had a goodly tawny riding Coat of watred Chamlet, and a Hunters Cap of the same, he rode vpon a Hee Moyle<sup>a</sup> after the Ginet fashion, and behinde him, by the Dukes order, his Dapple was ledde, with trappings and Ass-like ornaments all of like: *Sancho* turned his head now and then to looke vpon his Ass, with whose company he was so well pleased, that he would not haue changed to haue beene Emperour of *Germany*. At parting he kissed the Dukes hands, and receiued his Masters benediction, who gaue it him vvith teares, and *Sancho* receiued it with blubberings.

Now, Reader, let honest *Sancho* part in peace and in good time,

<sup>a</sup> The Stirrops short, and his legges trusted vp.



time, and expect two bushels of laughter, which his demeanour in his Government will minister to thee: and in the meane time, marke what befell his Master, that very night: for if it make thee not laugh outright, yet it will cause thee shew thy teeth, and grin like an Ape: for *Don Quixotes* affaires must either bee solemnized with admiration or laughter.

Tis said then, that *Sancho* was scarce departed, when *Don Quixote* resented his solitarinesse, and if it had been possible for him to haue reuoked his Commission, or taken away his Government, he would haue done it.

The Duchesse knew his Melancholy, and asked him why he was so sad: for if it were for *Sancho's* absence, shee had Squires, and Waiting-women, and Damozels in her house, that would doe him all seruice.

True it is, Madam, quoth *Don Quixote*, that I resent *Sancho's* absence: but that is not the principall cause, that makes me appeare sad: and of those many kindnesse, that your Excellency offers me, I onely accept and make choyse of the good will with which they are offered, and for the rest, I humbly beseech your Excellencie, that you giue me leaue in my Chamber to serue my selfe.

Truely, Signior *Don Quixote*, quoth the Duchesse, it must not be so: for foure of my Damozels shall waite vpon you, as faire as flowers. They shall be no flowers to mee (quoth he) but very thornes, that pricke my soule. They shall fly as soone as enter into my Chamber, or come neere me. If your Greatnesse will continue in your fauour towards me, let this be one, that I may serue my selfe within mine owne doores, that I may put a wal in midst of my desires and honesty; and I will not forget this custome, for all the liberalitie that your Highnesse will shew vnto. To conclude, I will rather sleepe in my cleashes, then yeeld that any body shall helpe to vndresse me.

Enough, enough, Signior *Don Quixote* (quoth the Duchesse) for my part, He giue order that not so much as a Fly, shall come within your distance, much lesse a Damozell: I am none of those that would make Signior *Don Quixote* transcend his decency: nor as I haue a kind of glimmering, one of Signior *Don Quixote*

most eminent vertues, is his honestie. Vndresse your selfe, and goe to bed alone after your owne fashion how you will, and no body shall hinder you, & in your chamber you shall haue all things necessary, and locke your doore to you: your vessels shall be ready, that no naturall cause make you rise to open your doore.

Long liue the Grand *Dulcinea del Toboso*, and her name farre extended vpon the Globe of the earth, since she deserued to bee beloued of so honest and valiant a Knight: and the gracious heauens infuse into *Sancho Pansa* our Gouvernour his heart, a desire to finish the disciplining of himselfe quickly, that the world may re-enioy the beauty of so great a Lady.

To which (quoth *Don Quixote*) your Highnesse hath spoken like your selfe: for no ill thing can proceed from the mouth of so good a Lady, and *Dulcinea* shall be the more happie, and more esteemed in the world, in that your Greatnesse hath praised her, then if she had had the praises of the best Rhetoricians in the world.

Well: Goe too, Signior *Don Quixote* (quoth the Duchesse) tis now supper time, and the Duke expects vs; come, Sir, let's sup, and to bed betimes: for your voyage yesterday from *Candaya*, was not so short, but it hath left some wearinesse in you.

None at all, Lady (quoth he:) for I may sweare to your Excellencie, that in my life time I neuer rode vpon a gentler nor better-paced Beast then *Clanileno*; and I know no reason why *Malambruno* should lose so swift and so gentle a horse, and so burne him without more adoe.

You may imagine (quoth she) that hee repenting him of the hurt he had done *Trifaldi* and her company, and many others; and of the wickednes, that as a Witch & Enchanter he had committed) would destroy the instruments of his office; and so burnt *Clanileno* as the chiefe of them; and that which did most disquiet him, rousing vp and downe; and so with his burnt ashes, and the trophy of the scrowle, *Don Quixotes* valour is eternalized.

*Don Quixote* afresh gaue fresh thanks to the Duchesse: and when hee had supd, he retyred to his Chamber alone, without permitting any body to serue him, he was so afraid to meet with

occasions that might induce him to forget the honest *Decorum* due to his Lady *Dulcinea*, *Amadis* his goodnes being alwayes in his imagination, the flower and Looking-glasse of Knights Errant.

The doore he shut after him, and vndressed himselfe by the light of two Waxe Candles, as he pulled off his stockings (Oh ill lucke vnworthy such a personage) there broke from him, not sighs or any such thing that might discredit his cleanly nenesse, but some foure and twenty stiches and a halfe, that made his stocking looke like a Lettice-window: the good Knight was extremely afflicted, and would haue giuen for a dram of greene silke, an ounce of siluer: greene silke, I say, for his stockings were greene: and here *Benengeli* exclaimed, saying: Oh Pouertie, pouertie, I know not what moou'd thrt famous *Cordovan* Poet, to call thee holy thankelesse gift. For I that am a Moore, know very well, by the communication I haue had with Christians, that holinesse consists in Charitie, Humilitie, Faith, Obedience and pouertie: but yet a man had need haue a speciall grace from God, that can be contented, being poore, except it be with such a kinde of pouertie, as one of the great Saints speakes of: Esteeme of all things as if you had them not, and this is called poorenesse of Spirit. But thou, second pouertie, (of that kinde that I meane) why dost thou mixe thy selfe with Gentlemen, and those that be well borne? Why dost thou make them cobbler their shooes; and that the Buttons of their Ierkins, be some Silke, others Hayre, others Glasse? Why must their Ruffes for the most part be vnset Lettice-wayses, and not set with the sticke? (and by this you may perceiue how ancient the vse of Starch is, and of setting Ruffes. He proceeds: Vnhappy he, that being well borne, puts his credit to shifts, as by ill faring, with his doore locked to him, making his Tooth-picket an Hypocrite, with which he comes to the street doore picking his teeth, though he haue eate nothing that should require such cleanelinesse. Vnhappy he, I say, whose credit is skarred, and thinkes that a patch vpon his shoo is spied a League off, or the thorow sweating of his Hat, or the thred-barennesse of his Cloke, or the hunger of his Maw. All this was renewed in *Don Quixote* by

by the breach of his Stocking: but his comfort was, that *Sancho* had left him a payre of Bootes, which he thought to put on the next day. Finally, to bed hee went heauy and pensatiue, as well for want of *Sancho's* company, as for the irreparable misfortune of his Stocking, whose stiches he would haue taken vp, though it had beene with silke of another colour, which is one of the greatest signes of misery, that may befall a Gentleman in the Progresse of his Prolixe necessitie. He put out the lights, twas hot, and he could not sleepe; so he rose from his bed, and opened a little the lidde of an Iron window that looked toward a faire garden; and opening it, hee perceiued and heard people stirring and talking in the Garden; they below raised their voices; insomuch, that these speeches might be heard:

Be not so earnest with me, O *Emerencia*, to haue mee sing: for thou knowest that euer since this stranger hath beene in the Castle, and that mine eyes beheld him, I cannot sing, but weep: besides, my Ladies sleepe is rather short, then sound; and I would not that she should know we were heere, for al the goods in the world: and though she should sleepe, and not wake, my singing yet were in vaine, if this new *Aeneas* sleepe, and wake not to giue eare to it, this, that is come into my Kingdome to leaue me scorned and forsaken.

Thinke not of that, friend *Alisidora* (said they) for doubtlesse the Duchesse and euery body else in the house is asleepe, except the Master of thy heart, and thy soules alarum; for now I heard him open his window, and he is certainly awake: sing poore griued wretch, in a low and sweet tune, to the sound of thy Harpe, and if the Duchesse should perceiue it: our excuse shall be, that we are heere by reason tis so late within doores.

Tis not for our being here, O *Emerencia*, quoth *Alisidora*, but that I am not willing my Song should discouer my heart; and that I should bee held by those that haue no notice of the powerfull force of loue, for a longing and light huswife: but come what will on it, better shame in the face, then a spot in the heart: and with this shee heard a Harpe most sweetly playd on. Which when *Don Quixote* heard, it amazed him: and in the instant an infinite company of Aduentures came into his minde, of

\* He describes the right custom of his hungry country men in generall.

of Windowes, Grates, Gardens, Musick, Courting, and fopperies, that he had read in his sottish bookes of Knighthood; and straight he imagined that some Damozell of the Duchesses was enamored on him, and that her honesty enforced her to conceale her affection, he was afraid lest he should yeeld, but firmly purposed not to be vanquished; so recommending himselfe, heart and soule, to his Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, he determined to hearken to the Musick: and that they might know hee was there, he fained a sneeze which not a little pleased the Damozels, that desired nothing else: so *Alisidora* running on, and tuning her Harpe, began this Song:

*Thou that in thy bed dost lye,  
In midst of Holland sheetes;  
Sleeping with thy legges Out-stretche,  
All night long untill the morne,*

*Oh thou Knight the valiantest,  
That all Mancha hath produc't;  
More honest, and more blest withall,  
Then the first Arabia gold,*

*Heare a Damzell sorrowfull,  
Tall of growth; but ill sh' hath thriv'd:  
That, with light of thy two sunnes,  
Feeles her soule enflam'd and scorcht.*

*Thou thy Aduentures followest,  
Others mis-aduentures find'st,  
Thou giv'st wounds; and yet deeny'st,  
To giue healing remedy.*

*Tell me, O thou valiant youth:  
(God increase thy maladies)*

will

*were thou bred in Africa,  
Or in Iaca Mountainous?*

*Serpents nourish thee with milke,  
Or perhaps thy Nurses were  
Th' uncouth thicknesse of the woods,  
Or the Mountaines horrible?*

*Well may Dulcinea, she  
That same damzell plump and sound,  
Bragge that she hath conquer'd a  
Tyger and a saluage Beast.*

*For which she shall famous be,  
From Henares to Xarama,  
Tagus, Manzanares, and  
Pisuerga, and Arlanza too.*

*Oh that I might change with her,  
I would giue my Coat to boote;  
And the gaudy'st that I haue,  
All bedawb'd with golden frindge.*

*Oh that I were in thy armes,  
If not so, but neere thy bed,  
That I might but scratch thy head  
And the Dand-rosse rid from thee.*

*Much I aske, but not deserue  
Fauours so remarkable;  
Let me then but touch thy foote  
Fit for my humilitie.*

V

Oh

Oh what night-caps I would giue,  
And what siluer socks to thee,  
What Damask breeches eke,  
And what cloakes of Holland too?

Likewise of the finest Pearles  
Each as bigge as any Gall,  
Which, if that there were but one,  
Might be call'd, The one alone.

Do not from thy Tarpey view  
This same fire that doth me scorch  
Manchegan Nero of the world,  
Nor kindle't with thy cruelty.

Young I am, a tender chickie,  
Not yet my age is past fiftene,  
Fourteene am I, three moneths more  
I sweare to thee in Conscience.

I doe not limpe, I am not lame,  
Nothing about me maim'd;  
And my Lookes like Lillies are  
That doe dragge vpon the ground.

And although my mouth be wide,  
Yet my nose is something flat,  
And my teeth are Topaces:  
Beauty lifts me to the clouds.

My voice you see, if that you harke,  
To the sweetest equall is,

And

And my disposition too,  
Lesse then reasonable is.

These and other graces more,  
Of thy Quier are the spoiles,  
Of this house I Dam'zell am,  
And Altisidora call'd.

Here the sore wounded *Altisidora* ended her song, and the fright of the required *Don Quixote* began, who fetching a deepe sigh, said within himselfe, That I must be so vnhappy an Errant, that no Damozell that sees me, but is enamoured on mee? that, *Dulcinea del Toboso* should be so vnfortunate, that they will not let her alone enioy my incomparable firmenesse? Queens, What meane you toward her? Empreſſes, why do you persecute her? Damozels of fourteene or fiftene yeeres, why doe you baite her? Leauē, leauē the poore creature, let her triumph, ioy, and reioyce, with the lot that Loue gaue her, in yeelding her my heart, and deliuering her my soule. Look, ye enamoured troop, for *Dulcinea* onely am I of paste and sugar-pellers, and for all else of Flint; for her I am hony, for you bitter Aloes: *Dulcinea* onely is to me, faire, discret, honest, gallant, well-born; and others, foule, foolish, light, and worse-borne. Nature threw mee into the world to bee onely hers, and no-bodies else: let *Altisidora* weepe or sing, let the Lady despairē for whom I was banged in the Castle of the Enchanted Moore; for sod or roasted, I am *Dulcinea's*, cleane, well-nurtured and honest, in spite of all the powerfull witch-crafts of the earth: and with this he clapt to the window sodainely, and all angry and despiteous, as if some disgrace had befallne him, hee got him to bed: where for the present we will leauē him, for the Grand *Sancho Panſa* calls vpon vs, who meanes to begin his famous Gouernment.

\* His aduēture in the first part with the Carrier & *Moytornes* in the Vēte.

## CHAP. XLV.

*How the Grand Sancho Panfa tooke possession of his Iland, and the manner of his beginning to gouerne.*

**O** Perpetuall discoverer of the Antipodes, Torch to the world, Eye of Heauen, sweet stirrer of wine-cooling vessels, one while *Titan*, another *Phœbus*, sometimes an Archer, other-whiles a Physician, Father of Poësie, Inuenter of Musicke, thou that alwaies risest, and (though it seemes so) yet neuer settest. To thee I speake, O Sunne, by which man begets man: to thee I speake, helpe me, and lighten my obscure wit, that I may punctually runne thorow the narration of the Grand *Sancho Panfa's* Gouvernement; for without thee I am dull, unmolded, and confused. I proceed then thus:

*Sancho* with all his troope came to a Towne, which had in it about a thousand Inhabitants, which was one of the best the Duke had, they told him the Iland was called *Barataria*, cyther because the town was called *Baratario*, or else because he had obtained his Gouvernement so cheap. When he came to the Town-gates (for it was walled) the Officers came out to welcome him, the bells rung, and all the Inhabitants made shew of a generall gladnesse, and they carried him in great pompe to the high Church, to giue God thanks: and straight after some ridiculous ceremonies, they deliuered him the keyes, and admitted him for perpetuall Gouvernour of the Iland *Barataria*. His apparel, his beard, his fatnesse, and the shortnesse of this new Gouvernour, made all the people admire, that knew not the ligge of the matter, and those also that knew it, which were many.

Finally, when he came out of the Church, they carried him to the Iudgement seat, and seated him in it, and the Dukes Steward told him, It is an olde custome, Sir Gouvernour, in this Iland, that he that comes to take possession of this famous Iland, must answer to a question that shall be asked him, that must be somewhat hard and intricate, by whose answer the Towne ghesleth and taketh the pulse of their new Gouvernours capacity, and accordingly,

cordingly, is either glad, or sorry at his comming.

Whilst the Steward said this to *Sancho*, he was looking vpon certaine great Letters that were written vpon the wall ouer-against his seat, and because he himselfe could not reade, hee asked what painting that was in the wall? It was answered him: Sir, the day is set downe there in which your Honor rocke possession of this Iland, and the Epiraph saies thus, *This day, such a day of the Month and Yeere, Signior Don Sancho Panfa tooke possession of this Iland, long may hee enioy it.* And whom call they *Don Sancho Panfa*, said *Sancho*? Your Honor (quoth the Steward:) for no other *Panfa* hath come into this Iland, but he that is seated in that seat. Well, marke you, Brother, quoth *Sancho*, there belongs no *Don* to mee, neyther euer was there any in all my Linage, I am plaine *Sancho*, my Father was called *Sancho*, my Grandfather and all were *Panfa's*, without any additions of *Dons* or *Donnas*, and I beleue this Iland is as full of *Dons*, as stones: but 'tis enough, God knowes my meaning, and perhaps, if my Gouvernement last but foure daies to an end, Ile weed out these *Dons*, that with their multiplicity doe weary and trouble like *Mosquitos*. On with your question, Master Steward, Ile answer you as well as I can, let the towne be sorry or not sorry.

At this instant two men came into the iudgement place; the one clad like a husbandman, and the other like a Taylor, hauing sheeres in his hand; the Taylor sayd, Sir Gouvernour, I and this Husbandman are come before you for this cause: This honest man came yesterday to my shop, and I, sauing your reuerence, am a Taylor, and a free-man, God be thanked, and shewing mee a piece of cloth, asked mee; Sir, will there bee enough heere to make me a Capouche? I measuring the cloth, answered him, Yes: hee thought as I did, and I thought true, that I would steale some of his cloth, being maliciously bent, and out of the ill opinion he had of Taylors: and hee replied againe, that I should tell if there were enough to make two: I smelt his drift, and told him, I; and my Gallant in his first knauish intention, went adding more Capouches, and I answered with more yes-ses, till we came to five, and euen now hee came for them, I giue them him, but he will not pay me for the making,

making, rather he demands that I pay him, or returne him his cloth. Is it true this (quoth *Sancho*)? Yes, said the fellow; but pray, Sir, let him shew his five Capouches that hee hath made me. With a very good will, (quoth the Taylor:) and incontinently taking his hand from vnder his cloake, hee shewed five Capouches in it, vpon each finger one, and said; Behold heere the five Capouches that this man would haue me make, and in my soule and conscience I haue not a jot of cloth left, as any workeman shall iudge.

All the by-standers laughed at the number of the Capouches, and the strange contention. *Sancho*, after a little consideration, said; Me thinkes, in this suit there need no delayes, but a quicke and plaine iudgement; My sentence therefore is, that the Taylor lose his labour, and the Husbandman his cloth, and that the Capouches be carried to the poore in the prison, without any more adoe.

If the sentence that passed of the Grazier bredde admiration in the by-standers, this moou'd them to laughter; but what the Gouvernour commanded, was fulfilled: before whom, two ancient men were now presented; the one had a hollow Cane, in stead of a staffe, the other had none: hee without the staffe, said, Sir, I lent this honest man long since, tenne Crownes in good Gold, to doe him a kindnesse: I let him alone a good while, without asking for them, because I would not put him to more trouble to repay me, then hee had to borrow them of mee; but because I saw him carelesse of the payment, I haue asked him more then once or twice for my money, which hee not onely doth not returne me, but denies, and sayes, hee neuer received the tenne Crownes I lent him, or that if I did lend them him, he hath payd me: I haue no witnesses, neyther of the lending, or of the payment: I pray, Sir, will you take his Oath? and if he will sweare that hee hath payd mee, I giue him an acquittance from henceforth, and before God. What say you to this, honest olde man with the staffe (quoth *Sancho*?) Sir, I confesse that hee lent them mee, and I hold downe your rodde, and since he will haue mee sweare, I will, that I haue payd him really and truly. The Gouvernour held out his rod, and in the meane time, he with

\* The custome in Spaine being that thee who is to be iudged, makes a crosse ouer the rod of iustice.

the staffe, gaue it to the other old man to hold, whilest hee was to sweare, as if it had hindred him: so with his hand he made a crosse ouer the rod of iustice, saying, I was true that he had lent him the ten crownes that he demanded; but that hee had truly restored them to him againe, and that his forgetting of it, made him continually demand them. Which when the Grand Gouvernour saw, hee asked the Creditor what hee could say against his Aduersary? He said, that surely his debter said true, for hee held him to be an honest man, and a good Christian, and that it might be he had forgotten, how or when he payd him, and that from henceforward hee would neuer demand him ought. The debtor tooke his staffe againe, and making an obeyfance, was going out of the iudgement place: Which when *Sancho* saw, and that he was going without any more adoe, and seeing likewise the others patience, hee nodded with his head on his brest, and clapt the Index of his right hand, vpon his nose & eye-browes, and a pretty while was as it were considering, and by and by lifted vp his head, and commanded that the olde man with the staffe should be brought to him: and *Sancho* seeing him, said, Honest man, giue me that staffe; for I haue vse for it. With a very good will, quoth the olde man; heere tis, Sir, and gaue it him. *Sancho* tooke it, and giuing it to the other olde man, sayd, Goe on Gods name, now you are payd. I Sir, said the old man? why, can this Cane be worth ten crownes? Yes, said the Gouvernour, or else I am the veriest block-head in the world: and now you shall see whether I haue a braine or no to gouerne a vvhole kingdome: so hee commanded that before them all the Cane should be broken, which was done, and in the midst of it, they found the ten crownes.

All of them admired at this, and held their Gouvernour for a second *Salomon*. They asked him, how hee gathered that the ten crownes was in the Cane? He answered, That because hee saw the old man that was to sweare, giue his Aduersary the staffe whilest he tooke his oath, and that hee swore he had given him the money truly and really; and that when he had ended his oath, he demanded his staffe of him againe, it came into his imagination, that within it the money was hidden: whereby it may



be collected, that although many Governours are starke Asses, yet sometimes it pleaseth God to direct them in their Iudgements; for besides, hee had heard the Vicar of his parish tell of such an accident, as this, and that he had a speciall memory, for if it were not for forgetting all he desired to remember, there were not such a memory in the whole Iland.

At last one of the old men ashamed, and the other payd his money, they departed, and those that were present, were astonisht; and he that wrote downe *Sancho's* words, deeds, and behauour, could not resolute, whether he should set him downe, A foole or a wise-man.

As soone as this sute was ended, there came a woman into the place of iudgement, laying hold strongly on a man clad to see to, like a rich Grazier, who came crying aloud, and saying, Iustice, Lord Gouvernour, Iustice, and if I haue it not on earth, I will seeke it in heaven. Sweet Gouvernour, this wicked man met me on the high way, and hath abused my body, as if it had beene an vnwashed ragge; and, vnhappy that I am, he hath gotten that, that I haue kept these three and twenty yeeres, defending it from Moores and Christians, from home-bred ones and strangers; I haue beene as hard as a Corke-tree, and kept my selfe as entire as the Salamander in the fire, or as the wooll amongst the Briars, and this man must come now with a vvasht hand and handle mee. This is to be tried yet (quoth *Sancho*) whether this gallants hands be washt or no; and turning to the fellow, he said, What answer you to yonder womans complaint? who all in a fright answered: Sir (quoth he) I am a poor Grazier, and deale in swine, and this morning I went (with pardon be it spoken) from this towne to sell soure hogges, and the tallage and other fees cost me little lesse then they were worth: as I went homeward, by the way I met with this good Matron, & the Deuill the Author of all mischiefe, yoked vs together: I gaue her sufficient pay, but she not satisfied, layd hold on me, and would not let me goe till shee had brought mee hither: she sayes that I forced her, and I sweare she lies, and this is true euery jot of it. Then the Gouvernour asked him, if he had any money about him? who answered him, Yes; that he had in a lethern purse in his bosome,

some, some twenty Crownes in siluer. He commanded him to take it out, & to deliuer it iust as it was to the plaintife; which he did trembling: the woman receiued it, and making a thousand Moorish ducks to the company, & praying to God for the Governours life and health, that was so charitable to poore Orphans & Maidens, she went out from the place of Iudgement, laying fast hold with both her hands on the purse, though first she looked whether twere siluer within or no. She was scarce gone, when *Sancho* said to the Grazier, that had teares standing in his eyes, & his heart going after his purse; Honest fellow, run after yonder woman, and take her purse from her whether she will or no, and bring it me hither. He spoke not to a foole or a deafe man, for straight he parted like lightning, and went to perform what was commanded him. All that were present were in suspence, & expectation of the end of that sute, and a little after, both man and woman returned together, more fastned and clung together then formerly, she with her coat vp, and her purse in her lappe, and he struing to get it from her, which was not possible, she did so resist, crying out and saying, Iustice of God & the world: looke you, Sir Gouvernour, marke the little shame or feare of this desperate man, that in the midst of a congregation, and in the midst of a street, would take away my purse that you commanded him to giue me.

And hath he got it, said the Gouvernour? Got it (said she) I had rather lose my life then the purse. I were a pretty childe yfaith then; you must set other manner of Coltes vpon mee then this poore nasty sneake-vp: Pincers, hammers, beetles, scraping tooles, shall not get it out of my clawes, out of my Lyons pawes; they shall rather get one halfe of my soule out of my flesh. Shee sayes right (quoth the fellow) I yeeld to her, I haue no more power, I confesse my force is not sufficient to take it away.

Then said the Gouvernour to the woman; You, honestly, Virago, giue me that purse hither: which shee did: and the Gouvernour restored it againe to the man, & said to the forcible woman, but not forced, Do you heare, sister? if you had shewed but halfe your valor & breath to defend your body, that you did for your purse, *Hercules* his force could not haue forced you: get you gone with

with a Pox; come not into this Iland, nor in fixe Leagues rotind about it, on paine of two hundreth lashes: get you gone straight (I say) make-bate, shamelesse coozener: the woman was afrigh-  
ted, and away she went like a sheepe-biter, and melancholy, and the Gouvernour said to the man, Honest fellow, get you home on Gods name with your money, and henceforward if you meane not to lose it, pray haue no minde to yoake with any body. The man as clownishly as he could, thanked him, and went his way: the by-standers admired afresh at the iudgement, and sentences of their new Gouvernour. All which noted by his Chroniclist, was straight written to the Duke, that with much desire expected it. And leaue we honest *Sancho* here: for his Master hastens vs now, that was all in a hurly-burly with *Altisidora's* Musick.

## CHAP. XLVI.

*Of the fearefull Low-Bell-Cally horror, that Don Quixote receiued in Proceſſe of his Loue, by the enamoured Altisidora.*

**W**EE left the Grand *Don Quixote* enveloped in the imaginations, which the Musicke of the enamoured Damozell *Altisidora* had caused in him: to bed hee went with them, and as if they had beene Fleas; they gaue him no rest or quiet, and to these were added those of his torne Stockings: but as time is swift, and no stumbling blocke will stay him, he went on horse-backe on the houres, and the morning came on speedily. Which when *Don Quixote* saw, hee left his soft bed, and nothing lazie, put on his Chamoized apparell and his Bootes, to hide the hole of his Stockings; he cast his Scarlet Mantle vpon him, and put on his head his hunters Cap of green Velvet, laced with silver Lace, his Belt he hung at his shoulder, with his trusty cutting Blade, hee layd hold on a Rosary which he vsed still to carry with him; and with goodly representation and gate he went towards an out-roome, where the Duke and Duchesse were ready drest, and as it were expecting him: and as

he was to passe thorow a Gallery, *Altisidora* and the other Damozell her friend, were greedily expecting him: And as soone as *Altisidora* saw him, shee fained a swoounding; and her friend got her into her lappe, and in all haste went to vn-lace her.

*Don Quixote* that saw it, comming neere them, said, Now I know from whence these fits proceed.

I know not from whence (said her friend) for *Altisidora* is the healthiest Damozell in all this house, and I neuer perceined so much as a sigh from her, since I haue knowne her: a mischiefe on all Knights Errant in the world, if all be so vngratefull: pray Signior *Don Quixote*, get you gone; for as long as you are here, this poore Wench will not come to her selfe.

To which said *Don Quixote*, Get me, Mistis, a Lute into my Chamber soone at night, and Ile comfort this afflicted Damozell as well as I can: for in amorous beginnings plaine dealing is the most approoued remedy; so he went away, because they that passed by, should not note or obserue him: he was no sooner gone, when the disinayed *Altisidora* comming to her selfe, said to her cōpanion, By all meanes let him haue the Lute: for vndoubtedly *Don Quixote* will giue vs Musicke, and being his, it cannot bee bad.

Straight they went to let the Duchesse know what passed, and of the Lute that *Don Quixote* required: and she iocund aboue measure, plotted with the Duke and her Damozels, to play a trick with him that should be more pleasant then hurtful; and so with much longing they expected till it should be night, which came on speedily as the day had done, when the Dukes passed in fauourv discourse with *Don Quixote*: and that day the Duchesse indeed dispatcht a Page of hers, that in the wood acted the enchanted *Dulcinea's* part, to *Teresa Panza*, with her Husband *Sancho's* Letter, and with the bundle of stufte that he had left to be sent her, charging him to bring her a true Relation of all that he passed with her.

This done, and it growing towards eleuen of the clocke at night, *Don Quixote* found a Vyoll in his Chamber: hee tuned it, opened the window, and heard people walke in the Garden, and

and hauing runne ouer the frets of the Violl, and ordering it as well as he could, he spit and cleared his brest, and straight vvith a voyce somewhat hoarcefull, though tuneable, he sung the ensuing Romant, which the same day he had composed.

\* These verses & the former of *Alisidora*, are made to bee scuruy on purpose by the Author, fitting the occasions and the subiects, so he obserues neither verse nor rime.

*The powerfull force of Loue  
Oft doth unhinde the soule,  
Taking for his Instrument  
Euer carelesse Idlenesse.*

*To vse to sow and worke,  
And to be euer occupied,  
Is the onely Antidote  
Gainst the poyson of Lones griefes.*

*Damzels that liue retir'd,  
With desire of marriage,  
Honesty their portion is,  
And the Trumpet of their praise.*

*They that Knights Errant be,  
They that in Court doe line  
Court the looser sort of maides,  
And the honest make their wines.*

*Some Lones are of the East,  
Lones that are held with Oastesses,  
That straight set in the west  
End when the parting is.*

*The Loue that new come is,  
Comes to day, to morrow parts,*

NEUER

*Neuer leaues the Images,  
In the soules imprinted well.*

*Picture vpon picture drawne,  
Shewes not well, nay leaues no draught;  
where a former beauty is,  
Second needs must lose the trick.*

*Painted, Dulcinea, I,  
Del Toboso, so well haue  
In smooth Tablets of my soule,  
That ther's nought can blot her out.*

*Constancie in Lovers is  
The part most to be esteem'd;  
For which lone doth miracles,  
And doth raise vs vp aloft.*

Here *Don Quixote* ended his Song, which was hearkened to by the Duke, Duchesse, *Alisidora*, and almost all the folke of the Castle; when suddenly from the toppe of an open Turret, there fell heauily downe vpon *Don Quixotes* window, by the letting downe of a Cord, a great sacke of Cats with little Low-bels tyed at their tayles, the noise of which was so great, and the mewling of the Cats, that although the Dukes were the inueters of the Iest, yet they themselues were euen affrighted, & *Don Quixote* was timorous and amazed: and such was his ill lucke, that two or three of the Cats got in at the window of his Cabbin, and leaping vp and downe on euery side, it seem'd to him that there were a Region of Diuels in his Chamber: they put out the Candles that were burning there, and now they sought how to get out: the rising and falling of the cord, at which the Low-bels were hanged, ceased not; and the most of the people in the Castle, that knew not the certaintie of the businesse, were astonish'd.

Don

*Don Quixote* got him on his legges, and laying hold on his sword, began to thrust and slash at the window, crying out aloud: Auant, ye wicked Enchanters, auant, yee haggish scum; for I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, against whom your wicked plots cannot preuaile, or haue any power: and turning to the Cats that were in his Chamber, hee stricke many blowes at them; they got to the Iron window, and there got out: but one of them that saw himsele so baited with *Don Quixotes* slashes, leapt vpon his face, and with his nayles and teeth, layd hold on his nose with the pawe. *Don Quixote* roared out as lowd as hee could. Which when the Duke and Duchesse heard, and considering what it might bee, they ranne yp in all halte to his Chamber, and opening it with a Master Key, they found the poore Knight struing with all his might, to vnroote the Cat from his face: they called for lights, and saw the vnequal Combate: The Duke came to part the fray, and *Don Quixote* cryed aloud, Let him alone, leaue mee hand to hand with this Diuell, this Witch, this Enchanter: for Ile make him know the difference betwixt me and him; and who *Don Quixote de la Mancha* is: but the Cat carelesse of these threats, purred and held fast.

But at length the Duke vnloosed him, and flung him out of the window. *Don Quixotes* face was sifted ouer, and his nose was not very sound; yet hee was very angry, that they would not let him finish the battell, that was so long drawne out betwixt him, and that cursed Enchanter. They made some oyle of Aparice to be brought, and *Altisidora* her selfe with her faire hands bound vp the wounds; and laying to the cloathes, she told him in his eare, All these mis-haps befall thee, flinty Knight, for the sinne of thy hard-hearted obstinacy: and God grant that *Sancho* thy Squire may forget to whip himsele, that thy beloued *Dulcinea* may still be enchanted, neither maist thou enioy her, or come to her bed, at least whilst I liue, that adore thee.

To all this *Don Quixote* answered not a word; but fetcht a deepe sigh, and straight layd him downe on his bed. thanking the Dukes for their courtesie; not for that he was afraid of that

Cat.

Cattish-Low-Belly Enchanting crue: but that hee was perswaded of their goodwils to come to retire him.

The Dukes left him to his rest, and went away sorrowfull for the ill successe of the iest; for they thought that Aduenture would not haue lighted so heauily on *Don Quixote*, which cost him fivedayes retirement and keeping his bed, where another Aduenture befell him more pleasing then the former, which the Historian will not recount yet, because of repaying to *Sancho Panfa*, that was very carefull and conceited in his Government.

## CHAP. XLVII.

*How Sancho demeaned himselfe in his Government.*

**T**He Story tels vs, that *Sancho* from the Iudgement Seat was carried to a sumptuous Palace, where, in a great and spacious Hall was spred a Royall and plentifull Table: the winde-Musick played, and foure Pages came into minister water to him, which he vsed with much state: the winde-Instruments ceased, and *Sancho* sate him downe at the vpper end of the Table, because there was no other seate, nor no other Napkin layd but that.

At his elbow there stood a certaine Personage, that after shewed to be a Physician, with a Whale-bone rod in his hand: then they tooke off a rich white Towell, which couered many sorts of fruits, and a great varietie of seuerall dishes of meates: One that serued to be a kinde of Student, said grace; and a Page put a laced Bib vnder *Sancho's* chinne: and another that played the Caruers part, set a dish of fruit before him: but he had not ner eaten a bit, when he with the rod touching the dish, it was very suddenly taken from before him: but the Caruer set another dish of meate before him. *Sancho* would haue tasted of it, but before he could touch it, he with the rodde was at it, and the Page set it away with as much celeritie as the fruit: which

1698

when *Sancho* saw, he began to be in suspence, and beholding all that were by, asked if that meat were to be eaten like a your child.  
 \* Onely to be toucht, but not swallowed.

To which, he with the Rod made answer, It must bee eaten, Sir Gouverneur (quoth he) according to the vse & custome of Gouvernours in other Ilands. I, Sir, am a Physician, and am stipended in this Iland to bee so to the Gouvernours of it: and I am much more carefull of their health, then of mine own; studying night & day, and weighing the complexion of the Gouverneur, that I may hit the better vpon the curing him, whensoever hee falls sicke: and the principall thing I doe, is, to be present vvith him at meates, and to let him eat what I thinke fit for him, and to take away, what I imagine may doe him hurt, or bee naught for his stomake: and therefore I now commanded the dish of Fruit to be taken away, because it is too moyst; and the other dish, because it was too hote, and had much spice, that prouoked thirst; and he that drinckes much, killes and consumes his *humidum radicale*, wherein life consists. So that (quoth *Sancho*) yon dish of Partridges there roasted, and in my opinion well seasoned, will doe me no hurt at all.

To which (said the Physician) You shall not eat of them, Sir, as long as I liue.

Why so (quoth *Sancho*?) the Physician answered, Because *Hypocrates* our Master, North-starre and light of Physick, sayes in an Aphorisme of his: *Omnis saturatio mala, Perdicis autem pessima*: the meaning is: All surfet is ill, but that of a Partridge is worst of all.

If it be so (quoth *Sancho*) pray see, Master Doctor, which of all these dishes will be most holesome for me, and doe mee least hurt, and let me eat of that, without banging of it with your Rod: for in good sadnesse, I tell you plaine, I am ready to dye with hunger; and to deny me my victuals, in spight of Master Doctor, let him say what he will, is rather to take away my life, then to increase it.

You say true, Sir Gouverneur (quoth the Physician) and therefore my opinion is, that you touch not those boyld Conies, nor that Veale, for it is watrish meate: if it were roasted or powdered?

dred? but twere much about one. Then (quoth *Sancho*) that great dish that stands fuming there before me, me thinks 'tis an *Olla Podrida*, and by reason of the diuerities of things it hath in it, I cannot but meet with something that will doe mee good. A pet of all kinde of fish.  
 Absit, quoth the Physician, farre be such an ill thought from vs, quoth the Physician: there is nothing in the world that vvorse nourisheth then an *Olla Podrida*, fit onely for your Prebends and Rectors of Colledges, or for your Country marriages: Let your Gouvernours Tables be without them, and let them be furnished with all prime dainties and quaintnesse: And the reason is, because alwaies, and wheresoever, and by whomsoever, your simple medicines are in more request then your compounds; because in simples there can be no error, in compounds there are many, altring the quantity of things of which they are composed, but that that I know is fit for the Gouverneur to eat at present, to preserue his health, and corroborate it, is, some hundred of little hollow Wafers, and some pretty slice or two of Quince Mermelad, that may settle his stomacke, and help his digestion.  
 When *Sancho* heard this, hee leaned himselfe to the backe of his chaire, and by fits now and then looked at the Physician, and with a graue voyce, asked him his name, and where he had studied.

To which he answered, My name, Sir Gouverneur, is Doctor *Pedro Rezio de Agnero*, I was borne in a Towne called *Tirte a suera*, which is betweene *Caraguel* and *Almodonar del Campo*, vpon the right hand, and I tooke my degree of Doctor in the Vniuersity of *Osuna*. To which (quoth *Sancho*) all enflamed with choller; Well, Master Doctor *Pedro Rezio* of *Agnero*, borne at *Tirte a suera*, a towne on the right hand as we goe from *Caraguel* to *Almodonar del Campo*, Graduated in *Osuna*, get you strait out of my sight, or I vow by the Sunne, Ile get me a cudgell, and with bangs begin with you, and so forward, till I leaue not a Physician in all the Iland, at least such as I know to bee ignorant; for your wise, prudent, & discreet Physicians, I will hug them, and honor them as Diuine persons. I say againe, *Pedro Rezio*, get you gone, or else Ile take the chaire I sit vpon, and dash it vpon your head, and let me be called in question for it,

when I giue vp my Office ; for I can discharge my selfe, by saying that I did God seruice to kill such a Physician, the common wealhs hang-man: and let me eat, or else take your Gouvernment againe ; for an Office that will not afford a man his victuals, is not worth two Beanes.

The Doctor was in an vprere to see the Gouvernor so cholerike, & would haue gone out of the Hall, but that at that instant a postling-horne sounded in the street, and the Caruer peeping out of the window, turned backe, saying ; A Post is come from my Lord the Duke, that brings some important dispatch. The Post came straight in, sweating and amazed, and drawing a Packet out of his bosome, he deliuered it to the Gouvernor. *Sancho* gaue it to the Steward, and bade him read the superscription, which was this, *To Don Sancho Panfa, Gouvernour of the Iland Barataria*, to his owne hands, or to his Secretary. Which when *Sancho* heard, he said, Who is here my Secretary ? and one that was by, answered, I, Sir : for I can write and reade, for I am a Biscayner. With that addition, quoth *Sancho*, you may vvell be Secretary to the Emperour himselfe; open your Packet, and let's heere the Contents.

The new-borne Secretary did so, & hauing viewed the Contents, said, that it was a businelle to be imparted in priuate. *Sancho* commanded those in the Presence to auoid, and onely the Steward and the Caruer to remaine, and the rest, with the Physician went out, and presently the Secretary read the Letter following,

I am giuen to vnderstand, Signior *Don Sancho Panfa*, that certaine enemies of mine, and of that Iland, meane one of these nights to giue it a furious assault : twere fit you caused watch & ward to be kept, that they take you not vnprovided : I know also by faithfull spies, that foure persons haue entred there the Iland disguised to kill you ; for they stand much in awe of your abilities : haue a care to see who comes to speake to you, and eat of nothing that shall be presented vnto you ; I will be carefull to send you ayd, if you be in necessity, and in the rest I hope you will proceed, as is expected from your vnderstanding. From hence, the 4. of *August*, at foure of the clocke in the morning.

Your friend, *The Duke*.

*Sancho* was astonisht, and the standers by seemed to be no otherwise; and turning to the Steward, he said, Ile tell you what is fit to be done, and that presently ; Clappe mee Doctor *Rexio* into dungeon ; for if any body kill me, it is hee, and with so vile and triuiall a death as hunger : Me thinks too, said the Caruer, you should doe well to eat nothing of all this meat vpon the Table ; for this dinner was presented by Nunnes, and it is an olde saying, The neerer the Church, the farther from God. I grant ye so (quoth *Sancho*) and therefore for the present giue me only a piece of bread, and some foure pound of grapes ; for in them there can be no poyson, and indeed I cannot liue without eating : for if we must provide our selues for these wars that threaten vs, twere fit to be well victualled ; for the guts vphold the hearr, and not the heart the guts. And you, Secretary, answer my Lord the Duke, tell him that his commands shall be fulfilled most punctually : and commend mee to the Duchesse, and say that I request her, that she forget not to send my letter by a speciall messenger, and likewise the fardell to my wife *Teresa Panfa*, and in it shee shall doe mee a particular fauour, and I will be carefull to serue her to the vttermost of my power : And by the way you may clappe in a commendation to my Master, Signior *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, that he may see I am thankesfull for his bread ; and you like a good Secretary, and an honest Biscayner, may in the rest adde what you will, or shall thinke fitting. And take away here, and yet leaue me something to eat, and let these Spies, these Murderers and Enchanters come vpon me and my Iland, Ile deale with them well enough.

And now a Page came in, saying, Heere's a Husbandman, a suiter that would speake with your Honor in a businelle of importance (as hee sayes.) Tis a strange thing of these suiters (quoth *Sancho*) Is it possible they should be so foolish as not to perceiue that these be not times for them to negotiate in ? be-like, we that gouerne, wee that are Iudges, are not men of flesh and bloud : and is it not fit that we should ease our selues, when necessity requires, except they thinke wee should be made of marble ? Verily, and in my Conscience if my Gouvernment last, (as I haue a glimmering it will not) Ile lay one of these fellows



vp for it. Well, bid this honest fellow come in for this once, but see first that hee be none of the Spies, or any of my murderers: No, Sir (quoth the Page) for he is a very dull soule to see to, eyther I know little, or he hath no more harme then a piece of good bread. There's no fearing him (saide the Steward) for wee all are heere.

Caruer (quoth *Sancho*) were it not possible, now that Doctor *Rexio* is not here, that I might eat a bit of some substantiall meat, though 'twere but a crust and an Onion? To night at Supper (quoth the Caruer) your dinner shall bee amended, and your Honor shall be satisfied. God grant it (quoth *Sancho*) and now the Husbandman came in, one of a very goodly presence, and that you might see a thousand miles off, was a good hurtlesse soule. The first thing that he said, was, Which is my Lord the Gouvernour? Who should it be (quoth the Secretary) but he that sits there in the Chayre? I humble my selfe to his Presence then (quoth the Husbandman) and kneeling on his knees, desired his hand to kisse. *Sancho* denied it, and commanded him to rise, and to say what he would haue. The Husbandman did so, and said;

I, Sir, am a Husbandman, borne in *Miguel Turra*, a towne some two leagues from *Cindarcas*. Here's another *Tirte afuera*, quoth *Sancho*: Say on brother, for let mee tell you, I know the place very well, and it is not farre from my towne. The business, Sir, is this. quoth the Husbandman; I by Gods blessing, & the full consent of the Catholike Romane Church, am married, haue two sonnes that be Students; the yongest studies to be Bachelor, and the eldest to be Master. I am a Widdower, for my wife died, or to say trulier, a wicked Physician killed her, that purged her when she was great with childe: and if it had pleased God that she had beene deliuered, and it had beene a sonne, I would haue set him to study to haue beene Doctor, that hee might not haue enuied his brothers, the Bachelor and Master. So that (quoth *Sancho*) if your wife had not beene dead, or if they had not killed her, you had nor now beene a Widdower? No, Sir, by no meanes (quoth the Husbandman.) We are much the neerer (quoth *Sancho*;) forward, brother, tis time to sleepe, haue you any more to say? I say (quoth the Husbandman) that  
my

my sonne that was to be the Bachelor, fell in loue in the same town with a Maiden, called *Clara Perlerina*, daughter to *Andrew Perlerina* a rich Farmer: & this name of *Perlerina's* comes not to them by any off-spring or discent, but that all of this race and name are *Palsigisse*, and to better the name, they were called *Perlerina's*; and indeed, the maide is as faire as an Orientall Pearle: and looking vpon her right side, she is like a flower in the field, but on her left, otherwise; for there shee vvants an eye, that flew out of her head vvith the small pockes: and though shee haue many hoies left still in her face, many say that loue her vvell, that those are not holes, but graues vvhere her Louers soules are buried.

Shee is so cleancly, that because shee vvill not bewray her face, shee weares her nose (as you would say) tucked vp, as if it fledde from her mouth, and for all that, it becomes her passing vvell; for shee hath a vvide mouth: and vvere it not that she vvanted tenne or twelue teeth and her grinders, shee might passe, and set a marke for the vvell-fauouredst to come to. For her lippes I say nothing, for they are so thinne and delicate, that if they did vse to reele lippes, they might make a skeine of hers: but because they are of a more different colour then vve see ordinarily in lippes, they are miraculous; for they are laspered vvith blue and greene, and *Berengena*-coloured, and vnder correction, Sir Gouvernour, since I paint out the parts of her that I meane to make my daughter so exactly, it is a signe I loue her, and that I doe not dislike her.

Paint vvhat you will (quoth *Sancho*) for I recreate my selfe with the painting: and if I had dined, there were no better dish offruit to me then your picture.

I humbly thanke you, Sir, for that (quoth the Husbandman;) but time will come that I may be thankesfull, if I be not now, and if I should paint out to you her gentlenesse, and the height of her body, 'twould admire you: but that cannot be, for she is crooked, her knees and her mouth meet, and for all that 'tis well seene, that if shee could stand vp right, shee would touch the rooffe with her head, and long ere this, shee would haue  
X 3  
giuen

giuen her hand to my sonne to be his spouse, but that shee cannot stretch it out, tis so knotted and crumpled vp; for all that her goodnesse and good shape appears in her long and guttured nailes.

Tis very well (quoth *Sancho*) and make account, Brother, that now you haue painted her from head to foot. What would you now? come to the matter without fetches, or lanes, or digressions, or additions. I would desire you (quoth the Husbandman) to giue me a Letter of fauour to my brother by marriage, her father; to desire him to consent that this mariage may goe forward, since our fortunes be equall and our births; for to say true, Sir Gouverneur, my sonne is possessed with the Deuill, and there's not a day passeth, but the wicked spirits torment him, and once falling in the fire, hath made his face as wrinkled as a piece of parchment, and his eyes are somewhat bleered and running, and hee is as soft conditioned as an Angell; for if it were not for buffeting of himselfe now and then, he were a very Saint.

Will you any thing else, honest friend, quoth *Sancho*? One thing more (quoth he) but that I dare not tell it; but let it out, it shall not rotte in my brest, speed how it will. I desire, Sir, that you would giue me three hundred, or sixe hundred Dukats to helpe my Bachelors portion, I meane to helpe him to furnish his house, for they will liue by themselves, without being subiect to the impertinencies of fathers in Lawes.

Will you haue any thing else (quoth *Sancho*?) and be not abashed or ashamed to tell it. No truly (quoth the Husbandman:) and he had scarce sayd this, when the Gouverneur rising vp, layd hold on the chayre that he sat on, saying; I vow to you, good-man splay-foot, vnmanly clown, if you go not strait & hide your selfe out of my presence, Ile breake your head vvith this chayre here, ye whoor-son Rascall, the Deuils painter: comest thou at this time of day to aske mee sixe hundred Ducats? and where haue I them, stinkard? and if I had them, why should I giue them thee, sottish knaue? What a poxe care I for *Miguel Turra*, or all the lineage of the *Perlerinas*? Get thee out of my sight, or I swear by my Lord the Dukes life, that Ile doe as I haue

haue said, Thou art not of *Miguel Turra*, but some crafty knaue, sent from hell to tempt me: Tell me, desperate man! 'tis not yett a day and a halfe since I came to the Government: how wouldst thou haue mee haue sixe hundred Ducats? The Caruer made signes to the Husbandman, to get him out of the Hall; who did so like a sheepe-byter, and to see to very fearefull, lest the Gouverneur should execute his choller on him: for the cunning knaue very wel knew what belonged to his part: but leaue we *Sancho* to his choller, and peace be in the Quire, and returne we to *Don Quixote*; for we left his face bound vp, and dressed for his Carrish wounds, of which hee was not sound in eight daies: in one of which this befel him, that *Cid Hamete* promiseth to recount with all the punctualitie, & truth that he vsually doth in the most triuiall matters of this History.

#### CHAP. XLVIII.

*What hapned to Don Quixote with Donna Rodriguez, the Duchesses waiting-woman; with other successes, worthy to bee written, and had in eternall remembrance.*

**T**He ill-wounded *Don Quixote* was exceeding mussy and melancholy, with his face bound vp, and scarred not by the hand of God, but by the nayles of a Cat (misfortunes annexed to Knight Errantry) sixe dayes past ere hee came abroad: in one of which, in a night, when he was awake and vvatching, thinking vpon his mis-haps, and his being persecuted by *Altisidora*, he perceiued that somebody opened his Chamber doore with a Key; and straight he imagined that the inamored Damozell came to set vpon his honestie, and to put him to the hazzard of forgoing his loyaltie due to his Mistress *Dulcinea del Toboso*. No said he, beleeuing in his imagination, & this so lowd that he might easily bee heard) no beauty in the world shall make mee leaue her that is graued and stamped in the midst of my heart, and in my innermost entrailes: bethou,

Mistress mine, either transformed into an Onion-like husband-woman, or into a Nymph of the Golden *Tagus*, weaving webs made of lilke and gold twist: be thou in *Merlins* power, or in *Montesino's* his, where ere they will haue thee: for wheresoeuer thou art, thou art mine; and wheresoeuer I am, I will be thine. His speech ended, and the doore opened both together.

Vp he stood vpon the bed, wrapped from head to foot in a quilt of yellow Sattin, a woollen cap vpon his head, his face and Mustachos bound vp: his face for his scratches; his Mustachos, because they should not dismay or fall downe: in which posture, hee lookt like the strangest apparition, that can bee imagined.

He nayled his very eyes vpon the doore: and whereas hee thought to haue scene the vanquished and pittifull *Alcisidora* enter, he saw that it was a most reuerend Matron, with a long white gathered Stole, so long that it did couer and bemantle her from head to foot: betwixt her left hand fingers she had halfe a Candle lighted, and with her right hand shee shadowed her selfe, to keepe the light from her eyes, which were hid vwith a great payre of spectacles: she came treading softly, and mouing her feet gently.

*Don Quixote* from his Watch-towre beheld her: and vwhen he saw her furniture, and noted her silence, hee thought it had beene some Hagge or Magician, which came in that shapeto doe him some shrewd turne; and hee beganne apace to blisse himselfe.

The Vision came somewhat neerer: but being in the midst of the Chamber, she lifted vp her eyes, and saw with what haste *Don Quixote* was crossing himselfe: and if he were afraid to see such a shape, she was no lesse affrighted with his: for seeing him so lanke, and yellow in the quilt, and with the bends that disfigured him, she cryed out, saying, Iesus, What's this? and with the sodaine fright, the Candle dropt out of her hand, and being in the darke, she turned her back to be gone; but for feare stumbled vpon her Coats, and had a sound fall.

*Don Quixote* timorous, began to say, I coniure thee, Apparition! Or whatso'ere thou art, to tell me who thou art, and what thou

thou wilt haue with me: If thou bee'st a soule in Purgatory, tell me, and I will doe what I am able for thee: for I am a Catholike Christian, and loue to doe good to all the world: for, for this cause I tooke vpon me the order of Knight Errant, which I professe (whose practice extends euen to doe good to the soules in Purgatorie.) The broken Matron that heard her selfe thus coniured, by her feare ghesled at *Don Quixote*, and with a low and pitifull voice she answered him, Signior *Don Quixote*, (if you be he I meane) I am no Apparition, nor Vision, nor soule of Purgatory, as you haue thought: but *Donna Rodriguez*, my Lady the Duchesses honour'd Matron, that come to you vwith a case of necessitie of those that you vsually giue redresse to.

Tell me, *Donna Rodriguez*, quoth *Don Quixote*; come you happely about some peece of brokage? For let me tell you, if you doe, ther's no good to bee done with mee for any body; thanks to the peerelesse beauty of my Mistress *Dulcinea del Toboso*. So that let me tell you, *Donna Rodriguez*, setting aside all amorous messages, you may goe light your Candle againe, and returne, and impart what you will command mee, and any thing you please, excepting I say, all kinde of inciting nicities. I Sir, messages from any body? You know not me, yfaith: I am not so stale yet, that I should fall to those trifles: for God bee praised, I haue life and flesh, and all my teeth and my grinders in my mouth, except some few, that the Catarres which are so common in this countrey of *Aragon*, haue vsurped on: but stay a little, Sir, Ile goe out and light my Candle, and Ile come in an instant, and relate my griefes to you, as to the redresser of all such like in the world: and so without staying for an answer, she left the roomes where *Don Quixote* remained stil and penatiue expecting her: but straight, a thousand imaginations came into his minde touching this new Aduenture, and he thought it would be very ill done, or worse imagined, to endanger the breach of his vowed loyaltie to his Mistress, and said to himselfe, Who knowes whether the Diuell, that is so subtrill and craftie, may deceiue me now with this Matron? which hee hath not beene able to doe with Empreesses, Queenes, Duchesses, Marquesses: and I haue heard say often by many well experienced men,

men, that he will rather make a man sinne with a foule, then a faire one: and who knowes whether this priuacie, this opportunitie and silence, may not awake my desires now sleeping? and that now in my old age I may fall, where I neuer stumbled in such like chances? 'tis better fly, then try the combate: but sure I am out of my wits, since I talke thus idly; and sure it is not possible, that a white-stoled lanke-spectacled Matron should inooue or stirre vp a lasciuious thought in the vngodliest brest in the world: Is there any Matron in the world that hath soft flesh? Is there any that is not foolish, nice and coy? Auant then, you Matronly troopes, vnprofitable for mans delight.

How well did that Lady, of whom it was obserued that she had two Matrons Statue-ways of wood, with their spectacles and Pin-pillowes at the end of her Seate of State, as if they had been at vvorke? and those Statues serued as well to authorize her roome, as if they had beene reall Matrons. And this said, he flung from the bed to haue shut the doore, and not haue let *Mistris Rodriguez* come in: but as he was going to doe it, she vvas come back with her Candle lighted of white Waxe: and when she saw *Don Quixote* neere her, wrapped in his Quilt, his Bends, his woollen Cap, and a thicke cloth about his neck, she began to feare againe: and stepping two or three steppes backward, she asked, Am I safe, Sir Knight? For I hold it not a very honest signe that you are vp from your bed. Twere fit I asked that question of you, quoth *Don Quixote*; and therefore let mee know, vvwhether I shal be free from rauishing? By vvhom, quoth she? By you (said *Don Quixote*) for neither am I of Marble, or you of Brasse; neither is it now ten a clocke at day time, but mid-night and something more, as I thinke: and wee are in a more secret and close couch, then the Caeue, in vvwhich the bold Traiterous *Aeneas* enioyed the faire and pitying *Dido*: but giue me your hand, *Mistris*, and Ile haue no other assurance, then mine owne continencie and warinesse: and in saying this, hee kissed her right hand, and she layd hold of his, which shee gaue him with the same solemnitie.

Here *Cid Hamete* makes a Parenthesis, and earnestly protesteth,

testeth, he would haue giuen the best Coat he had, to haue seene them both goe so ioyned and linked from the Chamber doore to the bed.

In fine, *Don Quixote* vvent to his bed, and *Donna Rodriguez* sat downe in a Chaire a pretty vvay from it, without taking off her spectacles, or setting downe the Candle.

*Don Quixote* crowded vp together, and couer'd himselfe all ouer, leauing nothing but his face vncouered: so both of them being quiet: the first that broke off their silence, was *Don Quixote*, saying, Now, *Mistris Rodriguez*, you may vnrip your selfe, and dis-maw all that you haue in your troubled heart, and griued entrailes, which shall be heard by my chaste eares, and relieued with my pious vvorkes.

I beleeue no lesse, said the Matron: for from your gentle and pleasing presence, there could not bee but a Christian answer expected.

Thus then it is; Signior *Don Quixote*, that though you see me set in this Chaire, and in the midst of the Kingdome of *Aragon*, in the habit of a poore and way-beaten Matron; I vvas borne in the *Asturias* and Kingdome of *Oniedo*, and of a lineage allied to the best of that Prouince: but my hard fortune, and my fathers lauishng, that grew to be a Begger before his time (God knowes how) brought me to the Court at *Madrid*, vvhere very quietly, and to auoid other inconueniencies, my friends plac't mee to serue as a Chamber-maid to a worthy Lady: and though I say it, that for white-worke, hemming and stitching, I was neuer yet put downe in all my life. My friends left me at seruice, and returned homeward, and not long after went (in likelihood) to heauen, for they were wonderfull good Catholike Christians: thus was I an Orphan, and flinted to the miserable wages, and hard allowance, that at Court is giuen to such kinde of seruants: and at that time (I not giuing any occasion thereto) a Squire of the house fell in loue with me, somewhat an elderly man, bigge-bearded, and personable, and aboueall, as good a Gentleman as the King: for hee was of the mountaines; we kept not our loues so close; but that they came to my Ladies eares: who without any more ado,

A barren Mountainous countrey in Spaine, like our Wales.

doe, with full consent of our holy Mother the Catholike Roman Church, caused vs to be married, by which Matrimony to end my good fortune, if I had any; I had a Daughter, if I had any, I say it was ended, not that I dyed of childbed, for I miscarried not: but that my Husband not long after dyed of a fright he had, and had I time now to tell you of it, 'twould admire you: and with this, she began to weepe most tenderly, and said, Pardon me, Signior *Don Quixote*, for I cannot do withall; as often as I remember my vnfortunate husband, the teares trickle downe my eyes. Lord God! and how stately he would carry my Lady behinde him, vpon a lusty blacke Mule, as black as Icat: for then they vsed no Coaches nor hand-Chaires, as now (they say they doe) and then Gentlewomen rode behind their Squires: and I cannot but tell you this Tale, that you may see the punctualnesse and good maners of my Husband.

As he was going in at Saint *Iaques* his street in *Madrid*, which was somewhat narrow, a Iudge of the Court, with two Sergeants before him, was comming out: and as soone as my honest Squire saw him, he turned his Mules reines, making shew as if he would waite vpon him: My Lady that rode behinde, asked him softly, What do'st thou, knaue? Do'st not see that I am heere? The Iudge very mannerly layd hold on his reine, and said, Keepe your way, Sir: for it were fitter for me to wait vpon my Lady, *Casilda*: for that was my Ladies name. Yet still my Husband was earnest with his Cap in his hand, and would haue waited on the Iudge: which when my Lady saw, full of wrath and anger, she pulled out a great Pin; or rather, as I belecue, a little Bodkin out of her Elloises, and thrust him into the rump; inso much, that my Husband cryed out, and wriggling his body, my Lady and he came to the ground together.

Two of her Lackayes came to raise her; and the Iudge and the Sergeants likewise: the gate of *Guadalaxara* was in an uprore, I meane the idle people vp and downe there.

My Lady was faine to walke on foot, and my Husband got him to a Barbers house, saying, that he was runne quite thorow and thorow. This mannerlinesse of my Husbands, was bruted vp and downe; inso much, that the very Boyes in the streets

mocked

mocked him: so that for this, and because too he was somewhat pore-blind, my Lady the Duchesse turned him away: for griefe of which, I verily beleue, he dyed, and I remained Widow, and succourlesse, with a childe to boote, that went on in increasing in beauty like the foame of the sea.

Finally, for as much as I had the report of an excellent Seamstress, my Lady the Duchesse that vvas newly married to my Lord the Duke, would needs bring mee with her here to this Kingdome of *Aragon* together with my Daughter; wherein Procelle of time shee grew vp, and with her all the prettinesse that could be: she sings like a Larke: she danceth in company as quick as thought, and alone, like a callaway, she writes & reads like a Schoolemaster, and casts account like a Vsurer: for her deanlines, I say nothing, the water that runnes is not cleaner: and she is now (if I forget not) about sixteene yeeres old, siue moneths, and three dayes, one or two more or lesse. In fine, a rich Farmers sonne fell in loue with my daughter, one that liueth in one of my Lord the Dukes Villages, not farre from hence: in effect I know not how: but they met, and vnder colour of marriage, he mocked my Daughter, and will not keepe his promise, and though the Duke know it: for I haue complained to him often of it, and beseeched him, to command the yong Farmer to marry my Daughter: but he hath a trades-mans cares, and will not heare mee: the reason is, because the coozening knaues father is rich, and lends him money, and lets him haue credit euery foote to goe on with his iuggling, and will by no meanes discontent or trouble him.

I beseech you, Sir, therefore, to take vpon you the redressing of this wrong, either by intreaties, or by force; since as all the world sayes, you were borne to right wrongs, and protect the needie; Consider that my Daughter is an Orphan; consider her gentlenesse, her youth, and al the good parts that I haue told you of: For in my soule & conscience, amongst all the Damozels that my Lady hath, there is none worthy to vntyer her shoo: and one of them they call *Altisidora*, which is the lustiest and gallantest, in comparison of my daughter is no body. For let me tell you, Sir, All is not gold that glisters: for this *Altisidora* is more

more bold, then beauteous; more gamesome, then retired: besides, she is not very sound: for she hath a certain breath that annoyes, and you cannot endure her to stand by you a moment; and my Ladie the Duchesse too: but Mum: they say walls haue eares.

What ayles my Ladie Duchesse: by your life, Mistris Rodriguez? quoth *Don Quixote*, By that, said shee, I cannot but answer you with all truth.

Doe you marke, Sir, quoth she, that beauty of my Ladies, that smoothnesse of her face, that is like a polisht sword, those two cheekes of Milke and Vermillion, in one of which she hath the Sunne, in the other the Moone, and that state with which shee goes, trampling and despising the ground, as if shee went dealing of health vp and downe? Know, Sir, that first shee may thanke God for it: and next, two issues that she hath in both her legs, at which all the ill humour is let out, of which Physicians say she is full.

Saint *Mary*, quoth *Don Quixote*, and is it possible that my Ladie the Duchesse hath such out-lets? I should not haue beleued it if bare-foot Fryers had told me so: but since *Donna Rodriguez* tels me, it is so: but from such issues, and such places, no ill humour, but liquid Amber is distilled. I now verily beleue, that this making of issues is a thing very necessarie for the health.

Scarce had *Don Quixote* ended this speech, when at one pluck the Chamber doore was opened; and with the sodaine fright *Donna Rodriguez* Candle fell out of her hand, and the roome was as darke as Pitch, straight the Matron felt that they laid hands vpon her throat so hard, that they gaue her no time to yawle: and one of them very quickly lifting vp her Coats, with a Slipper (in likelihood) began to giue her so many ierkes, that 'twas pitie: and though *Don Quixote* had some compassion on her, yet he stirred not from his bed, and knew not what might be the matter: quiet was he, and silent, fearing lest the whipping task & tawing might light vpon him, & his feare was not needlesse: for when the silent executioners, had left the Matron well curried (who durst not cry out) they came to *Don Quixote*, and vnwrap-

vnwrapping him from the Sheet and the Quilt, they pinched him so hard and so often, that hee could but goe to buffers to defend himselfe: and all this passed in admirable silence; the combate lasted some halfe an houre; the apparitions vanished; *Donna Rodriguez* tucked vp her Coats, and bewailing her mishap, got her out of the doore, not speaking a word to *Don Quixote*; who, heauy and all to bee pinched, sad and pensatiue, remained alone; where we will leaue him desirous to know, who was the peruerse Enchanter, that had so drest him: but that shall be told in due time. For *Sancho Panza* calls vs, and the Decorum of this Historie.

## CHAP. XLIX.

What hapned to Sancho in walking the Round in his Island.

WE left the famous Gouvernour moodie and angry with the knauish Husbandman-painter: who, instructed by the Steward, and the Steward by the Duke; all made sport with *Sancho*: but he held them all tacked, though a Foole, a Dullard, and a blocke; and said to those about him, and to Doctor *Pedro Rexio*: for as soone as hee had ended the secret of the Dukes Letter, he came into the Hall againe.

Certainely (said he) I thinke now, Iudges and Gouvernours had need bee made of Brasse, that they may haue no feeling of the importunities of suiters, that would that at all houres and all times they should giue them audience, and dispatch them, intending onely their businesse; let them haue neuer so much of their owne: and if the poore Iudge heare them not, or dispatch them not; either because he cannot, or because they come not in a fit time to haue audience; straight they back-bite and curse him, gnaw his bones, and vnbury his ancestors. Oh foolish Suter and idle, make not such haste: stay for a fit season and coniuncture to negotiate in, come not at dinner time, or bed time: for Iudges are flesh and bloud, and must satisfie nature, except it



it be I, that giue my selfe nothing to eate, thanks to Master Doctor *Pedro Rezio Tirte a fuera* here present, that would haue me die for hunger, and yet stands in it, that this death is life: such a life God grant him and all of his profession: I meane such ill Physicians; for the good deserue Lawrell and Palme.

All that knew *Sancho*, admired him, when they heard him speake so elegantly, and knew not to what they should attribute it, except it were that Offices and great charges doe eyther lessen the vnderstanding, or altogether dull it.

Finally, the Doctor *Pedro Rezio Agnero de Tirte a fuera*, promised him he should sup that night, though he exceeded all *Hippocrates* his Aphorismes.

With this the Gouvernour was well pleased, and very greedily expected the comming of the night and supper-time, and though time (as he thought) stood still, not mouing a iot from his place, yet at length it came, so longed for by him; and hee had to supper a cold mince-meat of Beefe and Onions, vvith Calues foot some-what stale, and fell to as contentedly, as if they had giuen him a God-wit of *Milan*, or a Pheasant of *Rome*, or Veale of *Sorrentum*, or Partridges of *Moron*, or Geese of *Enaxos*: and in the midst of his Supper, he turned to the Doctor and said, Looke ye, Master Doctor, hence-forward neuer care to giue me dainties, or exquisite meates to eat; for you will plucke my stomacke quite off the hindges, which is vsed onely to Goat, Beefe and Bacon, Porke and Turneps, and Onions: and if you come to mee with your Court-dishes, they make my stomacke squeamish, and many times I loath vm.

Caruer, let it be your care to prouide me a good *Olla podrida*, and the more *podrida* it is, the better, and more sauourie; and in your *Olla's* you may boile and ballast in what you will, so it be victuals, and I will be mindfull of you, and make you amends one day: and let no man play the foole with me, for eyther wee are, or wee are not. Let's bee merry and wise when the Sunne shines, he shines vpon all: He Gouverne this Iland without lookeing my due, or taking Bribes; and therefore let all the world be watchfull, and looke to their bolt, for I giue vm to vnderstand, there's rods in pisse for them; and if they put mee to it, they

they shall see wonders: I, I, couer your selues with hony, and you shall see the flies will eat you.

Truly, Sir Gouvernour, quoth the Caruer, you haue reason in all you speake; and let mee promise you in the behalfe of all the Ilanders of this Iland, that they will serue you with all diligence, loue, and good will: for the sweet and milde kinde of Gouverning that hitherto in the beginning you haue vsed, makes them neyther doe nor speake ought that may redound to your contempt.

I beleue it, quoth *Sancho*, and they were very Asses if they did or thought otherwise; and therefore let me say againe, Let there be a care had for the maintenance of my Person and Dapples, which is very important, and to the matter: And so when tis time to walke the Round, let vs goe; for my purpose is, to cleanse this Iland from all kinde of filth, from vagamunds, lazy, and masterlesse persons: for know, friends, that slothfull, and idle people in a Common-wealth, are the same that Drones in Hiuies, that eat the hony which the labouring Bees make. I purpose to cherish the husbandman, & to grant the Gentlemen their preeminencies, to reward the vertuous, & aboue all, to haue Religion in reuerence, & to honor religious persons.

What thinke ye of this, friends? Say I ought? or doe I talke idly? So well Sir, said the Steward, that I wonder to see that a man so without learning as you, (for I thinke you cannot skill of a letter) should speake such sentences and instructions, so contrary to what was expected from your wit by all that sent you, and by all vs that came with you. Euery day we see nouelties in the world, iests turn'd to earnest, and those that mocke, are mocked at.

Well, it was night, and the Gouvernour supped, with Master Doctor *Rezios* licence. They made ready to walke the Round, the Steward, the Secretary, and Caruer went with him, and the Chroniclist, that was carefull to keepe a Register of his actions, together with Constables and Notaries; so many, that they might well make a reasonable squadron. *Sancho* went in the midst of them with his rod of Iustice, which was the only chiefe sight: and when they had walkt some few streets of the town,

they heard a noyse of flashing, thither they made, and found that they were two men onely that were together by the eares; who seeing the Iustice comming, stood still, and the one of them said;

Here for God and the King, shall I be suffered to be robbed in the midst of a towne? and that the midst of the streets be made the high way?

Softly, honest friend, (quoth *Sancho*) and tell me what's the reason of this fray, for I am the Gouvernour.

The other, his contrary, said, Sir Gouvernour, Ile tell you briefly the matter. You shall vnderstand Sir, that this Gentleman euen now at a Gaming-house here ouer the way, got a thousand Ryalls, (God knowes by what trickes) and I being present, iudged many a doubtfull cast on his side, contrary to what my conscience told me; he came away a winner, and when I thought he would haue giuen mee a Piltollet at least for recompence, ac-

<sup>a</sup> *Barato* signifies originally on, which stand by vpon all occasions, to order differences, and cheape, but amongst gamesters, *dar Barato*, is when a gamester by way of courtesy giues something to a stander by; and this in Spaine is so frequent, that from the King to the beggar, all both giue and take this *Barato*.

<sup>b</sup> Some famous Cheater in Spaine.

cording to the vse and custome <sup>a</sup> of giuing to men of my fashion, to take vp quarrels; he pursed vp his mony, and got him out of the house: I came hastily after him, yet with courteous language entreated him to giue me only a matter of foure shillings, since he knew me to be a good fellow, and that I had no other kinde of trade or liuing; for my friends brought me vp to nothing, nor left me nothing; and this cunning skabbe, no more Thiefe then *Caena*, nor lesse Cheater then <sup>b</sup> *Andradilla*, would giue me but two shillings: So you may see, Sir Gouvernour, how shamelesse and voyd of Conscience he is. But yfaith if you had not come, I would haue made him vomit out his winning, & he should haue knowne how many pounds he had had in the scale.

What say you to this (quoth *Sancho*?) And the other answered, That true it was which his contrary had said, that he would giue him but two shillings, because hee had often before giuen him, and they that expect what shall be giuen them in courtesie, must be mannerly, and take any thing that is giuen them, in good part, without standing vpon tearmes with the winner, except they knew him to be a Cheater, and that his money was vnlawfully gotten, and that it might be seene that he for his part

was

was honest, and not a theefe, as the other said, there was no greater signe, then his giuing so little; for your Cheaters are alwaies large Tributaries to the lookers on that know them.

He saies true, quoth the Steward, and therefore what is your pleasure, Sir, to doe with these men?

Marry thus, quoth *Sancho*; you, Sir, that haue wonne, honest or knaue, or indifferent, giue your hackiter heere presently, a hundreth Ryalls: besides, you shall disburse thirty more for the poore of the prison. And you, sir, that haue neyther trade nor liuing, and liue odly in this Iland, take your hundreth Ryalls, and by to morrow get you out of the Iland, and I banish you for ten yeeres, on paine, that if you breake this order, you accomplish it in another life, by being hanged vpon a gybber, by me, or at least, by the hangman, by my command.

The one disbursed, and the other receiued; this went out of the Iland, and that home to his house: and the Gouvernour that remained said, Well, it shall cost me a fall, but I will put downe these Gaming-houses; for I haue a kinde of glimpse that they are very preiudiciall.

This at least, quoth one of the Notaries, you cannot remoue, because it belongs to a man of quality, and hee loseth a great deale more at the yeeres end then he gets by his Cards. Against other petty Gamesters you may shew your authority; for they doe more mischief, and conceale more abuses, then Gentlemen of qualities houses, where your famous Cheaters dare not vse their sights; and since the vice of play hath turned to so common a practice, 'tis better to suffer it in houses of fashion, then in poore mens, where they catch a poore snake, and from midnight till morning slay him quicke.

Well, Notary, (quoth *Sancho*) there's much to be said in this case. And now one of the Sergeants Yeomen, came with a Youth which he had laid fast hold on, and said,

Sir, this Youth came towards vs, and as hee had a glimpse of the Iustice, hee turned his backe, and began to scud away like a Deere, a signe he is some delinquent; I ranne after him, and had it not beene that hee stumbled and fell, I had neuer overtaken him.

Why ranst thou, fellow, (quoth *Sancho*?) To which the young man answered, Sir, to auoid the many queltions that your Constables vse to aske. What trade are you of? A Weaver, said he. And what weaue you? Iron pegs for Lances, with your Worships good leaue. You are a pleasant companion, Sir, and you presume to play the letter: 'tis very well. And whither went you now? To take the Ayre, Sir. And where in this land would you haue taken the Ayre? Where it blowes. Good, you answer to the purpose, Youth; make account then that I am the Ayre, and that I blow a sterne on you, and steere you to the prison. Goe to, lay hold on him, carry him for to night, Ile make him sleepe without Ayre in the prison. I protest (quoth the Youth) you shall as soone make me King, as make me sleepe this night in prison. Why (quoth *Sancho*) haue not I power to apprehend thee, and free thee when I please? For all your power, said the Youth, you shall not make me sleepe this night in Prison. No? you shall see (quoth *Sancho*) carry him presently where he shall see his error; and lest the layler should for a bribe befriend him, Ile lay a penalty of two thousand Crownes vpon him, if he let thee stirre a foot out of the prison. All this is needlesse, said the Youth: the businesse is, All the world shall not make me sleepe this night in prison. Tell me, fiend, quoth *Sancho*, hast thou some Angell to free thee, or take thy shackles off that I meane to haue clapped on thee? Well, Sir, (quoth the Youth very pleasantly) let's come to reason, and to the matter. Suppose you command mee to be carried to prison, and that I haue shackles and chaines put vpon me, and that I be put into a dungeon, and that there be extraordinary penalties inflicted vpon the laylor if he let me out: for all that, if I mean not to sleep, or to ioine my eye-lids together all night; Can you with all your Authority make me sleepe against my will?

No indeed (said the Secretarie) the fellow is in the right: so that (quoth *Sancho*) your forbearing to sleepe, is onely to haue your owne will, but not to contradict mine. No otherwise, Sir, (quoth the Youth) not so much as in thought.

Well, God bee with you, (quoth *Sancho*) get you home to bed, and God send you good rest, I meane not to disturbe you; but

but let me aduise you, that henceforward you be not so conceited with the Iustice; for you may meet with one that will clap your wit to your noddle.

The yong man went his way, and the Gouvernour went on with his Rounding, and a while after there came two Yeomen with a man in hold, and said, Sir, heeres one that seemes to be a man, but is none, but a woman, and not ill-fauoured, clad in a mans habit. Then they set two or three Lanthornes to his face, and perceiued a womans face, to looke to, of about sixteen yeers of age; her haire plaited vp with a cawle of gold & Greene silke, as faire as a thousand Pearles: they beheld her all ouer, and saw that she had on her a paire of Carnation silke stockings, & white Tassata garters fringed with gold, & embroidered with pearle; her long breeches were of cloth of gold, and the ground worke Greene, with a loose Caslocke or Jerkin of the same, opened on both sides, vnder which she had also a Doublet of cloth of gold, the ground white: her shooes were white mens shooes, she had no sword, but a very faire hatched dagger, with many rings vpon her fingers.

Finallie, shee pleased them all very well, but none of them knew her. The Inhabitants of the place said, they could not ghesse who she should be; and they that were the contriuers of the trickes against *Sancho*, were those that most seemed to admire, because that accident and chance was not purposed by them: so they were in suspence, to see vwhat vwould be the issue of it.

*Sancho* was amazed at the maidens beautie, and hee askt her who she was, whither she would, and what occasion had moued her to clad her selfe in that habit?

She, with her eyes fixt vpon the earth, most shamefacedly answered,

Sir, I cannot tell you in publike, what concernes me so much to be kept secret: onely this let me tell you; I am no thiefe nor malefactor, but an unhappie maid, forced by some ieaiousies to breake the decorum due to my honestie. Which when the Steward heard, he said to *Sancho*; Sir, command the company aside, that this Gentlewoman may tell her tale without being abashed.

the Gouvernour gave his command, and all of them went aside, but the Steward, the Caruer, and Secretary. Being thus private, the maid proceeded, saying;

I, Sirs, am daughter to *Pedro Perez Mazorca*, Farmer of this townes woolls, that often vseth to goe and come to my Fathers house. There's no likelihood in this, Gentlewoman, quoth the Steward; for I know *Pedro Perez* verie well, and know that he hath neuer a childe, neither Male nor Female: besides, you say he is your Father, and by and by you adde, that he vseth to goe often to your Fathers house. I thought vpon that too (quoth *Sancho*.) Why alas (quoth she) I am so frightened, that I know not what I say: but true it is, that I am daughter to *Diego de la Liana*, whom I belieue, you all know. This may be (said the Steward) for I know *Diego de la Liana* to be an honest and a wealthie Gentleman, and that he hath a sonne and a daughter, and since he hath beene a widdower, there's none in this towne can say he hath seene his daughters face; for hee keepes her so close, that hee scarce giues the Sunne leaue to looke on her: and for all that, Fame sayes she is wondrous faire.

Tis true (quoth the Maid) and I am that daughter, whether Fame lie or no, concerning my beauty; now you are satisfied, since you haue beheld me, and with this she began to weep tenderly. Which when the Secretary saw, he whispered the Caruer in the eare, and told him; Doubtlesse some matter of consequence hath befallne this poore Virgin, since in this habit, and at this time of night, being so well borne, she is from her home. There's no doubt of that (quoth the Caruer) for her teares too confirme the suspicion.

*Sancho* comforted her the best he could, and bad her without feare, tell what had befallne her; for that all of them would strue to giue her remedie with all possible diligence.

The businesse, Sirs, quoth she, is this: My Father hath kept me close these tenne yeeres; for so long it is since my Mother died: in the house wee haue a Chappell, where Masse is sayd, and I in all this time haue seene nothing but the Sunne by day, and the Moone and starres by night: neither know I what streets, or Market-places, or Churches are, nor men, except my Father,

a Brother of mine, and *Pedro Perez* the former, vvho because hee vseth to come ordinarily to our house, it came into my mind to say hee vvvas my father, because I would conceale the right. This keeping mee close, and denying mee to stirre not so much as to the Church, hath this good while comforted me, and I had a desire to see the world, at least, the towne where I was borne, as thinking this longing of mine vvvas not against the *Decorum* that Maidens of my birth ought to obserue: when I heard talke of Bull-baitings, running with Reedes, and representing Comedies: I asked my Brother that is a yeere yonger then I, what kinde of things those were, and many others, vvvhich I haue not seene; and he told mee as well as hee could: but all vvvas to enflame my desire the more to see.

Finally, to shorten my mis-fortune, I entreated my Brother, (I would I had neuer done it:) and then shee renewed her teares.

Then said the Steward, On, Gentlewoman, and make an end of telling vs what hath befallne you: for you hold vs all in suspense, with your words, and your teares.

Few words haue I to say (quoth shee) but many teares to weepe: for they be the fruits of ill-placed desires.

The Maids beauty was now planted in the Caruers heart, and he held vp his Lanthorne againe, to behold her afresh; and it seemed to him, that she wept not teares, but seed-pearle, or morning dew. and he thought higher, that they were liker orientall Pearles; and his wish was, that her mis-fortune might not be such, as the shewes of her mone and sighing might promise.

The Gouvernour was mad at the Wenches slownesse and delaying her Story; and bade her, she should make an end, and hold them no longer in suspense, for that it was late, and they had much of the towne to walke. Shee betwixt broken sobs, and halfe-fetcht sighs, said, My mis-fortune is nothing else, but that I desired my Brother that he would cloath me in mans apparell, in one of his Sutes; and that some night or other he would carry me to see the towne, when my father should be asleepe; hee importuned by my intreaties, condescended to my request: and

putting this Suite on me; and hee putting on another of mine, that fits him, as if it were made for him; for he hath neuer a haire vpon his chin, and might bee taken for a most beautifull Maid: this night somewhat aboue an houre agoe, we went abroad; and rambling vp and downe, wee haue gone thorowout the whole towne: and going homeward, we saw a great troope of people comming towards vs; and my Brother said, Sister: this is the Round, Take you to your heeles, and put wings to them, and follow me, that we be not knowne: for it will bee ill for vs; and this said, he turned his back, and began, I say not, to runne, but to flye: I within foure or fise steppes fell downe for feare; and then came this Officer that brought me before you; where, for my vilde longing, I am shamed before so many people. So that, Gentlewoman, (qd. *Sancho*) no other mis-hap hath befallen you; neither was it ieaousie, as you said in the beginning of your tale, that made you goe abroad? Nothing else (said shee) nor ieaousies: but a desire to see the world, and which extended no further, then to see this townes streets; and the comming now of two other Yeomen with her Brother, confirmed this to bee true, whom one of them ouertook, when he fled from his Sister: He had nothing on, but a rich Kirtle, and a halfe Mantle of blue Damaske, edged with a broad gold Lace: his head without any kinde of dressing or adornment, then his owne lockes, which by reason of their colour and curling, seemed to bee rings of gold. Aside they went with the Gouvernor, the Steward and the Caruer, and not letting his Sister heere; they asked why hee came in that habit? And he with the same shamefaced bashfulness told the same Tale that his Sister had done: at which the enamoured Caruer was wonderfully pleased. But the Gouvernour said to them, Truly hoe, this hath been a great childishnesse in you; and you needed not so many sighs and teares, to tell such a piece of foolish boldnesse: for it had beene enough if you had said, We such and such a one, went out of our fathers house, only for curiositie to walke vp and down the towne; and there had beene an end, without your sighing and your whining, on Gods name.

You say true, Sir, quoth the Maid: but you may think that I was  
so

so troubled, that I could not tell how to behaue my selfe.

There's nothing lost (quoth *Sancho*) let's goe, and wee will leaue you in your fathers house; perhaps he wil not haue missed you: and from hence-forward bee not such children, nor so longing to see the world: for the honest Maid better at home with a bone broken, then a gadding: the Woman and the Hen are lost with straggling: and let me tell you too; shee that desires to see, hath a desire likewise to bee seene, and I say no more.

The Youth thanked the Gouvernour for the fauour hee did them, to let them goe home; whither they went for it was not farre from thence.

Home they came, and the Youth throwing a little stone at one of the Iron windowes, straight there came a Maid-seruant downe, that sate vp for them, and opened them the doore, and in they went, leauing those without as well to admire her gentleness and beauty; as the desire they had to see the world by night, without stirring out of the towne: but they attributed all to their slender age.

The Caruers heart was stricke thorow; and hee purposed the next day to demand her of her Father to wife; assuring himselfe, hee would not deny her him, because hee was the Dukes seruant: *Sancho* too had a certaine longing and inkling to marry the Youth with his Daughter *Sanchica*: and he determined to put the matter in practice betimes, as thinking that a Gouvernours Daughter was fit for any Husband: and so the Round was ended for that night: and some two dayes after, his Government too, vvith vvhich all his desires were lopped off, and blotted out, as hereafter shall be said.

## CHAP. L.

where is declared, who were the Enchanters, and Executioners, that whipped the Matron, pincht and scratcht Don Quixote, with the successe the Page had that carried the Letter to Teresa Panfa, Sancho's wife.

**C**ID Hamete, the most punctuall Searcher of the very moats of this true History, sayes, that when Donna Rodriguez went out of her Chamber, to goe to Don Quixotes lodging, another Waiting-woman that lay with her, perceiued her: and as all of them haue an itch to smell after nouelties, she went after so softly, that the good Rodriguez perceiued it not: and as soone as the Waiting-woman saw her goe in to Don Quixote, that she might not be defectiue in the generall custome of make-bates; shee went presently to put this into the Duchesses head, and so told her that Donna Rodriguez was in Don Quixotes Chamber: the Duchesse told the Duke, and asked his leaue, that she and Alisidora might goe see what the Matron would haue with Don Quixote: the Duke granted, and both of them very softly came close to Don Quixotes doore, and so neere, that they heard all that was spoken within: and when the Duchesse heard that Rodriguez had set the Arannez of her springs a running in the streets, she could not suffer it, nor Alisidora neither: so, full of rage, and greedy to reuenge, they entred the chamber suddenly, & stabbed Don Quixote with their nailes, and banged the Woman, as hath beene related: for affronts that are directly done against beauty, doe awaken womens choller, and enflame in them a desire of reuenge.

The Duchesse told the Duke what had passed, which made him passing merry: and the Duchesse proceeding with her intention of mirth and pastime with Don Quixote, dispatcht the Page that playd the Enchanted Dulcinea's part (for Sancho had forgotten it, being busied in his Government) to Teresa Panfa with her Husbands Letter, and another from her selfe, and a chaine of faire Corall for a token.

The

The Story too tels vs, that the Page was very discreet and witty, and with a desire to serue his Lords, hee went with a very good will to Sancho's towne: and before he entred into it, he saw a company of women washing in a brooke: whom he asked, if they could tell him, if there liued in that towne a woman, whose name was Teresa Panfa, wife to one Sancho Panfa, Squire to a Knight called Don Quixote de la Mancha: to which question, a little Girle that was vwashing there, stood vp and said, That Teresa Panfa is my Mother, and that Sancho my Father, and that Knight our Master.

Well then, Damozell, quoth the Page, Come and bring mee to your Mother; for I bring her a Letter and a present, from your said Father.

That I will with a very good will, Sir, said the Wench, that seemed to bee about a some fourteene yeeres of age, more or lesse: and leauing the clothes that she was vwashing, to another companion of hers, without dressing her head, or putting on stockings and shooes, (for she was barelegged, and with her Mayre about her eares) she leaped before the Pages Beast he rode on, and said, Come, Sir, for our house is iust as you come in at the towne, and there you shall finde my Mother, with sorrow enough, because shee hath not heard from my Father this great while.

Well, I haue so good newes for her (quoth he) that she may thanke God for it.

At length, leaping, running, and iumping, the Girle got to the towne, and before she came into the house, she cryed out aloud at the doore: Come out, mother, Teresa, Come out, come out: for here's a Gentleman hath Letters and other things from my good Father: at which noise Teresa Panfa her Mother came out, spinning a rowle of Flax, with a Russet Petti-coat, and it seemed by the shortnesse of it, that it had beene cut off at the Placket; and she had Russet bodies of the same, and shee was in her smocke sleeues; she was not very old, for shee lookt as if shee had beene about forty: but she was strong, tough, sinowie, and raw-boned; who seeing her Daughter, and the Page a horse-back, said, What's the matter, child? What Gentleman is this?

A



A seruant of my Lady *Teresa Panfa's* (quoth the Page:) so, doing and speaking, he flung himselfe from his horse, and vvith great humilitie went to prostrate himselfe before the Lady *Teresa*, saying, My Lady *Teresa*, giue mee your hands to kisse, as you are lawfull and particular Wife to my Lord *Don Sancho Panfa*, proper Gouvernour of the Iland *Barataria*.

Ah good Sir, forbear I pray doe not do so, quoth *Teresa*: for I am no Court-noll, but a poore Husband-woman, a Ploughmans daughter, and wife to a Squire Errant, and not a Gouvernour.

You are (quoth the Page) a most worthy wife, to an Arch-worthy Gouvernour: and for prooffe of what I say, I pray receiue this Letter, and this token; when instantly he plucked out of his pocket a Corall string, with the lac'd Beads of gold, and put it about her neck, and said, This Letter is from the Gouvernour, and another that I bring; and these Corals are from my Lady the Duchesse that sends me to you.

*Teresa* was amazed, and her daughter also: and the Wench said, Hang mee, if our Master *Don Quixote* haue not a hand in this businesse; and hee it is that hath giuen my Father this Government or Earledome, that he so often promised him.

You say true (quoth the Page) for, for Signior *Don Quixote* sake, Signior *Sancho Panfa* is now Gouvernour of the Iland *Barataria*, as you shall see by this Letter.

Reade it, gentle Sir, said *Teresa*: for though I can spin, I cannot reade a iot; nor I neither, added *Sanhica*: but stay a little and Ile call one that shall; either the Vicar himselfe, or the Bachelor *Samson Carasco*, who wil both come hither with all their hearts to heare newes of my Father.

You need not call any body, said hee: for though I cannot spin, yet I can reade, and therefore I will reade it; so he did thoroughout: which, because it was before related, it is not now set downe here: and then he drew out the Duchesses, which was as followeth:

Friend *Teresa*, your Husbands good parts of his wit and honesty, mooued and obliged me, to request the Duke my Husband, to giue him the Government of one of the many Ilands  
he

he hath: I haue vnderstood, that he gouernes like a Ier-Falcon, for which I am very glad; and consequently my Lords the Duke: for which I render heauen many thanks, in that I haue not bene deceiued in making choise of him for the said Government: for let mee tell, Mistris *Teresa*, it is a very difficult thing, to finde a good Gouvernour in the world; and so God deale with me, as *Sancho* gouernes. I haue sent you (my beloved) a string of Corall Beads, with the tens of gold, I could wish they had bene Orientall Pearles; but something is better then nothing: time will come, that we may know and conuerse one with another; and God knowes what will become of it.

Commend me to *Sanhica* your Daughter, and bid her from me, that she be in a readinesse; for I meane to marry her highly when she least thinkes of it.

They tell me, that in your towne there, you haue goodly Acornes, I pray send me some two doozen of them, and I shall esteeme them much as coming from you: and write me at large, that I may know of your health, & well-being, and if you want ought, there is no more to be done but mouth it, & your mouth shall haue full measure, so God keepe you. From this towne.

Your louing friend, *The Duchesse*.

Lord! qd. *Teresa*, whē she heard the Letter, What a good plain meeke-Lady 'tis! God bury me with such Ladies, and not with your stately ones that are vsed in this towne, who think, because they are lantle-folks, the winde must not touch them: and they go so fantastically to Church, as if they were Queenes at least, & they thinke it a disgrace to vn to looke vpon a poore Countrey Woman: But looke you, here's a good Lady, that though shee be a Duchesse, calls me friend, and vseth mee as if I were her equall: equall may I see her with the highest Steeple in the *Mancha*: and concerning her Acorns, Signior mine, I will send her Ladyship a whole Pecke, that euery body shall behold, and admire them for their bignesse: and now, *Sanhica*, doe thou see that this Gentleman bee welcome: set his Horse vp, and get some Egges out of the Stable, and cut some Bacon: he shall fare like a Prince, for the good newes hee hath brought vs, and his good face deserues it all: in the meane time I will goe tell my neigh-

neighbours of this good newes, and to our father Vicar, and Master *Nicholas* the Barber, who haue beene, and still are so much thy fathers friends.

Yes marry will I (quoth *Sanchica*;) but harke you: you must giue mee halfe that string, for I doe not thinke my Ladie Duchesse such a foole, that she would send it all to her.

'Tis all thine, Daughter, said *Teresa*: but let me weare it a few dayes about my neck: for verily, it glads me to the heart.

You will be glad (quoth the Page) when you see the bundle that I haue in my Port-mantue, which is a garment of fine cloth, which the Gouvernour onely wore one day a Hunting, which he hath sent to Mistris *Sanchica*. Long may he liue (quoth *Sanchica*) and he that brings it too.

*Teresa* went out with her chaine about her neck, and playd with her fingers vpon her Letters, as if they had been a *Timbrel*: and meeting by chance with the Vicar, and *Samson Carrasco*, she began to dance, and to say, Ifaith now there is none poore of the kinne, we haue a little Government; No, no. Now let the proudest Gentlewoman of vñ all meddle with mee, and she shew her a new tricke.

What madnesse is this, *Teresa Pansa*, and what papers are these? No madnesse (quoth she) but these are Letters from Duchesses and Gouvernours: and these I weare about my neck are fine Corals; the *Aue-Maries* and *Pater-nosters* are of beaten gold, and I am a Gouvernesse.

Now God shield vs, *Teresa*: wee vnderstand you not, neither know wee vwhat you meane.

There you may see (quoth *Teresa*) and gaue vñ the Letters.

The Vicar reads them that *Samson Carrasco* might heare: so he and the Vicar lookt one vpon the other, wondring at vwhat they had read.

And the Bachelor asked, Who brought those Letters? *Teresa* answered, that they should goe home vwith her, and they should see the Messenger; A yong Youth, as faire as a golden Pine-Apple, and that he brought her another Present twice as good.

The Vicar tooke the Corals from her neck, and beheld them againe and againe, and assuring himselfe that they vvere right, he

he began to wonder afresh and said; By my Coat I sweare, I know not what to say or thinke of these Letters and Tokens: for on the one side, I see and touch the finenesse of these Corals; and on the other, that a Duchesse sends to beggetwo dozen of Acornes. Come cracke me this Nutte, quoth *Carrasco*. Well, let vs goe see the Bearer of this Letter, and by him vvee will be informed of these doubts that are offered. They did so, and *Teresa* went backe with them: they found the Page sitting a little Barley for his Beast, & *Sanchica* cutting a Rashe to a paue it, with Egges for the Pages dinner, whose presence and attire much contented them both; and after they had courteously saluted him, and he them, *Samson* asked him for newes as well of *Don Quixote* as *Sancho*: for though they had read *Sancho* and the Lady Duchesses Letters, yet they were troubled, and could not ghesse what *Sancho's* Government should meane, especially of an Island, since all or the most that were in the Mediterranean Sea belonged to his Maiesty.

To which the Page answered: That Signior *Sancho Pansa* is Gouvernour, tis not to be doubted, but whether it be an Island or no that he gouerns, I meddle not with it: tis enough that it is a place of about a thousand Inhabitants. And concerning the Acornes, let me tell you: My Lady the Duchesse is so plaine and humble, that her sending for Acornes to this Country-woman is nothing. I haue knowne when she hath sent to borrow a Combe of one of her neighbours, and let me tell you; The Ladies of Aragon, though they be as Noble, yet they stand not so much vpon their points, neither are so lofty as your Castilians, and they are much plainer.

Whilest they were in the midst of this discourse, *Sanchica* came leaping with her lap full of Egges, and asked the Page; Tell me, Sir, doth my Father weare pained hose since his being Gouvernour? I neuer marked it, quoth the Page, but sure hee doth. Oh God, quoth she, what a sight it would be, to see my Father in his linnen hose first! how say you? that euer since I was born I haue had a desire to see my Father in pain'd hose. With many of these you shal see him (quoth the Page) if you liue. And I protest, if his Government last him but two Moneths longer, hee will

<sup>a</sup> Para Empe-  
darte. A pretty  
Metaphor, for  
in Spain they  
use to fry their  
Collops and  
Egges all to-  
gether: not as  
we do, first Ba-  
con, and then  
Egges, & ther-  
fore the Au-  
thor calls it  
pauing.

will be likely to weare a cap with a Beauer.

The Vicar and Bachelor perceiued very well, that the Page playd the lacke with them; but the goodnelle of the Corall-beades, and the hunting suit that *Sancho* sent, made all straight againe, for *Teresa* had shewed them the apparell, and they could not but laugh at *Sancho's* desire, and most, when *Teresa* said, Master Vicar, pray will you hearken out if there be any bodie that goe toward *Madrid* or *Toledo*, that they may buy mee a Farthingale round and well made, iust in the fashion, and of the best sort, for intruth, intruth, I meane to credit my Husbands Gouvernement as much as I can; and if I be angry, Ile to Court my selfe too, and haue my Coach as well as the best: for she that hath a Gouvernour to her Husband, may very well haue it, and maintaine it.

And why not Mother (quoth *Sancho*) and the sooner the better, though those that see mee set with my Mother in the Coach should say, Looke ye on Mistresse *Whacham*, good-man Garlicke-eaters daughter, how she is set & stretcht at ease in the Coach, as if she were a Pope *Ioane*: but let them tread in the dirt, and let me goe in my Coach: a poxe on all backe-biters; the Foxe fares best when hee is cursed. Say I well, Mother mine? Very well (quoth she) and my good *Sancho* foretold mee of all these blessings and many more; and thou shalt see, daughter, Ile neuer rest till I am a Countesse; for all is but to begin well, and (as I haue often heard thy good father say, who is likewise the father of Prouerbs,) Look not a giuen horse in the mouth: when a Gouvernement is giuen thee, take it; when an Earledome, gripe it; and when they a hiss, hiss, to thee with a reward, take it vp. No, no, be carelesse, and answer not good fortune when shee knocks at your dores. And what care I (quoth *Sancho*) what hee say that sees mee stately and Maiesticall? there's a dogge in a doublet, and such like.

When the Vicar heard all this, he said, I cannot beleue but all the stocke of the *Pansa's* were borne with a bushell of Prouerbs in their bellies, I neuer saw any of them that did not scatter vnto all times, and vpon all occasions. You say true (quoth the Page) for Signior *Sancho* the Gouvernour speakes them every

foot:

foot: and though many of them be nothing to the purpose, yet they delight, and my Lady the Duchesse, and the Duke do much celebrate them. That still you should affirme, Sir, that this of *Sancho's* Gouvernement is true, & that there can be any Duchesse in the world that sends him Presents, and writes to him; for we, although we see them, and haue read the Letters, yet wee cannot beleue it; and wee thinke that this is one of *Don Quixote's* our Countreiman his inuentions, who thinkes that all are by way of Enchantment: So that I am about to desire to feele and touch you, to see whether you bee an ayrie Ambassador, or a man of flesh and blood.

Sir, (quoth the Page) all I know of my selfe, is, that I am a reall Ambassador, and that Signior *Sancho Pansa* is an effectiue Gouvernour, and that my Lords the Duke and Duchesse may giue, and haue giuen the said Gouvernement; and I haue heard say, that the said *Sancho Pansa* demeanes himselfe most robustiously in it. If in this there be any Enchantment, you may dispute it amongst your selues, for I know no more, by an oath I shall sweare, which is, By the life of my Parents, who are aliue, and I loue them very well.

It may very well be, quoth the Bachelor, but *dubitat Augustinus*. Doubt it whose will (quoth the Page) I haue told you the truth, which shall alwaies preuaile aboue lyes, as the oyle aboue the water: and if not *operibus credite & non verbis*, one of you goe with mee, and you shall see with your eyes what you will not beleue with your cares. That iourney will I go, quoth *Sancho*: you shall carry me, Sir, at your horses crupper, and Ile goe with a very good will to see my Father. Gouvernours Daughters (quoth he) must not trauell alone, but accompanied with Carroches and horse-Litters, and good store of seruants. Marry (quoth *Sancho*) I can goe as well vpon a young Ass-Colt, as vpon a Coach; you haue a daintie peece of mee no doubtr.

Peace wench, said *Teresa*, thou knowest not what thou sieest; and this Gentleman is in the right; the times are altered: When thy Father was *Sancho*, then mightst thou be *Sancho*; but now he is Gouvernour, Madam; and I know not whether I haue

Z.

said

a Hiss, hiss, as if it were the calling a dog, to giue him meat.

said ought. Mistresse *Teresa* sayes more then shee is aware of; (quoth the Page) and now pray let me dine, and be quickly dispatched, for I must returne this afternoone. Then, quoth the Vicar, you shall doe penance with me to day; for Mistresse *Teresa* hath more good will then good cheere to welcome so good a ghest. The Page refused, but for his better fare, he was forced to accept of the kindnesse; and the Vicar carried him the more willingly, that hee might haue time to aske at leysure after *Don Quixote's* exploits. The Bachelor offered *Teresa* to write the answers of her Letters; but shee would not that hee should deale in her affaires; for she held him to be a scoffer: and so she gaue a little rowle of bread, and a couple of egges to a little Monke that could write, who wrote her two Letters, one for her Husband, and the other for the Duchesse, framed by her owne pate, and are not the worst in all this grand History, as you may see hereafter.

## CHAP. LI.

*Of Sancho's proceeding in his Government, with other successes, as good as Touch.*

**T**He day appeared after the Gouvernors Rounding night, in which the Caruer slept not a whit, being busied in thinking vpon the face, feature, and beauty of the disguised Damozell: and the Steward spent the remainder of it, in writing to his Lords, *Sancho Panza's* words and actions, both which he equally admired; for both were mixt with certaine appearances of Discreet and Foole.

The Gouvernour in fine was gotten vp, and by Doctor *Pedro Rexio's* appointment, hee broke his fast with a little Conserue, and some two or three spoonfulls of cold water, which *Sancho* would willingly haue changed for a piece of bread, and a bunch of grapes; but seeing there was no remedy, hee passed it ouer, though with much griefe of mind, & wearines of stomack: for *Pedro Rexio* made him belieue, that few dishes, and those delicate,

cate, did quicken the wit, which was the onely thing for persons that bore Rule, and weighty Offices; where they must benefit themselves, not onely with corporall force, but strength of vnderstanding too.

With this Sophistry *Sancho* was almost starued, so that in secret he cursed the Gouvernment, and also him that gaue it him; but yet, with his hunger and his Conserue, he sate in iudgement that day, and the first thing that came before him, was a doubt that a stranger proposed vnto him, the Steward and the rest of the fraternity being present, and it was this:

Sir, a maine Riuer diuided two parts of one Lordship (I pray marke, for it is a case of great importance, and somewhat difficult) I say then, that vpon this Riuer there was a Bridge, and at the end of it a Gallowes, and a kinde of Iudgement Hall, in which there were ordinarily foure Iudges, that iudged according to the Law that the owner of the Riuer, Bridge, & Lordship had established, which was this: If any one be to passe from one side of this Bridge to the other, hee must first sweare whither he goes, and what his businesse is: if he sweare true, let him passe; if hee lye, let him be hanged vpon the gallowes that shewes there without remission. This Law being divulged, and the rigorous condition of it, many passed by, and presently by their oathes it was seene whether they said true, and the Iudges let them passe freely. It fell out that they tooke one mans oath, who swore and said, that he went to be hanged vpon that gallowes, and for nothing else.

The Iudges were at a stand, and said, If we let this man passe, he lyed in his oath, and according to the Law hee ought to die; and if we hang him, he swore he went to die vpon the gallowes, and hauing sworne truly, by the same Law he ought to be free. It is now, Sir Gouvernour, demanded of you, what should be done with this man, for the Iudges are doubtfull and in suspence; and hauing had notice of your quicke and eleuated vnderstanding, they sent me to you, to desire you on their behalfe to giue your opinion in this intricate and doubtfull case.

To which (quoth *Sancho*;) Truly these Iudges that send you to me might haue saued a labour; for I am one that haue as much

much wit as a Setting-dog : but howsoever, repeat me you the bulinellse once againe, that I may vnderstand it, and perhaps I may hit the marke.

The Demandant repeated againe, and againe, what hee had said before ; and *Sancho* said, In my opinion it is instantly resolved, as thus :

The man sweares, that he goes to dye vpon the gallowes: and if he die so, he swore true ; and so by the Law deserues to passe free: and yet if he be not hanged, he swore false; and by the same Law he ought to be hanged. Tis iust as Master Gouvernor hath said, quoth the Messenger ; and concerning the vnderstanding the case, there is no more to be required or doubted. I say then (quoth *Sancho*) that they let that part of the man passe that spoke truth, and that which told a lye, let them hang it, and so the condition of the Law shall be literally accomplished.

Why, Sir, said the Demandant, then the man must be diuided into two parts, lying and true ; and if he be diuided, he must needs die, and so there is nothing of the Law fulfilled, and it is expresly needfull that the Law be kept.

Come hither, honest fellow (quoth *Sancho*) either I am a very Leeke, or this Passenger you speake of, hath the same reason to die, as to liue and passe the bridge ; for if the truth saue him, the lye condemnes him equally : which being so as it is, I am of opinion, that you tell the Iudges that sent you to me, That since the reasons to saue or condemne him, be in one ranke, that they let him passe freely ; for it is euer more praise-worthy to doe good, then to doe ill ; and this would I giue vnder my hand, if I could write: and in this case I haue not spoken from my selfe, but I remember one precept amongst many others, that my Master *Don Quixote* gaue me the night before I came to be Gouverneur, which was ; That when Iustice might be any thing doubtfull, I should leaue, and apply my selfe to pitty : and it hath pleased God I should remember it in this case, which hath salued out par.

Tis right, quoth the Steward : and sure, *Licurgus* Law-giuer to the Lacedemonians, could not haue giuen a better sentence then that which the Grand *Sancho Panfa* hath giuen. And now this Mornings audience may end, and I will giue order that the Gouver-

Gouernour may dine plentifully. That I desire (quoth *Sancho*) and let's haue faire play : Let mee dine, and then let Casts and Doubts raine vpon me, and Ile sinusse them apace.

The Steward was as good as his word, holding it to be a matter of Conscience, to sturue so discreet a Gouverneur : Besides, his purpose was to make an end with him that night, performing the last iest, which he had in Commission, towards him. It hapned then, that hauing eaten contrary to the prescriptions and orders of the Doctor *Tirtefuera*, when the cloth was taken away, there came in a Poste with a Letter of *Don Quixotes*, to the Gouverneur. *Sancho* commanded the Secretary to read it to himselfe, and that if there came no secret in it, hee should read it aloud. The Secretary did so, and sodainely running of it ouer, said, It may well be read out, for this that *Don Quixote* writes to you, deserues to be stamped and written in golden letters, and thus it is.

*Don Quixotes Letter to Sancho Panfa, Gouverneur of the Island Barataria.*

**W**Hen I thought (friend *Sancho*) to haue heard newes of thy negligence and folly, I heard it of thy discreti-on ; for which I gaue to God particular thanks. I heare thou Gouvernest as if thou wert a man, and that thou art a man as if thou wert a beast, such is thy humility thou vsest ; yet let mee note vnto thee, that it is very necessary and conuenient many times, for the Authority of a place to goe against the humility of the heart : for the adornment of the person that is in eminent Offices, must be according to their greatnesse, and not according to the measure of the meeke condition, to which he is inclined. Goe well clad, for a Stake well dressed, seemes not to be so : I say not to thee that thou weare toyes, or gawdy gay things ; not that being a Iudge thou goe like a Souldier, but that thou adorn thy selfe with such a habit as thy place requires ; so that it be handsome and neat.

To get the good will of those thou Gouvernest, amongst others, thou must doe two things : the one, to be courteous to all,

which I have already told thee of; and the other, to see that there be plenty of sustenance; for there is nothing that doth more weary the hearts of the poore, then hunger and dearth.

Make not many Statute-Lawes, and those thou dost make, see they be good, but chiefly that they be obserued and kept, for Statutes not kept, are the same as if they were not made; and doe rather shew that the Prince had Wisedome and Authority to makethem, then valour to see that they should bee kept: and Lawes that only threaten, and are not executed, become like the beame, King of frogs, that at first scarred them, but in time they despised, and gat vp on the top of it.

Be a Father of Vertue, but a father-in-law of Vice.

Be not alwaies cruell, nor alwaies mercifull, choose a meane betwixt these two extremes, for this is a point of discretion.

Visit the Prisons, the Shambles, and the Markets; for in such places, the Gouvernours presence is of much importance.

Comfort the prisoners that hope to bee quickly dispatch'd.

Be a Bull-begger to the Butchers, and a scarre-Crow to the Huckster-women for the same reason.

Shew not thy selfe (though perhaps thou art, which yet I be- lieue not) Couetous, or a Whoore-monger, or a Glutton; for when the town, and those that conuerse with thee, know which way thou art inclined, there they will set vpon thee, till they call thee downe head-long.

View and reuiew, passe and repasse thine eyes over the Instructions I gaue thee in writing, before thou wentest from hence to thy Gouvernment, and thou shalt see, how thou findest in them, if thou obserue them, an allowance to helpe thee to beare & passe over the troubles that are incident to Gouvernors.

Write to thy Lords, and shew thy selfe thankfull: for ingratitude is the daughter of pride, and one of the greatest sins that is: and hee that is thankfull to those that haue done him good, giues a testimony that he will be so to God too, that hath done him so much good, and daily doth continue it.

My Lady Duchesse dispatcht a Messenger a purpose vvith thy apparel: and another Present to thy wife *Teresa Panfa*; eue- ry minute we expect an answer.

I haue

I haue beene somewhat ill at ease of late with a certaine Cat- businesse that hapned to me not very good for my nose, but 'twas nothing: for if there be Enchanters that misuse me, others there be that defend me. Let me know if the Steward that is with thee, had any hand in *Trifaldis* actions, as thou suspectedst: and let me heare likewise of all that befalls thee, since the way is so short; besides, I think to leaue this idle life ere long, for I was not borne to it.

Heere is a businesse at present, that I beleue will bring mee in disgrace with these Nobles: but though it much concerne me, I care not: for indeede I had rather comply with my pro- fession, then with their wils, according to the saying; *Amicus Placo, sed magis amica veritas*. I write thee this Latine, because I thinke since thy being Gouvernour thou hast learnt to vn- derstand it. And so farewell, God keep thee and send that no man picie thee.

Thy friend,

*Don Quixote de la Mancha*

*Sancho* heard the Letter very attentiuely, and those that heard it, applauded it for a very discreet one: and presently *Sancho* rose from the Table, and calling the Secretarie, lockt him to him in his lodging Chamber, and without more delay, meant to answer his Master *Don Quixote*: and therefore he bade the Se- cretarie, without adding or diminishing ought, to write what he would haue him; which he did: and the Letter in answer was of this ensuing tenour.

### *Sancho Panfa's Letter to Don Quixote de la Mancha.*

MY businesse and imployments are so great, that I haue not leisure either to scratch my Head, or pare my nayles, which is the reason they are so long (God help mee.) This I say (deare Signior mine) that you may not wonder, if



hitherto I haue not giuen you notice of my well or ill beeing at this Gouvernement; in which I am now more hungry, then when you and I trauelled in the Woods, and Wildernesse.

My Lord the Duke wrot me the other day, by way of aduice, that there were certaine Spies entred the Iland, to kill me: but hitherto, I haue discouered none but a certaine Doctor, who is entertained in this Towne, to kill as many Gouvernors. as come to it: and his name is Doctor *Pedro Rexio*, born in *Tirica fuera*: that you may see what a name this is for me to feare lest he kill mee.

This aforesaid Doctor sayes of himselfe, that hee cures not infirmities when they are in present being, but preuents them before they come: and the Medicines hee vseth, are dyet vpon dyet, till he makes a man nothing but bare bones; as if leanenesse were not a greater sicknesse then a Calenture.

Finally, he hath euen starued mee, and I am ready to dye for anger: for when I thought to haue comen to this Iland to eate good warme things, and to drinke coole, and to recreate my body in Holland sheetes, and Feather-beds; I am forced to doe penance, as if I were an Hermite: and because I doe it vnwillingly, I belecue at the vpshot the Diuell will haue me.

Hitherto haue I neither had my due, nor taken bribe, and I know not the reason: for heere they tell mee, that the Gouvernours that vse to come to this Iland; before they come, they of the towne either giue or lend them a good summe of money: and this is the ordinarie custome, not onely in this Towne, but in many others also.

Last night as I walked the Round, I met with a faire Maid in mans apparell; and a Brother of hers in womans: my Caruer fell in loue with the Wench, and purposed to take her to Wife, as he sayes; and I haue chosen the Youth for my sonne in law: and to day both of vs will put our desires in practice with the Father of them both, which is one *Diego de la Lana*, a Gentleman and an old Christian, as much as you would desire. I visit the Market places (as you aduised mee) and yesterday found a Huckster, that sold new Hazel Nuts, and it was prooued against her, that she had mingled the new, with a bushell of old, that were rotten and without kernels; I iudged them all to be giuen

to the Hospitall boyes, that could very well distinguish them; and gaue sentence on her, that she should not come into the Market-place in fiftene dayes after: 'twas told me, that I did most valourously; all I can tell you is, that it is the common report in this towne, that there is no worse people in the world then these women of the Market places: for all of them are impudent, shamelesse, & vngodly; and I belecue it to be so, by those that I haue seene in other townes: That my Ladie the Duchesse hath written to my Wife *Teresa Panfa*, and sent her a token, as you say, it pleaseth me very well, and I will endeouour at fit time to shew my selfe thankfull: I pray doe you kisse her hands on my behalfe, and tell her, her kindnesse is not ill bestowed, as shall after appeare.

I would not that you should haue any thwart-reckonings of dis-taste with those Lords: for if you be displeased with them, 'tis plaine it must needs redound to my dammage, and 'twere vnfit that, since you aduise mee not to be vnthankfull, you should be so to them that haue shewed you so much kindnesse, and by whom you haue been so well welcomed in their Castle.

That of your Cat-businesse, I vnderstand not: but I suppose tis some of those ill feates, that the wicked Enchanters are wont to vse toward you; I shall know of you, when we meet. I would faine haue sent you something from hence, but I know not what, except it were some little Canes to make Squirts, which with Bladders too they make very curiously in this place: but if my Office last, Ile get something worth the sending.

If my wife *Teresa Panfa* write to mee, pay the Portage, and send me the Letter: for I haue a wonderfull desire to know of the Estate of my house, my wife and children: and so God keep you from ill-minded Enchanters, and deliuer mee well and peaceably from this Gouvernement; for I doubt it, and thinke to lay my bones here, according as the Doctor *Pedro Rexio* handles me.

Your Worships Seruant,

*Sancho Panfa* the Gouvernour.

The Secretarie made vp the Letter, and presently dispatched the Post; and so *Sancho's* Tormentors ioyning together, gaue order how they might dispatch him from the Gouvernement. And that afternoone *Sancho* passed, in setting downe orders for the well-gouerning the Iland he imagined to be so: and he ordained there should bee no Hucksters for the Commonwealths prouisions; and likewise that they might haue Wines brought in from whencesoever they would; onely with this Prouiso, to tell the place from whence they came, to put prices to them according to their value, and goodnes: and whosoever put water to any wine, or chang'd the name of it, should die for it: he moderated the prices of all kinde of cloathing, especially of shooes, as thinking Leather was sold vvith much exorbitancie.

He made a taxation for seruants wages, who went on vnbrideled for their profit.

He set grieuous penalties vpon such as should sing bawdie or ribaldry songs, either by night or day.

He ordained likewise, that no blind-man should sing miracles in Verse, except they brought Authentick testimonies of the truth of them: for he thought, that the most they sung, were false, and preiudiciall to the true.

He created also a Constable for the poore, not that should persecute, but examine them, to know if they were so: for vnder colour of fained maimenesse, and false sores, the hands are Theeues, and health is a Drunkard.

In conclusion, he ordered things so well, that to this day they are fam'd and kept in that place, and are called, The Ordinances of the Grand Gouvernour, *Sancho Panza*.

## CHAP.

## CHAP. LII.

*The Aduenture of the second Afflicted or straightned Matron, alias Donna Rodriguez.*

**C** I D Hamete tels vs, that *Don Quixote* being recovered of his scratches, he thought the life he led in that Castle, was much against the order of Knighthood he profest: so he determined to craue leaue of the Dukes to part towards *Saragoza*, whose lusts drew neere, where hee thought to gaine the Armour that vseth to bee obtained in them. And being one day at the Table with the Dukes, and beginning to put his intention in execution, and to aske leaue: Behold, vnlookt for, two women came in at the great Hall doore, clad (as it after appeared) in mourning from head to foot: and one of them comming to *Don Quixote*, she fell downe all along at his feet with her mouth sowd to them; and she groaned so sorrowfully, and so profoundly, that she put all that beheld her into a great confusion: and though the Dukes thought it was some tricke their seruants would put vpon *Don Quixote*; notwithstanding, seeing with what earnestnesse the woman sighed, groaned and wept, they were a little doubtfull and in suspence, till *Don Quixote* in great compassion raised her from the ground, and made her discouer her selfe, and take her Mantle from her blubber'd face. She did so, and appeared to be (what could not be imagined) *Donna Rodriguez* the Waiting-woman of the house: and the other in mourning was her wronged Daughter, abused by a rich Farmers sonne. All were in admiration that knew her, especially the Dukes: for though they knew her to be foolish, and of a good mould that way; yet not to bee so neere mad.

Finally, *Donna Rodriguez* turning to the Lords, she said, May it please your Excellencies, to giue mee leaue to impart a thing to this Knight: for it behooues me to come out of a businesse, into which the boldnesse of a wicked Raskall hath thrust me.

The

The Duke said, he gaue her leave, and that she should impart what she would to Signior *Don Quixote*. She directing her voice and her gesture to *Don Quixote*, said, Some dayes since, valourous Knight, I related to you the wrong and trecherie that a wicked Farmer hath done to my beloued Daughter, the vnfortunate one heere now present; and you promised me to vndertake for her to right this wrong that hath beene done her: and now it hath come to my notice, that you meane to part from this Castle, in quest of your Aduentures (God send them) and therefore my request is, that before you scowre the wayes, you would desie this vntamed Rusticke, and make him marry my Daughter, according to the promise he gaue her before he coupled with her: For to thinke that my Lord the Duke will doe me iustice, is to seeke Peares from the Elme, for the reason that I haue plainly told you; and so God giue you much health, and forsake not vs.

To these reasons, *Don Quixote* answered with great grauity and *Prosopopeia*:

Good Matron, temper your teares, and saue your sighs, and I will engage my selfe to right your Daughter; for whom it had beene much better, not to haue beene so easie of beleeuing her Louers promises, which for the most part are light in making, but heauy in accomplishing: and therefore with my Lord the Dukes leaue, I will presently part in search of this vngodly yong man, and finde and challenge him, and kill him, if he deny to accomplish his promise. For the chiefe ayme of my profession is, to pardon the humble, and to chastize the proud; I meane, to succour the wretched, and to destroy the cruell.

You need not (quoth the Duke) be at the paines of seeking the Clowne, of whom the good Matron complaines; neither need you aske me leaue to desie him, 'tis enough, that I know you haue done it; and let it be my charge to giue him notice that he accept the challenge, and come to my Castle to answere for himselfe, where safe lists shall be set vp for you both, obseruing the conditions that in such Acts ought to bee obserued; and both your Iustices equally, according as Princes are obliged so doe, that grant single combate; to those that fight within  
their

their Dominions. Why, with this securitie and your Greatness licence (quoth *Don Quixote*) here I say that for this once I renounce my Gentry, and doe equalize my selfe to the meanenesse of the Offender: and so qualifie him to combate with me: and so though he be absent, I challenge and desie him, for that hee did ill to defraude this poore creature that vvas a Maid, and now by his villany is none, and that hee shall either fulfill his word he gaue her to marry her, or die in the demand.

And straight plucking off his Glove, he cast it into the midst of the Hall, and the Duke tooke it vp, saying, That hee (as had beene said) in his Vassals name accepted the challenge, and appointed the prefixt time sixe dayes after, and the Lists to be in the Court of that Castle, and the vsuall Armes of Knights, as Lance and Shield, and laced Armour, with all other pieces, without deceit, aduantage, or superstition, scene and allowed by the Iudges of the Lists: but first of all 'tis requisite, that this honest Matron, and this ill Maid commit the right of their cause into Signior *Don Quixote de la Mancha's* hands: for otherwise there will be nothing done; neither will the said challenge be put in execution.

I doe (quoth the Matron) and I too (said the Daughter, all blubber'd and shamefac'd) and in ill taking.

This agreement being made, and the Dukes imagining what was to be done in the businesse, the mourners went their wayes, and the Duchesse commanded they should be vsed not as their seruants, but like Lady-Aduenturers, that came to their house to aske iustice, and serued as strangers, to the wonderment of other seruants that knew not, what would become of the madnesse and leuity of *Donna Rodriguez*, and her Errant Daughter.

Whilst they were in this businesse, to adde more mirth to the Feast, and to end the Comedy: behold where the Page comes in, that carried the Letter and tokens to *Teresa Panza*; whose arriual much pleased the Dukes, desirous to know what befell him in his voyage, and asking him, The Page answered, that he could not tell them in publike, nor in few words; but that their Excellencies would bee pleased to reserue it for a private time, and that in the meane time, they would entertaine themselves

selues with those Letters; and taking them out, he gaue two to the Duchesse, the superscription of the one was, to my Lady Duchesse, I know not whence: and the other, To my Husband *Sancho Panza*, Gouvernour of the Iland *Barataria*, whom God prosper longer then me.

The Duchesse could not be quiet, till she had read her Letter; so opening it, and reading it to her selfe, & seeing that she might reade it aloud, shee did so, that the Duke and the by-standers might heare it, as followeth.

*Teresa Panza's Letter to the Duchesse.*

**L**ady mine: Your Greatnesses Letter you wrote me, did much content mee, for I did very much desire it: Your string of Corals was very good; and my Husbands hunting suite comes not short of it: That your Honour hath made my Consort Gouvernour, all this Towne reioyceth at it, though there is none that will belecue it: especially, the Vicar, Master *Nicholas* the Barber, and *Samson Carasco* the Bachelor: but all is one to mee, so it bee true, as it is; let each one say what hee will: but if you goe to the truth, had it not beene for the Corall and the Sute I should not haue beleueed it neither: for all in this Towne hold my Husband for a very Lecke, and taking him from his gouerning a Flocke of Goats, they cannot imagine for what gouernment else hee should bee good: God make him so, and direct him as hee sees best; for his children haue need of it. I, Lady of my life; am determin'd with your Worships good leaue, to make vse of this good fortune in my house; and to goe to the Court to stretch my selfe in a Coach, to make a thousand enuious persons blinde that looke after me. And therefore I request your Excellencie to command my Husband to send me some stocke of money to purpose, because I heare, the Court-expences are great, that a loafe is worth sixe-pence; and a pound of Mutton five-pence, that tis wonderful: and that if he meane not that, I shall goe, hee let mee know in time: for my feet are dancing till I be iogging vpon the way; for my friends and neighbours tell me, that if I and my daughter

ter goe glistering and pompously in the Court, my Husband will be knowne by me more then I by him; for that of necessity, many will aske, What Gentlewomen are these in the Coach? Then a seruant of mine answers, The Wife and Daughter of *Sancho Panza*, Gouvernour of the Iland *Barataria*; and by this meanes, *Sancho* shall be knowne, and I shall be esteemed, and to Rome for all. I am as sorry, as sorrow may be, that this yeere we haue gathered no Acornes, for all that I send your Highnesse halfe a pecke, which I culled out, and went to the mountaine on purpose, and they were the biggest I could finde. I could haue wished they had beene as big as Eastritch Egges. Let not your Pomposity forget to write to me, and I haue a care to answer and aduize you of my health, and all that passeth here where I remaine; praying to God to preserue your Greatnesse, and forget not me; my daughter *Sancha* and my sonne kisse your hands. She that desires more to see, then to write to your Honour,

\* A Phrase vsed by her to no purpose, but tis a viual thing in Spain among ill liuers to cry, a *Rema per tado*, there to get absolution for their villanies

Your Seruant, *Teresa Panza*.

Great was the content that all receiued to heare *Teresa Panza's* Letter, principally of the Dukes; and the Duchesse asked *Don Quixote's* aduice, if it were fit to open the Letter that came for the Gouvernour, which shee imagined was most exquisite. *Don Quixote* said, that to pleasure them, he would open it: which he did, and saw the Contents, which were these.

*Teresa Panza's Letter, to her Husband Sancho.*

**I**Receiued thy Letter, my *Sancho* of my soule, and I promise and swear to thee, as I am a Catholike Christian, there wanted not two fingers breadth of making me mad for ioy; looke you Brother, when I came to heare that thou art a Gouvernour, I thought I should haue falne downe dead with gladnesse; for thou knowest that 'tis vsually said, That sodaine ioy as soon kills as excessiue griefe. The water ran downe thy daughter *Sanchica's* eies, without perceiuing of it, with pure content. The suite thou sentest me I had before me, and the Corals my Lady the

the Duchesse sent, and the Letters in my hands, and the bearer of them present, and for all this I beleued and thought that all I saw or felt, was a dreame: For who could thinke that a Goatheard should come to be a Gouvernour of Ilands? & thou knowest, friend, that my Mother was vsed to say, That twas needfull to liue long, to see much. This I say, becaule I thinke to see more, if I liue longer; for I hope I shall not haue done, till I see thee a Farmer or Customer, which are Offices, that though the Deuill carry away him that dischargeth them badly, yet in the end good store of coyne goes thorow their hands. My Lady the Duchesse will let thee know what a desire I haue to go to the Court, consider of it, and let mee know thy minde: and I vwill doe thee honor there, going in my Coach. The Vicar, Barber, Bachelor nor Sexton cannot belieue that thou art a Gouvernour, & say that 'tis all iuggling or Enchantment, as all thy Master *Don Quixote's* affaires are; and *Samson* sayes, he will finde thee out, and put this Gouvernement out of thy noddle, and *Don Quixote's* madnesse out of his Cox-combe. I doe nothing but laugh at them, and looke vpon my Corall chaine, and contriue how to make my daughter a Gowne of the suit thou sentest me. I sent my Lady the Duchesse some Acornes, I would they had beene of gold: I prethee send me a string of Pearles, if they be vsed in that Iland.

The newes of this towne is, that *Berneca* married her daughter to a scurvy Painter that came to this towne to paint at randome. The Burgers of the towne willed him to paint the Kings Armes ouer the gate of the Towne-Hall; hee demanded two Ducats, which they gaue him before-hand: he wrought eight daies, in the end painted nothing, and said; he could not hit vpon painting such a deale of Pedlery ware: so hee returned them their money, and for all this, hee married vnder the name of a good workeman: true it is, that he hath left his Pencill, and taken the Spade, and goes to the field most Gentleman-like. *Pedro de Loba's* sonne hath taken Orders, and shaued his head, with purpose to be a Priest. *Mingimisa Mingo Suluos* were knew of it, and she hath put a bill against him for promising her marriage: malicious tongues will not sicke to say, that she is great by him, but he denies it stilly.

This yeere we haue had no Oliues, neither is there a drop of Vineger to be had in all the towne. A Company of Souldiers passed by heere, and by the way they carried three wenches from this towne with them, I will not tell thee who they are, for perhaps they will returne, and there will not want some that vwill marry them for better for worse. *Sanchica* makes bone-lace, & gets her three-halfe pence a day cleere, which she puts in a boxe with a slit, to helpe to buy her household-stuffe: but now that she is a Gouvernours daughter, thou wilt giue her a portion, that she needs not worke for it. The stone-fountain in the market-place is dried vp, a Thunder-bolt fell vpon the Pillory, there may they fall all. I expect an answer of this, and thy resolution touching my going to the Court; and so God keepe thee longer then me, or as long; for I would not leaue thee in this world behinde me.

Thy Wife, *Teresa Panfa*.

These Letters were extolled, laughed at, esteemed and admired: and to mend the matter, the Post came that brought one from *Sancho* to *Don Quixote*, which was likewise read aloud; which brought the Gouvernours madnesse in question. The Duchesse retired with the Page, to know what had befallne him in *Sancho's* towne, who told her at large, without omitting circumstance: he gaue her the Acornes, and a Cheese too vvhich *Teresa* gaue him for a very good one, much better then those of *Tronion*; the Duchesse receiued it with great content, in which we will leaue her, to tell the end that the Government of the Grand *Sancho Panfa* had, the flower and Mirror of all Ilandish Gouvernours.

## CHAP. LIII.

*Of the troublesome end and up-shot that Sancho Panſa's Government had.*

**T**O thinke that the affaires of this life should laſt euer in one being, is needleſſe; for it rather ſeemes otherwiſe: the Summer followes the Spring, after the Summer, the Fall, and the Fall, the Winter, and ſo Time goes on in a continued wheele. Onely mans life runnes to a ſpeedy end, ſwifter then Time, without hope of being renewed, except it be in another life, which hath no bounds to limit it.

This ſaid *Cid Hamete*, a Mahometicall Philoſopher; for many without the light of Faith, onely with a naturall inſtinct haue vnderſtood the ſwiftnelle and vncertainty of this life preſent, and the laſting of the eternall life which is expected. But heere the Author ſpeakes it, for the ſpeedineſſe with which *Sancho's* Government was ended, conſumed and vndone, and vaniſhed into a ſhade and ſinoake, who being a-bed the ſeuenth night after ſo many daies of his Government, not cloyed with bread or wine, but with iudging and giuing ſentences, making Proclamations and Statutes, when ſleepe, maugre and in deſpite of hunger, ſhut his eye-lids, hee heard ſuch a noyſe of bells and out-cries, as if the whole Iſland had beene ſunke: he ſate vp in his bed, and was very attentive, hearkening if he could gheſſe at the cauſe of ſo great an vprore, but he was ſo farre from knowing it, that a noyſe of a world of Drums and Trumpers added to that of the bells and cries, made him more conſuſed, & more full of feare and horror; and riſing vp, he put on a paire of ſlip-pers for the moiſtneſſe of the ground, and without any night-gowne vpon him, or any thing like it, he went out at his chamber doore, at ſuch time as hee ſaw at leaſt twenty perſons come running thorow the entries, with Torchies in their hands lighted, and ſwords vnſheathed, crying all out aloud; Arme, Arme, Sir Gouverneur, Arme; for a world of enemies are entred the Iſland, and we are vndone, if your ſkill and valour helpe vs not.

With

With this fury, noyſe and vprore, they came where *Sancho* was, aſtoniſht & embefeld with what he heard & ſaw: and when they came to him, one of them ſayd, Arme your ſelfe ſtrait, Sir, if you meane not to be deſtroyd, and that all the Iſland be loſt.

I arme my ſelfe (quoth *Sancho*?) Know I any thing vwhat belongs to Armes or Succours? twere better leaue theſe things to my Maſter *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, hee will diſpatch and put them in ſafety in an inſtant; for I (ſinner that I am) vnderſtand nothing of this quicke ſeruice. Ha, Sir Gouverneur, ſaid another, what faint-heartedneſſe is this? Arme your ſelfe, for here wee bring you Armes offeſſiue and deſenſiue. March to the Market-place, and be our Guide and Captaine, ſince you ought (being our Gouverneur) to be ſo. Arme mee on Gods Name (quoth *Sancho*.) And ſtrait they brought him two ſhields, of which they had good ſtore, and they clapt them vpon his ſhirt, without letting him take any other clothes; one they put before, and the other behinde, and they drew out his armes at certaine holes they had made, and bound him very well vwith cords, ſo that he was walled and boorded vp ſtraight like a ſpindle, not able to bend his knees, or to moue a ſtep. In his hands they put a Lance, on which hee leant to keepe himſelfe vp. When they had him thus, they bad him march, and guide them, and cheere them all; for that hee being their Lanthorne, North, and Morning ſtarre, their matters would be well ended. How ſhould I (wretch that I am) march, quoth *Sancho*? for my knee-bones will not mooue, ſince theſe boords that are ſo ſowed to my fleſh, doe hinder me: your onely way is to carry me in your armes, and to lay me a-thwart, or let me ſtand vp at ſome Poſterne, which I will make good, eyther with my Lance or my body. Fie, Sir, ſaid another, 'tis more your feare then the boords that hinder your pace; make an end for ſhame, and beſtir your ſelfe; for it is late, and the enemies increaſe, the cries are augmented, and the danger waxeth more and more. At whoſe perſwaſions & vitupery, the poore Gouverneur tried if he could mooue himſelfe: ſo he fell to the ground, and had ſuch a fall, that he thought he had broken himſelfe to pieces; and now hee lay like a Tortoiſe, ſhut in, and couered with his ſhell, or like a

A a 2

Flitch



Flitch of Bacon clapped betweene two boords, or like a Boate ouerturned vpon a flatte; and for all his fall, those scoffers had no compassion at all on him, but rather putting out their Torches, they began to re-enforce their cryes, and to reiterate their Arme, Arme, so fast running ouer poore *Sancho*, giuing him an infinite company of slashes vpon his Shields, that if he had not withdrawne himselfe, and shrunk his head vp into them, the poore Gouvernour had beene in wofull plight; who being thus shrugged vp in this strait, he was in a terrible sweat and be-raied, and recommended himselfe heartily to God Almighty to deliuer him from that danger. Some stumbled vpon him, others fell, and another would get vpon him for a good while, and from thence, as from a watch tower, gouerned the Army, and cried aloud, Heere on our side, heere the enemies are thickest: make this breach good, keepe that gate shut, downe with those ladders, wilde-fire balls, pitch and Rosin, and kettles of scalding Oyle: Trench the streets with beds; In fine, he named all manner of ware, instruments, and furniture of warre for the defence of a City assaulted: and the bruised *Sancho*, that heard and suffered all, said to himselfe, Oh that it would please the Lord that this Iland were once lost, or that I were dead or deliuered from this strait! Heauen heard his petition, and when he least expected, he heard this cry, Victory, Victory, the foes are vanquished. Ho, Sir Gouvernour, rise, rise, enioy the conquest, and diuide the spoyle that are taken from the enemies, by the valour of your inuincible arme.

Raise me, quoth the grieved *Sancho*, with a pittifull voyce. They helpe to raise him, and being vp, hee said; Euery enemy that I haue vanquished, naile him in my forehead: Ile diuide no spoyle of enemies, but desire some friend, if I haue any, to giue me a draught of wine, that may dry vp this sweat, for I am all water. They wiped him, brought him wine, and vnbound the Shields from him: he sat vpon his bedde, and vvith the very anguish of the sodaine fright, and his toyle, hee fell into a swoound; and they that playd that trick with him, were sorry it fell out so heauily: but *Sancho's* coming straight to himselfe, tempered their sorrow.

He

He asked them what a clocke it was? They answered him, it grew to be day.

Hee held his peace, and without more words, began to cloath himselfe, all buried in silence, and all beheld him, expecting what would bee the issue of his hasty dressing himselfe.

Thus by little and little, he made himselfe ready, for by reason of his wearinesse he could not doe it very fast, and so went toward the stable (all they that were there following him) and comming to Dapple, hee embraced and gaue him a louing kisse on the forehead, and not without teares in his eyes, sayd:

Come thou hither, companion mine and friend, fellow-partner of my labours and miseries; when I consorted with you, no other cares troubled me, then to mend thy furniture, and to sustain thy little corps: happy then were my houres, dayes, and yeeres: but since I left thee, and mounted on the towers of ambition and pride, a thousand miseries, a thousand toyles, foure thousand vnquietnesses haue entred my soule. And as hee vvvas thus discoursing, hee sitted on the pack-saddle, no body saying ought vnto him. Dapple being thus pack-saddled, with much adoe he got vpon him, and directing his speeches and reasons to the Steward, the Doctor and many others there present, he said,

Giue me roome, sirs, & leaue to return to my former liberty; let mee seeke my ancient life, to rise from this present death: I was not borne to be a Gouvernour, nor to defend Ilands nor Cities from enemies that would assault them: I can tell better how to plow, to digge, to prune, and plant Vineyards, then to giue Lawes, or defend Prouinces & Kingdomes; tis good sleeping in a wholeskinne: I meane, tis fit that euery man should exercise the Calling to which he was born: a Sickle is better in my hand, then a Gouvernours Scepter. I had rather fill my selfe with a good dish of *Gaspachos*, then be subiect to the misery of an impertinent Physician, that would kill me with hunger: I had rather solace my selfe vnder the shade of an Oake in Summer, and couer my selfe with a double sheepe-skinne in Winter quietly, then lay me downe to the subiection of a Government

Aa 3

in

in fine Holland sheets, and be clothed in Sables: fare you vvell Sir, and tel my Lord the Duke, Naked was I borne, naked I am, I neyther winne nor lose: I meane, I came without crosse to this Gouernment, and I goe from it without a crosse, contrary to what Gouernours of other Ilands are vsed to doe. Stand out of the way, and let me go, for I must seare-cloth my selfe; for I beleue all my ribs are bruised, I thanke the enemy that trampled ouer me all this night.

You shall not doe so, Sir Gouernour, quoth Doctor *Rezio*, for I will giue you a drinke good against falls and bruises, that shall straight recouer you: and touching your diet, I promise you to make amends, and you shall eat plentifully of what you list. Tis too late (quoth *Sancho*) Ile as soon tarry as turne Turke: these iests are not good the second time: you shall as soone get me to stay heere, or admit of any other Gouernment, (though it were presented in two platters to me) as make me flye to heauen without wings. I am of the lineage of the *Pansa's*, and vve are all head-strong, and if once wee cry odde, odde it must be (though it be euen) in spight of all the world. Heere in this stable let my Ants wings remaine that lifted me vp in the ayre, to be deuoured by Martlets and other birds, and now let's goe a plaine pace on the ground: and though wee weare no pinked Spanish-leather shoes, yet we shall not want course pack-thread Sandals. Like to like, quoth the Deuill to the Collier, and let euey man cut his measure according to his cloth, and so let mee goe, for it is late.

To which qd. the Steward, With a very good wil you should goe, though we shall be very sorry to lose you: for your iudgement and Chrillian proceeding oblige vs to desire your company: but you know, that all Gouernours are obliged, before they depart from the place which they haue gouerned, to render first an account of their place, which you ought to doe for the tenne daies you haue gouerned; and so Gods peace be with you.

No man can aske any account of me, said he, but hee whom my Lord the Duke will appoint; to him I goe, and to him Ile giue a fitting account: besides, I going from hence so bare as I doe, there can be no greater signe that I haue gouerned like an Angell.

I protest (quoth Doctor *Rezio*) the Grand *Sancho* hath a great deale of reason, and I am of opinion that we let him goe; for the Duke will be infinitely glad to see him. So all agreed, and let him goe, offering first to accompany him, and whatsoever he had need of for himselfe, or for the commodiousnesse of his Voyage.

*Sancho* told them, hee desired nothing but a little barley for Dapple, and halfe a Cheese and a loafe for himselfe; for that by reason of the shortnesse of the way, hee needed no other provision. All of them embraced him, and he with teares embraced them, and left them astonished, as well at his discourse, as his most resolute and discreet determination.

#### CHAP. LIV.

*That treats of matters concerning this History, and no other.*

**T**He Duke & Duchesse were resolved that *Don Quixote's* Challenge that hee made against their Vassall for the aforesaid cause, should go forward; & though the yong man were in Flanders, whither hee fled because hee would not haue *Donna Rodriguez* to his Mother in Law, yet they purposed to put a Gascoigne Lackey in his stead, which was called *Tosilos*, instructing him first very well in all that he had to doe.

Some two daies after, the Duke said to *Don Quixote*, that within foure daies his contrary would be present, and present himselfe in the field like an armed Knight, and maintaine that the Damozell lied in her throat, if she affirmed that he had promised her marriage. *Don Quixote* was much pleased with this newes, and promised to himselfe to worke miracles in this businesse, and he held it to be a speciall happinesse to him, that occasion was offered, wherein those Nobles might see how far the valor of his powerfull arme extended: and so with great iocundnesse and content, he expected the foure daies, which in the reckoning of his desire, seemed to him to bee foure hundred

**Ages.** Let we them passe (as we let passe diuers other matters) and come to the Grand *Sancho*, to accompany him, who betwixt mirth and mourning, vpon Dapple went to seeke out his Master, whose company pleased him more then to be Gouvernour of all the Ilands in the world.

It fell out so, that he hauing not gone very farre from the Iland of his Gouvernment (for he neuer stood to auerre vvwhether it were Iland, City, Village, or Towne which he gouerned) he saw that by the way he went, there came sixe Pilgrimes vvith their walking staues, your strangers that vse to beg almes singing, who when they came neere, beset him round, and raising their voyces all together, began to sing in their language, what *Sancho* could not vnderstand, except it were one word, which plainly signified Almes, which hee perceiued they begged in their song. And hee (as saith *Cid Hamete*) being very charitable, tooke halfe a Loafe, and halfe a Cheefe out of his wallet, of which he was provided, & gaue it them, telling them by signes he had nothing else to giue them: they receiued it very willingly, and said, *Guelte, Guelte*. I vnderstand you not what you would haue (good people) quoth *Sancho*. Then one of them took a purse out of his bosome, and shewed it to *Sancho*, whereby he vnderstood they asked him for money; but hee putting his thumbe to his throat, and his hand vpward, gaue them to vnderstand he had not a *Denier*; and spurring Dapple, he broke thorow them: and passing by, one of them looking wishly vpon him, layd hold on him, and casting his armes about his middle, with a loud voyce, and very good Spanish, sayd, God defend me, and what doe I see? is it possible I haue my deare friend in my armes, my honest neighbour *Sancho Panza*? Yes sure I haue, for I neyther sleepe, nor am drunke.

*Sancho* wondred to heare himselfe so called by his name, and to see himselfe embraced by a Pilgrime-stranger: and after hee had beheld him a good while, without speaking a word, and with much attention, yet he could neuer call him to minde: but the Pilgrime seeing his suspension, said,

How now, is it possible, Brother *Sancho Panza*, thou knowest not thy neighbour *Ricote* the *Morisco* Grocer of thy towne? Then

Then *Sancho* beheld him more earnestly, and began to remember his fauour, and finally knew him perfectly: and so without alighting from his Asse, hee cast his armes about his neck, and said, Who the Diuell, *Ricote*, could know thee, in this vizardly disguise? What's the matter? who hath made such a *Franchote* A word of of thee? and how darest thou returne back againe into Spaine? disgrace the where, if thou bee'st catcht or knowne, woe bee to thee? If thou reueale me not, *Sancho*, I am safe, quoth the Pilgrim: for in this disguise no body will know me: Come let's goe out of the high-way, into yonder Elme Grove, for there my companions meaneto dine, and repose themselves, and thou shalt eate with them, for they are very good people, and there I shall haue leisure to tell thee what hath befallne me, since I departed from our Towne, to obey his Maiesties Ediēt, which so rigorously threatened those vnfortunate ones of our Nation, as thou heard'st.

*Sancho* consented, and *Ricote* speaking to the rest of the Pilgrims, they went to the Elme Grove that appear'd: a pretty way distant from the High-way, they flung downe their Staues, and cast off their Pilgrims weeds, and so remained in Hose and Doublet: and all of them were yong, and handsome fellowes, except *Ricote*, who was well entred in yeceres: all of them had Wallets, which were (all to see to) well provided at least vvith incitatives that prouoked to drinke two miles off.

They sate vpon the ground, and making Table-clothes of the Grasse; they set vpon it, Bread, Salt, Kniues, Wal-nuts, slices of Cheefe, and cleane Gammon of Bacon-bones: vvwhich though they would not let themselves be gnawed, yet they forbade not to be sucked.

They set downe likewise a kinde of blacke meat, called *Caniary*, made of Fishes Egges; a great Alarum to the bottle, there wanted no Oliues, though they were dry without any Pickle; yet sauoury, and made vp a dish: but that which most flourisht in the field of that banquet was; sixe bottles of Wine, which each of them drew out of his Wallets; euen honest *Ricote* too, who had transformed himselfe from a *Morisco* into a *Germane*, or *Dutch-man*; hee drew out his, that for quantitie

title might compare with the whole fuc.

Thus they beganne to eate with great content; and very leifurely, relifhing euery bit which they tooke vpon a kniues point, and very little of euery thing: and straight all of them together would lift their armes and bottles vp into the ayre, putting their own mouthes to the Bottles mouthes, their eyes nailed in heauen, as if they had shot at it: and in this fashion mouing their heads from one side to the other, signes of their good liking of the Wine, they remained a good while, ftraining the entrailes of the Veffels in their ftomacks.

\* cum fueris  
Roma, &c.

b Swears in a  
broken lan-  
guage.

Sancho marked all, and was grieued at nothing; rather to fulfill the Prouerbe, that he very well knew, \* When thou goeft to Rome, &c. hee desired the Bottle of *Ricote*, and fo tooke his ayme as well as the reft, and with no leffe delight then they: thus the Bottles fuffered themfelues to be hoifted on end foure times: but it was not poffible the fift; for they were now as foakt and dry as a Mattereffe, which made their ioy hitherto shewne, now very muddy: now and then one of them would take *Sancho* by the right hand, and fay, Spaniard & Dutchman all one, *bon compagno*. And *Sancho* answered: *Bon compagno*, <sup>b</sup> iuro a di: and with that difchargeth fuch a laughter as lafted a long houre; not remembring as then ought that had befallne him in his Gouernment; for cares are wont to haue little Iurisdiction vpon leifure and idlenefle, whileft men are eating and drinking.

Finally, the ending of their Wine, was the beginning of a drowfinelfe that feyzed vpon them all, fo they euen fell to fleepe where they fet; only *Ricote* and *Sancho* watched it out, for they had eaten more, and drunke leffe: So *Ricote* taking *Sancho* apart, they fate at the foote of a Beech, leauing the Pilgrims buried in fweet fleepe, and *Ricote* without ftumbling a iot into his *Morifo* tongue, in pure *Caftillian* language, vttered to him this enfuing Difcourfe.

Thou well knoweft, O *Sancho Panfa*, friend and neighbour mine, how the Proclamation and Edict that his Maiefty commanded to be published againft thofe of my Nation, put vs all into a feare and fright, at leaft me it did: and mee thought, that before the time that was limited vs for our departure from

Spaine

Spaine; the very rigour of the penalty was executed vpon me, and my children.

I prouided therefore (in my iudgement wifely) as he which knowes that by fuch a time the houte he liues in fhall bee taken from him, and fo prouides himfelfe another againft hee is to change: I prouided, I fay, to leaue our towne, all alone without my Family, and to feeke fome place whither I might commodioufly carry them, and not in fuch a hurry as the reft that went. For I well faw, and fo did all our grauer fort, that thofe Proclamations were not onely threats, as fome faid: but true lawes to be put in execution at their due time: and I was enforced to beleue this truth; becaufe I knew the villanous, but foolifh attempts of our Nation: fuch, as me thought, it was a diuine infpiration that moued his Maiefty, to put fo braue a resolution in effect: not becaufe wee were all faulty; for fome there were firme and true Chriftians: but they were fo few, they could not be opposed to thofe that were otherwise: and it was not fit to nourifh a Serpent in his bofome, and to haue enemies within doores.

Finally, we were iuftly punifhed with the penalty of Banifhment, which feemed to fome foft and fweet; but to vs the terribleft that could be inflicted: wherefoeuer wee are, we weepe to thinke on Spaine: for indeed heere we were borne, and it is our naturall Countrey; wee no where finde the entertainment that our misfortune defires, and in *Barbary*, and all parts of *Africa*, where we thought to haue been receiued, entertained, and cherifhed; there it is where wee are moft offended, and mifufed: we knew not our happineffe till we loft it, and the defire we all haue to returne to Spaine is fo great, that the moft part of fuch (which are many) who fpeake the language, as I doe, returne hither againe, and leaue their Wiues and Children there forfaken: fo great is the loue they beare their Countrey, and now I know and finde by experience that the faying is true, Sweet is the loue of ones Countrey.

I went (as I fay) out of our towne, and came into France, and though there we were well entertained, yet I would fee it all; and fo paffed into Italy, and arriued in Germany; and there I found

found we might liue with more freedome; for the inhabitants doe not looke much into niceties, euery one liues as he pleaseth: for in the greatest part of it, there is libertie of conscience.

There I tooke a house in a Towne neere *Angusta*, and so ioyned with these Pilgrims, that vsually come for *Spaine*; many of them euery yeere to visit the Deuotions heere, which are their *Indies*, and certaine gaine, they trauell all the Kingdome ouer; and there is no towne from whence they goe not away with meat and drinke (as you would say) at least & sixe pence in money: and when they haue ended their Voyage, they goe away with a hundreth Crownes ouer-plus, which changed into Gold; eyther in the hollowes of their Staues, or the patches of their Weeds, or by some other slight they can, they carry out of the Kingdome, and passe into other Countreys, in spite of the Searchers of the dry Ports, where the money ought to be registred. And now, *Sancho*, my purpose is to carry away the Treasure that I left buried; for because it is without the Town, I may doe it without danger, and write from *Valencia*, to my Wife and Daughter that I know are in *Argiers*, and contriue how I may bring them to some Port of *France*, and from thence carry them into *Germany*, where we will expect how God will please to dispose of vs: for indeed, *Sancho*, I know certainly, that *Ricote* my Daughter, and *Francisca Ricote* my Wife are Catholike Christians: and though I bee not altogether so, yet I am more Christian then Moore; and my desire to God alwaies is, to open the eyes of my vnderstanding, and to let me know how I may serue him.

And all I admire, is, that my Wife and Daughter should rather go into *Barbarie*, then into *France*, where they might haue liued as Christians.

To which *Sancho* said, Look you, *Ricote*, perhaps they could not doe withall: for *Iohn Tyopeio* your wiues Brother carried them: and he (belike) as he was a ranke Moore, would go where he thought best, and I can tell you more, I thinke tis in vaine for you to seeke what you left hidden: for we had newes that your Brother in law & your Wife had many Pearls taken from them, and a great deale of gold which was not registred.

That

That may very well be, *Sancho*, quoth *Ricote*: but I know they touched not my treasure. For I would not tell them where it was hidden, as fearing some mis-hap; and therefore if thou wilt come vwith me, *Sancho*, and help me to take it out and conceale it, I'll giue thee two hundreth Crownes to the reliefe of thy necessities, for thou knowest, I know thou hast many.

Were I couetous (quoth *Sancho*) I would yeeld to this; and were I so, this morning I left an Office, which had I kept, I might haue made my house walles of gold, and within one fixe moneths haue eaten in siluer dishes: so that partly for this, and partly not to bee a Traitor to my King, in fauouring his enemies, I will not goe vwith thee, though thou wouldst giue mee foure hundreth Crownes.

And vwhat Office vvas that thou leftest *Sancho*, quoth *Ricote*?

I left to be Gouvernour of an Iland (quoth *Sancho*) and such a one, that yfaith in three Bow-shootes againe you shall scarce meet vwith such another.

And where is this Iland, said he? Where, quoth *Sancho*? Why, two Leagues off, and it is called the Iland *Barataria*.

Peace, *Sancho*, quoth *Ricote*: for your Ilands are out in the Sea, you haue no Ilands in the *Terra Firma*.

No, quoth *Sancho*? I tell you, friend, *Ricote*, this morning I left it; and yester day I gouerned in it at my pleasure like a *Sagittarius*: but yet I left it, as thinking the Gouvernours Office to be dangerous.

And what haue you gotten by it, quoth *Ricote*? I haue gotten (said he) this experience, that I am not fit to gouerne ought but a Herd of Cattel, and that in those kinde of Governments there is no wealth gotten, but with labour, toyle, losse of sleepe and sustenance: for in your Ilands your Gouvernours fare very ill; especially if they haue Phisicians that looke to their health.

I vnderstand thee not, *Sancho*, quoth *Ricote*: but me thinkes thou talkest without sense: for who would giue thee Ilands to gouerne? want there in the vworld more able men then thou to be Gouvernours? Peace, *Sancho*, and returne to thy vvits, and see if thou wilt goe with me, as I haue said, and help me take out the Treasure that I haue hidden, for it may very vvell bee called

called a Treasure; and I will giue thee sufficient to maintaine thee.

I haue told thee, *Ricote*, quoth *Sancho*, that I will not: let it suffice, I will not discouer thee, and goe on thy way, on Gods name, and leaue me to mine: for I know that vvhhat is vvell gotten, is lost; but what is ill gotten, it and the Owner too.

I vvill not be too earnest with thee, said hee: but tell mee, wast thou in our towne, vvhen my Wife, my Daughter, and my Brother in law departed? Marry was I (quoth *Sancho*) and I can tell you, your Daughter shewed so beautifull, that all the Towne went out to see her: and euery one said shee vvvas the fairest creature in the world: shee went weeping, and embraced all her friends and acquaintances, and as many as came to see her, and intreated all to recommend her to God, and this so feelingly, that shee made mee weepe, that am no Bel-weather: and yfaith many had a good minde to haue concealed her, and to take her away vpon the way: but feare of resisting the Kings commandement, made them abstaine: he that shewed himselfe most enamoured, was *Don Pedro Gregorio*, that Youth, the rich heyre that you know very well; he, they say, loued her very much, and since she went, vvvas neuer seene more in our Towne, and we all thought, hee followed to steale her away: but hitherto there is nothing knowne.

I alwayes suspected (quoth *Ricote*) that this Gentleman loued my Daughter: but being confident in *Ricote's* worth, it neuer troubled me, to know that he loued her well: for I am sure, *Sancho*, thou hast heard say, that *Morisca* women seldome or neuer for loue married with old Christians: and so my Daughter, who, as I belecue, rather tended her soules health then to bee enamoured, cared little for this rich heires solliciting.

God grant it, quoth *Sancho*: for it would be very ill for them both: and now, *Ricote*, let me goe from hence, for I meane this night to see my Master *Don Quixote*.

God be with thee, Brother *Sancho*: for now my companions are stirring and it is time to be on our way: and straight both of them tooke leaue; and *Sancho* gate vpon *Dapple*, and *Ricote* leant on his Pilgrims Staffe; and so both departed.

CHAP.

## CHAP. LV.

*Of matters that befell Sancho by the way, and others the best in the world.*

**S** *Ancho's* long stay with *Ricote* was the cause that he reached not that day to the Dukes Castle, though hee came within halfe a League of it, where the night tooke him, somewhat darke and close: but being Summer time, it troubled him not much, and therefore hee went out of the vvay, purposing to rest till the morning: but as ill lucke would haue it, hee and *Dapple* fell into a most darke and deepe pit, which was amongst certain ruinous buildings; and as he was falling, he recommended himselfe with al his heart to God, thinking he should not stop till hee came to Hell, but it fell out otherwise: for vvithin a little more then three fathoms length, *Dapple* felt ground, and he fate still vpon him without any hurt or damage receiued.

He felt all his body ouer, and held in his breath, to see if hee were sound, or pierced any where: but seeing himselfe vvell and whole, and in Catholike health, he thought hee could neuer praise God sufficiently for the fauour hee had done him: for he thought verily he had bin beaten into a thousand pieces he went likewise, groping with his hands about the walls of the pit to see if it were possible to get out without help, but he found them all smooth, without any place to lay hold on, which grieved him very much, especially when hee heard *Dapple* cry out tenderly and dolefully, and no maruell: for it was not for vvantonnes, he saw himselfe in a pitifull taking.

Alas, quoth *Sancho* then, and what sodaine and vnthought of accidents befall men that liue in this miserable world? vvho would haue supposed, that he, who yesterday saw himselfe enthronized Gournour of an Iland, commanding seruants and Vassals, should to day bee buried in a Pit, without any bodies help, without Seruant or Vassall comming to succour him?

Heere



Heere I and my Asse are like to perish with hunger, if so bee that first wee die not; he with his bruiſe, and I vvith grieſe and anguiſh: at least I ſhall not bee ſo happy, as my Maſter *Don Quixote* was, when hee deſcended and went downe into that enchanted Caue of *Monteſino's*, where hee found better welcome then if he had beene at his owne houſe; and it ſeemed hee found the cloth ready layd, and his bed made: there ſaw hee goodly and pleaſant Viſions; and heere (I beleue) I ſhall ſee nothing but Toads and Snakes: vnfortunate that I am, what is my madneſſe and folly come too? My bones will bee fetcht out from hence (when it ſhall pleaſe heauen that I am found) white and ſmooth, the fleſh pickt off, and my truſtie Dapples with them: wherevpon peradventure it ſhall bee knowne who weare, at least by thoſe that ſhall take notice, that *Sancho* and the Asſe neuer parted, nor the Asſe from *Sancho*. Again, I ſay, Vnhappy wee! our ill fortune would not, that wee ſhould dye in our Countrey, and amongſt our friends, where though our miſ-fortune had found no redreſſe; yet we ſhould not haue wanted pitie, and at laſt gaspe we ſhould haue had our eyes cloſed. Oh Companion mine and friend, how ill haue I rewarded thy honeſt ſeruice? Pardon me: and deſire Fortune in the beſt manner thou canſt, to deliuer vs from this miſerable royle in which we are both put: and I heere promiſe to ſet a Crowne of Lawrell on thy head, that thou ſhalt looke like a Poet Lawreat, and I will double thy Prouender-allowance.

Thus *Sancho* lamented, and his Asſe hearkened to him, without anſwering a word; ſuch was the ſtrait and anguiſh in which the poore Scab found himſelfe.

Finally, hauing paſſed ouer the whole night in complaints and lamentations, the day came on, with whoſe cleerenelle and ſplendor, *Sancho* ſaw that there was no maner of poſſibility to get out of that Well, without help, and he began to lament & make a noiſe to ſee if any body heard him: but all his crying out was as in a Deſart: for in all the Countrey round about, there vv as none to hearken to him; and then Dapple lay with his mouth open, and *Sancho* thought he had been dead: yet hee ſo handled the matter, that he ſet him vpon his legges, and taking a piece of bread

bread out of his Wallets (which had runne the ſame fortune with them) he gaue it his Asſe, which came not amiſſe to him; and *Sancho* ſaid to him, as if hee had vnderſtood it, Sorrowes great are leſſened with meate.

By this he diſcouered on the one ſide of the Pit a great hole, whereat a man might paſſe thorow, crooking and ſtooping a little. *Sancho* drew to it, and ſquatting down, entred in, and ſaw that within it, was large and ſpacious, and he might well diſcerne it: for by a place that you might call the rooſe, the Sun-beame entered in, that diſcouered it all: he ſaw likewiſe that it was enlarged by another ſpacious concavities: which when he ſaw, he turned backe againe to his Asſe, and with a ſtone began to pull downe the earth of the Hole, and in a little while made way for his Asſe to goe out, which he did, and *Sancho* leading him by the Halter, went forward along the Caue, to ſee if hee could finde any egreſſe on the other ſide; ſometimes he went darke-long and without light: but neuer without feare. Lord God, ſaid he, this, that to me is a miſfortune, were to my Maſter *Don Quixote* a famous Aduenture: he would think theſe profundities and Dungeons, were flowry Gardens, and *Galiana's* Palaces, and hee would hope to get out of this ſtraightneſſe and darkneſſe into ſome flowry field: but I vnfortunate, ill-aduiſed, and faint-hearted, thinke that euery moment I ſhall fall into a deeper profunditie then this former, that will ſwallow mee downe-right: Tis a good ill that comes alone. In this manner, and in this imagination he thought he had gone ſomewhat more then halfe a League; and at laſt he diſcouered a kinde of Twy-light, as if it had been day, & came in at ſome open place, which, ſeemed to open an entrance to another world.

Heere *Cid Hamete Benengeli* leaues him, and turnes againe to treat of *Don Quixote*, who, iocund and contented, expected the prefixed time, for the Combate hee was to performe with the diſhonourer of *Donna Rodriguez* Daughter, and thought to rectifie the wrong and vncouth turne ſhee had done her.

It fell out then, that going out one morning to exerciſe and praſtiſe againſt the traunce in which ere long hee was to ſee him-

himselfe; fetching vp *Rosinante* with a full Carrere, hee came close to a Caues mouth; that had he not reined him in hard, it had been impossible but he must haue falne into it.

Well, he llopt him, and fell not in: and comming somewhat neerer, without alighting, lookt into that depth, and beholding of it, heard a great noise within, and hearkening attentively, he might perceiue and vnderstand, that he that made it, cryed out, Ho, about there, is there any Christian that heares me? or any charitable Gentleman that will take pitie of a sinner buried aliue? of an vnhappy vngouern'd Gouvernour?

*Don Quixote* thought hee heard *Sancho Panfa's* voice, at which he was in suspence & affrighted: but raising his voice as high as he could, he said, Who is below there? who is that cryes out? Who should be here? or who should cry out, they answered, but the weather-beaten *Sancho Panfa* Gouvernour with a Pox to him, for his ill errantrie of the Iland *Barataria*, Squire sometime to the famous Knight, *Don Quixote de la Mancha*?

When *Don Quixote* heard this, his admiration was doubled, and his astonishment increased, as thinking *Sancho Panfa* might be dead, and that his soule was there doing penance: and carried with this imagination, he said, I coniure thee by all I may, as I am a Catholike Christian, that thou tell mee who thou art: and if thou beest a soule in penalty, tell mee what thou wilt haue mee doe for thee: for since my profession is to succour and help the needy of this world, it shall alwayes bee so to help and ayde the needie in another world, that cannot help themselves.

Then said they below, Belike, you that speake to me are my Master *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and by the Organ of your voice can be no other.

*Don Quixote* I am, quoth he, that both ayde the liuing and dead in their necessities. Therefore tell mee who thou art; for thou amazest me: for if thou be *Sancho Panfa* my Squire, and that being dead, the Diuel haue not seized on thee, and by Gods mercie thou be in Purgatory, our holy Mother the Catholike Romane Church hath sufficient suffrages, to deliuer thee from the paine thou endurest, and I with my wealth will sollicite

all

all that I can: and therefore make an end, and tell mee who thou art.

Gods me, by whose birth so euer you will, Signior *Don Quixote*: I sweare I am your Squire *Sancho Panfa*, and I neuer dyed in all my life; but that hauing left my Gouvernment for matters and causes that must be told more at leisure; ouer-night I fell into this Pit, where I lye and Dapple too, who will proue me to be no lyar: for he is heere with me: Will you any more? And it seemed, theiAsse vnderstood what *Sancho* said: for at the instant, hee began to bray so lowd, that all the Caue resounded.

A famous witnesse, quoth *Don Quixote*, I know this Bray, as if I had brought it forth, and I heare thy voice, my *Sancho*: Stay, and Ile goe to the Dukes Castle that is heere hard by: and I will get some to help thee out of this Pit, into which thy sins haue cast thee.

Goe, Sir (quoth *Sancho*) for Gods loue, and returne quickly: for I can no longer endure to be buried heere aliue, and I dye for feare. *Don Quixote* left him, and went to the Castle to let the Dukes know *Sancho's* mis-hap: at which they maruelled not a little, though they knew well enough how hee might fall in for the knowledge they had, time out of minde of that Vault: but they could not imagine how he had left his Gouvernment, they knowing nothing of his comming. Finally, they caused Ropes and Cables to be sent, & with much cost and labour of people, *Sancho* and Dapple were drawne out of that dismalnesse to the sunnes light. A Scholler saw him, and said, Thus should all bad Gouvernors come out of their Gouvernments, as this sinner doth out of this profound Abysme, pale dead for hunger, and (as I beleue) without a crosse to blesse him with.

*Sancho* heard him, and said, 'Tis eight or ten dayes, Goodman Murmur, since I began to gouerne the Iland; in all which I neuer eat bread that kept me from hunger one houre; in al that time Physicians haue persecuted mee, and enemies haue bruiised my bones: neither haue I had leisure to take bribes, or to recouer my due; which being so, I deserued not (in my opinion) to come out in this manner: but man purposeth, and God disposeth: and

B b 2

God

God best knowes what each man needeth: and let euery man fit himselfe to the times, and no man say, Ile drink no more of such a drinke: for where we thinke to fare well, there is oft ill vsage. God Almighty knowes my minde, 'tis enough, and I say no more, though I could. Be not angry, *Sancho*, nor vext with what thou hearest, for so thou shalt neuer be in quiet: come with a good conscience, let v<sup>m</sup> say what they will; for to bridle malicious tongues, is as much as to set gates in the High-way.

If a Gouvernour come rich from his Gouvernement, they say he hath played the Thiefe: and if poore, that he hath been a weak vnable Coxcombe.

I warrant you (quoth *Sancho*) this bout, they shall rather hold me to be a Cox-combe then a Thiefe. With this discourse they went toward the Castle hemmed in with many boyes, and other people; where the Duke and Duchesse were in certaine running Galleries, expecting *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*: who, before he would goe vp to see the Duke, would first accomodate Dapple in the Stable: for he said he had had a maruellous ill night on't at their lodging; and so straight he went vp to see his Lords, before whom vpon his knees, he said; I, my Lords, because your Greatnesses would needs haue it so, without any desert of mine, went to govern your Iland *Barataria*; into which, naked I entred, and naked come I out, I neither win nor lose, whether I gouerned well or ill, heere be witnesses present to say what they please: I haue resolued Doubts; sentenced Causes, and haue been ready to be starued; because Master Doctor *Pedro Rezio*, borne at *Tirten suera*, would haue it so, that Iland and Gouvernourish Physician; enemies set vpon vs by night: and hauing put vs in great danger, they of the Iland say that they were freed, and got the victorie, by the valour of my arme; such health God send them, as they tell truth herein.

In fine, I haue summed vp all the burdens and the cares that this gouerning brings with it, and finde by my account, that my shoulders cannot beare them; neither are they a weight for my ribbes, nor Arrowes for my quiner: and therefore, lest I should be cast away in my Gouvernement, I haue cast it away, and since yesterday morning I left the Iland as I found it, with the

same

same streets, houses, and rooves that it had when I came into it. I haue borrowed nothing of no body, nor hoorded vp any thing: and though I thought to haue made some profitable Ordinances, yet I did not, as fearing they would not be kept, which is as much as if they had neuer been made.

I left the Iland (as I say) without any bodies accompanying me, but Dapple: I fell into a Pic, went forward in it, vntill this morning by the Sunnes light I got out: but not so easily; for if heauen had not prouided mee my Master *Don Quixote*, there I had sticke till the end of the world.

So that my Lords, Duke and Duchesse, here is *Sancho Panza* your Gouvernour, that hath onely learnt to know in these ten daies that he hath gouern'd, that he cares not for gouerning, not an Iland, nay were it the whole world: this presupposed, kissing your Honour hands, imitating a boyes play, that cry, Leape thou, and then let me leape: So I leape from the Gouvernement, and passe againe to my Master *Don Quixotes* seruice: for in fine, though with him I cate my victuals sometimes in feare, yet I haue my belly full; and so that be, all's one to me, that it be with Carrets, or with Partridge. With this, *Sancho* ended his tedious discourse: *Don Quixote* fearing alwayes that he would blunder out a thousand fopperies: but seeing him end with so few, he thanked Heauen in his heart: and the Duke embraced *Sancho*, and said, He was sorry in his soule that he left the Gouvernement so quickly: but that he would cause some Office of lesse trouble, and more profit in his estate to be giuen him: the Duchesse likewise embraced him, and commanded hee should bee made much of, for he seemed to be much wearied, and to be worse entreated.

\* Like our Trusse or saile.

## CHAP. LVI.

*Of the unmercifull and neuer scene battel that passed betwixt Don Quixote and the Lackey Tosilos, in defence of the Matron Donna Rodriguez Daughter.*

**T**He Dukes repented them not of the iest that was put vpon *Sancho* in the Gouvernment which they gaue him; especially, because that very day their Steward came, and told them very punctually all the words and actions, that *Sancho* both did and said in that time: and finally, so describ'd the assault of the Iland, and so set out *Sancho's* feare, and his fallie, that they receiued no small delight.

After this, the History tels vs, that the day of the prefixed battaile came, and the Duke hauing oft instructed his Lackey *Tosilos* how he should behaue himselfe with *Don Quixote* to ouercome him, without killing or wounding him: hee gaue order that their Pikes should bee taken from their Lances, telling *Don Quixote*, that Christianitie (which he preferred) permitted not, that that battel should be with so much hazzard and danger of their liues: and that it was enough that he granted him free Lists in his Countrey, though it were against the Decree of the holy Councell, that prohibites such challenges; yet hee would not put that matter so strictly in execution.

*Don Quixote* bade his Excellency dispose of that business as he pleased, and that he would obey him in all.

The fearefull day being come, the Duke commanded that there should be a spacious Scaffold set vp in the place where the Iudges of the Lists might stand; and the Matron & her daughter the Plaintiffes.

There repaired a world of people, from all the townes, and neighbouring Villages, to see the noueltie of that battaile, who neuer saw, nor euer heard tell of the like in that Countrey; neither the liuing, nor those that were dead. The first that entred the field and Lists, was, the Master of the Ceremonies, vvhose measured out the ground, and passed all ouer it, that there might

might be no deceit, nor any hidden thing to make them stumble: or fall: by and by the women entred, and sat downe in their seates, with their mantles ouer their eyes and breasts, with shewes of no small resenting, *Don Quixote* present in the Lists.

A while after, the Grand Lackey *Tosilos*, appear'd on one side of the large place, accompanied with many Trumpets, and vpon a lusty Courser, sinking the very ground vnder him: his Visor was drawn, and he was all arraied in strong and shining Armor, his horse was *Frizeland*, well spred, of colour flea-bitten, each fet-locke hauing nine and twenty pound of wooll vpon it. The valiant Combatant came, well instructed by his Master, how he should demean himselfe with the valorous *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, aduertized that he should by no meanes kill him, but that he should strue to shunne the first encounter, to excuse the danger of his death which was certaine, if he met him full butte. He paced ouer the place, and coming where the Matron was, he stayed a while to behold her that demanded him for her husband. The Master of the Lists called *Don Quixote*, that had now presented himselfe in the place, & together with *Tosilos*: he spoke to the women, asking them, if they agreed that *Don Quixote de la Mancha* should vndertake their cause. They said, y, and that they allowed of all he should in that case performe, for firm and auailable.

By this the Duke and Duchesse were set in a Gallery, vvhich looked iust to the Lists, all which was couered with abundance of people, that expected to see the rigorous trance neuer scene.

The conditions of the Combatant was, That if *Don Quixote* ouercame his Contrary, he should marry with *Donna Rodriguez* daughter; and that if he were ouercome, his Contendor was freed from his promise giuen, and not tyed to any satisfaction. The Master of the Ceremonies diuided the Sunne betweene them, and set each of them in their places. The Drums strooke vp, and the sound of Trumpets filled the ayre, the earth shooke vnder them, and the hearts of the spectator troope, were in suspence, some fearing, others expecting the good or ill successe of this matter.

Finally, *Don Quixote* recommending himselfe heartily to God and his Mistresse *Dulcinea del Toboso*, stood looking when the precise signe of the encoûter shuld be giuen: but our Lackey was in another mind, he thought vpon what now I will tell you. It seemes, that as he stood looking vpon his enemy, she seemed to him to be the fairest woman in the world, and the little blind boy, whom vp and down the streets folke call *Lone*, would not lose the occasion offered, to triumph vpon a Lackey an soule, and to put it in the list of his Trophies: and so comming to him, faire and tofly, without any body perceiuing him, he clapped a slight two yards long into his left side, and strooke his heart thorow and thorow, and he might safely doe it; for *Lone* is inuisible, and goes in and out where he list, no body asking him any account of his actions. Let me tell you then, that when the signe of the on-set was giuen, our Lackey was transported, thinking on the beauty of her that hee had made mistresse of his liberty, and so he tooke no notice of the Trumpets sound, as did *Don Quixote*, who scarce heard it, when he set spurres, and with as full speed as *Rosinante* would permit, went against his enemy, & his good Squire *Sancho Panza*, seeing him depart, cryed out aloud, God guidethee, Creame and Flower of Knights Errant, God giue thee the victory, seeing thou hast right on thy side: and though *Tosilos* saw *Don Quixote* come toward him, yet hee moued not a whit from his place, but rather aloud called the Master of the Lists, who comming to see what he would haue, *Tosilos* said,

Sir, doth not this battell consist in my marrying, or not marrying with that Gentlewoman? Yes, it was answered him. Well then (quoth the Lackey) I am scrupulous of Conscience, which would much be burthened, if this battell should proceed: And therefore I say, I yeeld my selfe vanquished, and will marry this Gentlewoman presently.

The Master of the Lists wondred at *Tosilos* reasons; and as he was one of those that knew of the contriuing that businelle, could not answer him a word.

*Don Quixote* stopped in the midst of his Carere, seeing his enemy met not.

The

The Duke knew nothing why the Combat should not goe forward; but the Master of the Lists went to tel him what *Tosilos* said, at which he was in suspence, and extreemly cholericke.

Whilest this happened, *Tosilos* came where *Donna Rodriguez* was, and cried aloud, Mistresse, Ile marry your daughter, and therefore will neuer strue for that vvith suites and contentions, which I may haue peaceably, and without danger of death.

The valorous *Don Quixote* heard this, and sayd; Seeing 'tis so, and that I am loosed & free from my promise, let them marry on Gods name, and since God hath giuen her him, *S. Peter* blesse her.

The Duke now came down into the Place, and comming to *Tosilos*, said; Is it true, Knight, that you yeeld your selfe vanquished, and that instigated by your timorous Conscience, you will marry that maid? I, Sir, quoth *Tosilos*.

He doth very well, quoth *Sancho* then, for that thou wouldst giue the Moulse, giue the Cat, and he will free thee from trouble.

*Tosilos* began now to vnlace his Helmet, and desired them to help him apace, for his spirits & his breath failed him, & he could not endure to see himselfe so long shut vp in that narrow chamber. They vndid it apace, and now the Lackeyes face was plainly discovered. Which when *Donna Rodriguez* and her daughter saw, they cried out, saying, This is coozenage, this is coozenage: they haue put *Tosilos* my Lord the Dukes Lackey in stead of our true husband: Iustice from God and the King, for such malice, not to say, villany.

Griue not your selues, Ladies, quoth *Don Quixote*; for this is neyther malice nor villany, and if it be, the Duke is not in fault, but vilde Enchanters that persecute me: who enuying that I should get the glory of this conquest, haue conuerted the face of your Husband into this, which you say is the Dukes Lackey: take my counsell, & in spight of the malice of my enemies, marry him, for doubtlesse 'tis he that you desire to haue to husband.

The Duke that heard this, was ready to burst all his choller into laughter, and said; The things that happen to Signior *Don Quixote* are so extraordinary, that it makes me belieue this is not my Lackey: but let vs vse this slight and deuice, let vs defer the marri-

marriage onely one fiftene daies, and keepe this personage that holds vs in doubt, locked vp, in which perhaps he will returne to his pristine shape; for the rancor that Enchanters beare Signior *Don Quixote*, will not last so long, they gaining so little by these coozenages and transformations they vse.

O sir, quoth *Sancho*, these wicked Elues doe vsually change one thing into another in my Masters affaires: not long since they changed a Knight he conquer'd, called *The Knight of the Looking glasse*, into the shape of the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, borne in our towne, and our specfall friend, and they turned my Mistresse *Dulcinea del Toboso* into a rusticke clowne: and so I imagine this Lackey will liue and die so, all daies of his life.

To which (quoth *Rodriguez* daughter) Let him be who hee will that demands mee to wife (I thanke him) I had rather be lawfull wife to a Lackey, then a Paramour to be mocked by a Gentleman, though besides he that abused me is none.

The vpshot of all was, that *Tosilos* should be kept vp, till they saw what became of his transformation. All cried, *Don Quixote's* was the victory, and the most were sad and melancholy, to see that the expected Combatants had not beaten one another to pieces; as boyes are sad, when the party they looke for, comes not out to be hanged, when eyther the contrary, or the Iustice pardons him.

The people departed, and the Duke and the Duchesse returned, and *Don Quixote* with them to the Castle, *Tosilos* was shut vp, *Donna Rodriguez* and her daughter were most happy, to see that one way or other, that businesse should end in marriage, and *Tosilos* hoped no lesse.

## CHAP.

## CHAP. LVII.

*How Don Quixote tooke his leaue of the Duke, and what befell him with the witty wanton Altisidora, the Duchesses Damozell.*

NOW it seemed good to *Don Quixote*, to leaue the idle life hee had in the Castle, thinking it a great wrong to his person, to be shut vp, and lazy amongst so many delights and dainties as were offered to him as a Knight Errant by those Nobles, and he thought hee was to giue a strict account to Heauen for that idlenesse & retirement, and so asked licence one day of the Dukes to depart: which they gaue him, but seemed to be very sorrowfull that hee would leaue them. The Duchesse gaue *Sancho Panza* his wifes Letters, who wept in them, and said, Who would haue thought that such great hopes as the newes of my Government, engendred in my Wife *Teresa Panza's* brest, should stop in this, that I must return to my Master *Don Quixote's* dragged Aduētures? For al that, I am glad to see that my *Teresa* was like her selfe, by sending the Acorns to the Duchesse, which if she had not sent, I being sorry she had shewed her selfe vngratefull: my comfort is, that this kinde of Present could not be called a bribe; for I had my Government before she sent it, and tis very fit that they who receiue a benefit, though it be but in trifles, shew themselves thankfull. In effect, naked I came into the Government, & naked I goe out of it, and therefore I may say (which is no small matter) with a safe Conscience, Naked was I born, naked I am, I neyther win nor lose. This *Sancho* discoursed with himselfe at the time when he was to depart, & *Don Quixote* going out, (hauing taken his leaue the night before of the Dukes) one morning he presented himselfe all armed in the Castle Court, all the people of the house beheld him from the Galleries, and the Dukes too went out to see him. *Sancho* was vpon his Dapple, with his Wallets, his Cloak-bagge, and his Sumpter-prouision most frolicke; for the Dukes Steward, he that had bene *Trisaldis*, gaue him a purse with two hundred



hundred crownes in gold, to supply his wants by the way, and yet *Don Quixote* knew nothing of this.

Whilest all were thus beholding him, vnlookt for, amongst other Matrons and Damozells of the Duchesses, the witty and wanton *Alisidora* beheld him, and vvith a vyofull voyce said;

*Hearken, O thou wicked Knight,  
Hold a little backe thy reines;  
Doe not so bestirre the flanke,  
Of thy most ungouern'd beast.  
False, behold, thou fliest not  
From a Serpent that is fierce,  
No; but from a litle Lambe,  
Lacks not much of being a Sheepe.  
Horrid Monster, th' hast abused  
The most beauteous Damozell,  
That Diana in hills hath seene,  
Or Venus in woods beheld.  
Cruell Virenus, Aeneas fugitiue,  
Barabbas take thee, neuer maist thou thriue.*

*Thou carriest (Oh ill carrying)  
In thy wicked clutching pawes,  
Th' entrailes of an humble one,  
Tender and enamoured.  
Three night-caps hast thou borne hence,  
And a paire of garters too,  
That doe equall Marble pure,  
For their smoothnesse, white and blacke.  
Two thousand sighes thou bearest away,  
Which, were they but fire, they might  
Set on fire two thousand Troyes,  
(If two thousand Troyes there were.)*

Cruell

*Cruell Virenus, Aeneas fugitiue,  
Barabbas take thee, neuer maist thou thriue.*

*Of thy Squire that Sancho lie,  
May his entrailes be so tough,  
And so hard that Dulcinea  
a may not dis-enchanted be.  
For the fault that thou hast made,  
Let poore she the burden beare,  
For the iust, for wrongers doe  
Sometimes in my Countrey pay.  
Let thy best Aduentures all,  
Into mis-aduentures turne:  
All thy pleasure to a dreame,  
Firmenesse to forgetfulnesse.  
Cruell Virenus, Aeneas fugitiue,  
Barabbas take thee, neuer maist thou thriue.*

*Maist thou false accounted be,  
From Scuil to Marchena,  
From Granada vnto Loia,  
From a London to England.  
Whensoever thou plaist at Trumpe,  
At Primera, or at Saint,  
Neuer maist thou see a King,  
Aces, sevens fly from thee.  
If thou chance to cut thy Cornes,  
Maist thou wound till blood doe come:  
Also let the stumps remaine,  
If thou plucke out hollow teeth.  
Cruell Virenus, Aeneas fugitiue,  
Barabbas take thee, neuer maist thou thriue.*

Whil'st

<sup>a</sup> Though these Verses were made on purpose, to be absurd; yet sure the authoritie heere sell into the common absurditie, that I haue knowne many of his Countrey men doe, which is, that England is in London, and not Vice Versa.

hundred crownes in gold, to supply his wants by the way, and yet *Don Quixote* knew nothing of this.

Whilest all were thus beholding him, vnlookt for, amongst other Matrons and Damozells of the Duchesses, the witty and wanton *Alisidora* beheld him, and vvith a vyofull voyce said;

*Hearken, O thou wicked Knight,  
Hold a little backe thy reines;  
Doe not so bestirre the flanke,  
Of thy most ungouern'd beast.  
False, behold, thou fliest not  
From a Serpent that is fierce,  
No; but from a little Lambe,  
Lacks not much of being a Sheepe.  
Horrid Monster, th' hast abused  
The most beauteous Damozell,  
That Diana in hills hath seene,  
Or Venus in woods beheld.  
Cruell Virenus, Aeneas fugitiue,  
Barabbas take thee, neuer maist thou thriue.*

*Thou carriest (Oh ill carrying)  
In thy wicked clutching pawes,  
Th' entrailes of an humble one,  
Tender and enamoured.  
Three night-caps hast thou borne hence,  
And a paire of garters too,  
That doe equall Marble pure,  
For their smoothnesse, white and blacke.  
Two thousand sighes thou bearest away,  
Which, were they but fire, they might  
Set on fire two thousand Troyes,  
(If two thousand Troyes there were.)*

Cruell

*Cruell Virenus, Aeneas fugitiue,  
Barabbas take thee, neuer maist thou thriue.*

*Of thy Squire that Sancho he,  
May his entrailes be so tough,  
And so hard that Dulcinea  
a may not dis-enchanted be.  
For the fault that thou hast made,  
Let poore she the burden beare,  
For the iust, for wrongers doe  
Sometimes in my Countrey pay.  
Let thy best Adventures all,  
Into mis-adventures turne:  
All thy pleasure to a dreame,  
Firmenesse to forgetfulnesse.  
Cruell Virenus, Aeneas fugitiue,  
Barabbas take thee, neuer maist thou thriue.*

*Maist thou false accounted be,  
From Seuil to Marchena,  
From Granada vnto Loia,  
From London to England.  
Whensoever thou plaist at Trumpe,  
At Primera, or at Saint,  
Neuer maist thou see a King,  
Aces, seuens fly from thee.  
If thou chance to cut thy Cornes,  
Maist thou wound till blond doe come:  
Also let the stumps remaine,  
If thou plucke out hollow teeth.  
Cruell Virenus, Aeneas fugitiue,  
Barabbas take thee, neuer maist thou thriue.*

<sup>a</sup> Though these Verses were made on purpose, to be absurd; yet sure the authoritie heere sell into the common absurditie, that I haue knowne many of his Countrey men doe, which is, that England is in London, and not Vice Versa.

Whil' A

Whil't the grieved *Altisidora* thus lamented, *Don Quixote* beheld her, and without answering a word, turning to *Sancho*, he said; By thy fore-fathers liues, I coniure thee, my *Sancho*, that thou tell me one truth: tell me happily, hast thou the three Night-caps, and the Garters that this enamoured Damozell speakes of? To which, quoth *Sancho*, the three Caps I haue: but for your Garters, as sure as the Sea burnes.

The Duchesse wondred at *Altisidora's* looseness: for though shee held her to bee bold, witty, and wanton; yet shee neuer thought she would haue proceeded so farre: and knowing nothing of this iest, her admiration was the greater.

The Duke meant to second the sport, and therefore said, I doe not like it well, Sir Knight; that hauing receiued this good entertainment that hath been made you in my Castle, you should presume to carry away three Night-caps at least; if it were but only my Damozels Garters, 'tis a signe of a false heart, not futeable to your Honour, and therefore restore her Garters: if not, I challenge you to a mortall combat, and Ile not feare that your Eluifh Enchanters will trucke or change my face as they haue done my Lackey *Tosilos*, that was to haue fought with you.

God forbid (quoth *Don Quixote*) that I should vnscath my sword against your most Illustrious Person, from whom I haue receiued so many fauours. The Night-caps I will restore: for *Sancho* sayes he hath them; the Garters 'tis impossible, for neither he nor I receiued them: and if this your Damozell will looke into her corners, I warrant her she finds them. I, my Lord, was neuer Thiefe, nor neuer thinke I shall as long as I liue, if God forsake me not. This Damozell speakes (as shee please) as being enamoured on what I am not faulty of: and therefore I haue no reason to aske forgiuenesse, neither of her, nor your Excellency, whom I beseech to haue a better opinion of me: and againe, I desire your Licence to bee vpon my way.

God send you, Signior *Don Quixote*, quoth the Duchesse, so good a iourney, that wee may alwayes heare happy newes of your braue exploits, and so God be with you: for the longer you stay, the more you increase the flames in the Damozels hearts

hearts that behold you: and for mine, Ile punish her so, that hence forward she shall neither mis-behaue her selfe in looke or action. Heere me then but a word, oh valorous *Don Quixote*, (quoth *Altisidora*) which is, that I cry thee mercy for the theft of my garters; for in my soule and conscience I haue them on, and I haue false into the same carelesnesse of his, that looked for his Asse vhen he rode vpon him.

Did not I tell you, quoth *Sancho*, I am a fit Youth to con-ceale thefts? for had I beene so, I had in two bouts fit occasions in my Government.

*Don Quixote* inclined his head, and made an obeyfance to the Dukes and by-standers, and turning *Rosinantes* reines, *Sancho* following him on Dapple, he went out of the Castle, taking his way towards *Saragosa*.

## CHAP. LVIII.

*Of Adventures that came so thicke and three-fold on Don Quixote, that they gaue no respite one to the other.*

**W**Hen *Don Quixote* saw himselfe in open field, free and vn-cumbred from *Altisidora's* wooing, hee thought himselfe in his Center, and that his spirits were renewed, to prosecute his new proiect of Chiuallrie; and turning to *Sancho*, said;

Liberty, *Sancho*, is one of the preciousst gifts that heauen hath giuen men, the treasure that the earth en-closeth, and the Sea hides, cannot be equalized to it. Life ought to be hazarded, as well for liberty, as for a mans honor; and by the contrary, Capti-uity is the greatest euil that can befall men. This I tell thee, *Sancho*, because thou hast well obserued the cheere and plenty wee haue had in the Castle we left. Well, in the midst of those sa- uoury banquets, and those drinckes cooled with snow, me thought I was straitned with hunger; for I enioyed nothing with the liberty I should haue done, had it beene mine owne; for the obligations of recompencing benefits and fauours recei-ued,

ued, are eyes that curbe a free minde. Happy that man, to whom heauen hath giuen a piece of bread, without obligation to thank any else, but heauen alone.

For all that (quoth *Sancho*) tis not fit for vs to be vnthankfull for two hundred Crowns that we haue receiued in gold, which the Dukes Steward gaue me in a purse, which I carry as a comforting Cordiall next my heart for what may fall out; for wee shall not alwaies finde Castles where we shall be much made on; sometimes wee shall meete with Inns, where wee shall bee cudgelled.

In these and such like discourses went the Errants on, Knight and Squire, when they saw (hauing gone about halfe a league) vpon the grasse of a greene meadow, some dozen men, with their cloakes spred at dinner, clad like husbandmen; somewhat neere them, they had, as it were, white sheetes, with which they couered something vnderneath: they were set vp-right, & stretcht at length, and put a pretty distance one from another.

*Don Quixote* came to those that were eating, and saluting them first courteously, he asked them what was vnder that linnen? One of them answered him, Sir, vnder this linnen there be certaine Images of Embossed worke in wood, which must serue in a shew we make in our village: we carry them couered, that they may not be sullied, and on our shoulders, that they be not broken. If you please (quoth *Don Quixote*) I should be glad to see them; for Images carried so charily, doubtlesse are good ones. Good (quoth one) if they be not, let their price speake, for there is none of them but cost fifty Ducats; and that you may see tis true, pray stay, and you shall see it with your eyes: and rising, hee left his dinner, and went to vncouer the first Image, which shewed to be Saint *George* on horsebacke, with a winding Serpent at his feet, and his Lance runne thorow the throat of it, with the fiercenesse he vseth to be painted with: all the Images seemed to be of pure gold. And *Don Quixote* seeing it, said, This Knight was one of the best Errants that the diuine Warre-fare had, his name was Saint *George*, and he was a vvonderfull defender of Damozels. Let's see this next. The man discovered it, and it seemed to be Saint *Martin* on Horse-backe, that

that diuided his cloake with the poore man, and *Don Quixote* no sooner saw it, but he said, This Knight also was one of our Christian Aduenturers, and I belieue he was more liberall then valiant, as thou maist see, *Sancho*, by his diuiding his cloake, and giuing the poore man halfe, and doubtlesse it was then Winter; for had it beene Summer, he would haue giuen him all, hee was so charitable.

Not so, quoth *Sancho*, but he stucke to the Prouerb, To giue and to haue, doth a braine craue.

*Don Quixote* laughed, and desired them to take away another piece of linnen, vnder which was the Image of the Patrone of Spaine on Horse-backe, his sword bloudied, trampling on Moores, and treading on heads: and *Don Quixote* seeing it, said, I marry, Sir, heere's a Knight indeed, one of Christs Squadrons, this is called *Don Saint Diego*, Moore-killer, one of the valiantest Saints and Knights in the world, then, or in heauen now. Then they discovered another piece, which shewed Saint *Paul* his falling from his horse, with all the circumstances vsually painted in the Table of his Conuersion: when he saw him so liuely, as if you would say, Christ were then speaking to him, & *Paul* answering, he said, This was the greatest enemy that the Church of God had in a long time, and the greatest Defender that euer it shall haue, a Knight Errant in his life-time, and a quiet Saint in his death, a restless labourer in the Vineyard of the Lord, a Doctor of Nations, whose schoole was Heauen, and Christ himselfe his Reader and Instructor. Now there were no more Images: and so *Don Quixote* commanded them to couer them again, and said to those that carried them, I hold it for a propitious signe, Brethren, to haue seene what I haue seene: for those Saints & Knights were of my profession, which is, to exercise Armes; onely the difference betweene them and me is, that they vv ere Saints, and fought Diuinely; I am a sinner, and fight humanely. They conquer'd heauen by force of their Armes (for heauen suffers force) and hitherto I know not what I conquer by the force of my sufferings: but if my *Dulcinea del Toboso* be once free from hers, my Fortune bettering it selfe, and my iudgement repaired, perhaps I might take a better course then I doe.

God grant, and Sinne be deafe, quoth *Sancho*, strait.

The men wondred as well at *Don Quixotes* shape, as his discourse, and vnderstood not one halfe, what it meant. They ended their dinner, and got vp their Images, and taking leaue of *Don Quixote*, they went on their way. *Sancho* admired afresh, as if he had neuer knowne his Master, at his knowledge, thinking there was no History in the world, or Accident, that he had not ciphered vpon his nayle, and nailed in his memory, & said, Truly (Master mine) if this that hath befallne vs to day may be called an Aduenture, it hath beene one of the most delicious sweetest, that in all our peregrination hath befallne vs; for wee are come out of it, without blowes or affrightment, or laying hands to our swords, or without beating the earth with our bodies, or being hungry: God be thanked that he hath let me see this vvith these eyes of mine.

Thou sayest well, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) but thou must know, the times are not alwaies alike, nor run on in one fashion, and that which the vulgar commonly calls Bodings, which are not grounded vpon any naturall reason, ought to be held, and reputed, and iudged by a wise man for good lucke. One of your Wizards riseth in a morning, goes out of his house, meetes with a Frier of the blessed Order of *S. Francis*, and as if he had met with a Griffin, turnes his backe, and runs home againe. Tother *Mendoza*, hee spils the salt on the Table, and strait hath a melancholy sprinkled all ouer his heart, as if Nature were bound to shew signes of ensuing mis-chances, with things of so small moment as the aforesaid: The discreet Christians ought not to stand vpon points, or to looke into the doings of heaven. *Scipio* comes into Africa, and leaping on shore, he stumbles; his Souldiers hold it for an ill signe: but he embracing the ground, said, Thou canst not flye from me, Africa, for I have fast hold on thee in mine Armes. So that *Sancho*, the meeting with these Images hath beene a most happy successe to me.

I believe you (quoth *Sancho*) and pray tell me the cause why we Spaniards cry, Saint *Iaques*, and shut Spaine? is Spaine open troe, so that it needed be shut? or what ceremony is this?

Thou art most simple, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, & looke;

This

This Grand Knight with the red Crosse, God hath giuen him to Spaine for a Patron and Protector, especially in the hard conflicts that the Moores and we had together; and therefore they inuoke and call on him as their Protector in all their battels they giue, and many times they haue visibly seene him in them, overthrowing, trampling, destroying & killing Agaren Squadrons. Many examples could I produce to confirme this, out of the true Spanish Histories.

*Sancho* changed his discourse, and said to his Master, Sir, I do wonder at the loosenesse of *Altisidora*, the Duchesses Damozell; that same fellow called Loue, hath brauely wounded and runne her thorow; they say he is a little blinde boy, that though he be bleare-eyed, or to say truer, blinde; takes the least heart for his mark, & hits it, and pierceth it with his Flight from one side to the other. I haue also heard say, that in the modesty & warinesse of Damozels, his amorous arrows are headlesse & dull: but in this *Altisidora*, it seemes they are rather whetted, then dull. Looke you, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, Loue hath no respect or limit in his dealing, and hath the same condition vvith Death, that as well sets vpon the high Palaces of Kings, as the low Cottages of Shepherds, and when hee takes entire possession of a soule, the first thing he does, is to banish shame, without which, *Altisidora* declared her desires, that rather engendred in my brest confusion then pittie.

Notable cruelty, (quoth *Sancho*) vnheard-of thanklesnesse! I know for my part, that the least amorous reason of hers, would haue humbled and made me her vassall; ah whoore-son, what a heart of marble, entrailles of brasle, and soule of rough-cast had you? but I cannot imagine what this Damiozell saw in you, that should so vanquish her? what Gallantry? what courage? what conceit? what countenance? which of these alone, or all together enamoured her? for truly, truly, I behold you many times from head to foot, and I see more in you to affright, then to enamour: and hauing also heard say, that beauty is the first and principall part that doth enamour, you hauing none, I know not on what the poore soule was enamoured.

Marke, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) there be two kindes

C c 2

of

of beauty, one of the minde, the other of the body; that of the minde doth march, and is seene in the vnderstanding, in honesty, in good proceeding, in liberality, in being well-bredde: and all these qualities are vntamed, and may be in an ill-fauoured man; and when the choyce is set vpon this beauty, and not vpon that of the body, it causeth loue with more force and aduantage. I see, *Sancho*, that I am not lonely, and yet I know too I am not deformed, and it is enough for an honest man, if he be not a monster, to be beloued, so I haue the portions of the minde I haue told thee of.

In these reasons and discourses they went; entring in a wood that was out of the way, and sodainely, before they were aware, *Don Quixote* found himselfe entangled in nets of greene thread, that were set from one tree to another; and not imagining what it might be, he said to *Sancho*, Mee thinkes, *Sancho*, this Aduenture of these Nets is one of the strangest that may be imagined; hang me, if the Enchanters that persecute me, meane not to intangle me in them, and to stop my way, in reuenge of the rigour I haue vsed toward *Alisidora*. Well, let them know that these Nets, were they of hardest Diamonds, as they are of green thred; or stronger then that the iealous god of the Black-Smiths entangled *Venus* and *Mars* with, I would breake it, as if it were bull-rushes or yarne: and struing to get forward, suddenly two most beautifull Shepheardesses comming from out the Thicket, appear'd before him; two, at least, attired like Shepheardesses, onely their loose Iackets & Coats were of fine cloth of gold, I say, their Kirtles were of Tissue; their haire hung loose ouer their shoulders, that for golden, might compare with the Sunne-beames: they were crowned with two Garlands woven with greene Bayes, and red-Flower gentle: their ages seemed to be not vnder fiftene, nor past eightene.

This was a sight that astonisht *Sancho*, suspended *Don Quixote*, made the Sunne stop in his Careere to behold them, and held all the foure in maruellous silence. In fine, the first that spake, was one of the Shepheardesses, that said to *Don Quixote*, Hold, Gentlemen, and breake not our Nets, that are spread there not to your hurt, but for our recreation; and be-  
cause

cause I know you will aske vs why they are so put, and who we are, I will tell you briefly.

In a village some two leagues hence, where there are many Gentlemen of quality, and rich; amongst many acquaintances and kindred it was agreed, that the wiues, sonnes and daughters, neighbours, friends and kinsfolke, should ioine to make merry in this place, which is one of the pleasantest heere round about, forming as it were amongst vs, a new and Pastorall Arcadia, clothing the maides like Shepheardesses, and the young men like Shepheards: two Eglogues we haue studied, one of the famous Poet *Garfiasso*, and the other of that most excellent Poet *Camoës* in his own Mother Portugall Tongue, which hitherto we haue not repeated. Yesterday was the first day we came hither, wee haue our Tents, called Field-Tents, pitched amongst these trees, close by the brinke of a goodly running brooke, which fructifies all these medowes: last night wee did spread our nets on these trees, to catch the poore birds, that being allured with our call, should fall into them. If you please, Sir, to be our ghest, you shall be entertained liberally and courteously; for now into this place comes neyther sorrow nor melancholy. With this she was silent and said no more.

To which *Don Quixote* answered; Truly, (fairest Lady) *Alceon* was not more astonisht or in suspence, when on the sodaine hee saw *Diana* bathing her selfe in the fountaine, then I haue beene in beholding your beauty: I commend the manner of your pastime, and thanke you for your kinde offers, and if I may serue you, so I may be sure you will be obeyed, you may command me; for my profession is this, to shew my self thankful, and a doer of good to all sorts of people, especially of the ranke that your person shewes you to be; and if those Nets, as they take vp but a little peece of ground, should take vp the whole world, I would seeke out new worlds to passe thorow, rather then breake them: and that you may giue credit to this my exaggeration, behold, at least he that promisetht you this, is *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, if haply this name hath come to your hearing.

Ah sweet friend (quoth the other Shepheardesse) what good  
C c 3 lucke



lucke is this? See'st thou this Gentleman before vs? Well, let me tell thee, he is the valiantest, the most enamoured, and the most courteous in the world, if the History lye not and deceiue vs, which is in print, of his famous exploits which I haue read: I hold a wager this honest fellow heere with him is, what-call ye him? *Sancho Panza* his Squire, that hath no fellow for his mirth.

'Tis true (quoth *Sancho*) I am that merry fellow, and that Squire you speake of, and this Gentleman is my Master, the very selfe-same *Don Quixote* aforesaid and Historified.

Ah, quoth the other, let vs intreat him, friend, to stay vvith vs, for our friends and kindred will be infinitely glad of it, and I haue heard tell as well as thou, of his worth and wit; and aboue all, they say of him, that he is the firmest and loyallest Amourist that is knowne, and that his Mistresse is one *Dulcinea del Toboso*, that beares the prize from all the beauties in Spaine.

With iust reason she doth, quoth *Don Quixote*, if so be your matchlesse beauties put it not in controuersie: Weary not your selues, Ladies, in detaining me; for the precise ties of my profession will let me rest no where.

By this there came a brother of one of the Shepheardesses, where the foure were as braue & gallant as they: they told him, that he which was vvith them, was the valorous *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and the other *Sancho* his Squire, of whom he had notice, as hauing read his History.

The gallant Shepheard saluted him, desiring him to come vvith him to their Tents. *Don Quixote* was forced to consent, which he did. And now the Nets were drawne, and filled vvith diuers little birds, who deceiued vvith the color of them, fell into the danger they shun'd: there met in that place aboue thirty persons, all gallantly clad like Shepheards & Shepheardesses; and instantly they were made to know vvho *Don Quixote* was, and his Squire; at vvich they were not a little contented; for they had notice of him by his history: they came to the Tents, and found the Tables couered, rich, abundant, and neate: they honour'd *Don Quixote* vvith the chiefe seate; all of them beheld him, and admir'd to see him.

Finally,

Finally, the cloth beeing taken away, *Don Quixote* very grauely lifted vp his voice, and said, Amongst the greatest sins there are committed (though some say Pride) yet I say, ingratitude is one, holding my selfe to the vsuall saying, That Hell is full of the vngratefull. This sinne, as much as possible I could, I haue sought to auoid euer since I had reason: and if I cannot repay one good turne vvith another, in stead of that, my desires are not wanting, and vvhen they suffice not, I publish them: for hee that acknowledgeth and publisheth good turnes receiued, vvould also recompence them vvith others, if he could: for, for the most part, they that receiue, are inferiour to those that giue, and so God is aboue all; because hee is giuer aboue all, and the gifts of men cannot be equal to Gods for the infinite difference betvvixt them: and this straightnesse & barenes doth in some measure supply a thankfulness; I therefore beeing thankfull for the kindness I haue heere receiued, and not able to correspond in the same proportion, containing my selfe in the narrow limits of my ability, offer vvhat I may, and vvhat I haue from my Haruest: and therefore I say, that I vvill for two long dayes maintaine in midst of the Kings high-way toward *Saragosa*, that these Ladyes, counterfet Shepheardesses heere present, are the fairest and most courteous Damaozels in the world, excepting onely the peerlesse *Dulcinea del Toboso* sole Mistresse of my thoughts, vvith peace be it spoken to as many both hees and shees as heere me.

Which vvhen *Sancho* heard, that had attentiuely listned, crying out, he said, Is it possible there can bee any body in the world, that dares say or sweare that this Master of mine is mad? Pray speake: You Gentlemen Shepheards, is there any Countrey Vicar, be he neuer so wise, or neuer so good a Scholler, that can say vvhat my Master hath said? or is there any Knight Errant, let him be neuer so much fam'd for his valour, that can offer vvhat my Master hath heere offered?

*Don Quixote* turned to *Sancho*, and all enflamed and cholericke, said, Is it possible, O *Sancho*, that there is any body in the world that vvill say, Thou art not a Coxcombe, lined vvith the same, and hemmed vvith I know not vvhat malice or knauery?

C c 4

Whe

Who bids thee meddle with my matters, in sifting out, whether I be wise or a iolt-head? Peace and not a word, but saddle *Rosinante*, if he be unsaddled, and let's put my offer in execution: for with the iustice that I haue on my side, thou maist presume; as many as I meet withall, are vanquished: and so with great fury, and in a terrible huffe hee rose from his Chayre, leauing all the by-standers in admiration, and in doubt whether they should hold him madde, or wise. Finally, they perswaded him, he should not thrust himselfe into such an engagement: for they acknowledged his thankfull goodwill, and that there needed no new demonstrations to know his valourous minde: for his exploits mentioned in his History were sufficient.

For all that, *Don Quixote* proceeded in his purpose, and mounted on *Rosinante*, buckling his shield to him, and taking his Launce, he got to the high-way, not farre from the greene Meddow. *Sancho* followed him vpon *Dapple*, with all the Pastorall flocke, desirous to see what might be the issue of that arrogant, and neuer scene offer.

*Don Quixote* being (as I haue said) vpon the way, he wounded the ayre with these words: Oh you Passengers, and way-faring Knights, Squires on foot, or on horseback, that either now passe this way, or are to passe in these two ensuing dayes, know, that *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, Knight Errant, is here ready to maintaine, that setting the beauty of the Mistris of my soule aside, *Dulcinea del Toboso*, the Nymphs that inhabit these Meddowes and Groues, are the fairest that may be: and he that is of a contrarie opinion, let him come; for heere I expect him.

Twice he repeated these selfe-same words, and twice they were not heard by any Aduenturer: but his good lucke that directed his affaires better and better, so ordained, that a pretty while after, they might see a troope of horse-men vpon the way, and many of them with Lances in their hands, all of them going in a heape together, and apace: they that were with *Don Quixote*, as soone as euer they saw them, turn'd their backs, and got farre enough out of the way: for they knew if they stayed, they might be in some danger, onely *Don Quixote* with an vndaunted heart stood still; and *Sancho Panza* warded himselfe vvith *Rosinante's* buttocks.

The

The troope of the Lances came on, and one that was formost cryed out aloud to *Don Quixote*, saying, Out of the way, mad-man: for these Bulls will beate thee to pieces.

Goe to, ye skoundrels, quoth *Don Quixote*, your Bulls shall not preuaile with me, though they were the fiercest that *Xurama* hath feeding on his Bankes: Confesse, ye Elues, all in one, that what I haue proclaimed heere, is a truth, or else come and combat with me.

The Heards-man had no leisure to answer, nor *Don Quixote* to get out of the way, though he would: and so the troope of wilde Bulls, together with the tame Kine, and the multitude of Heards-men, and others, that carried them to bee kept vp in a towne, where they were the next day to bee baited, trampled ouer *Don Quixote*, *Sancho*, *Rosinante* and *Dapple*, tumbling them all downe vpon the ground.

*Sancho* was bruised, *Don Quixote* astonisht, *Dapple* banded, and *Rosinante* not very Catholike: but in fine all of them gat vp, and *Don Quixote* in all haste, sometimes stumbling, otherwhiles falling, began to runne after the whole Herd, crying aloud, Hold, Stay, ye Eluish crue; for one onely Knight expects you, who is not of that minde or opinion of those that say, To a flying enemy a siluer bridge. But the hasty runners stayed neuer a whit the more for this; nor made any reckoning of his threats more then of last yeeres clouds.

*Don Quixote* being weary stayed him. So, fuller of anger then reuenge, he sate in the way, expecting when *Sancho*, *Rosinante*, and *Dapple* should arrive. At length they came, and Master and man gat vp; and without leaue taking of the fained or counterfet *Arcadia*, with more shame then delight, they went onward their way.

## CHAP. LIX.

*Of an extraordinarie accident that befell Don Quixote ;  
which may be held for an Adventure.*

**T**He dust and wearinesse that *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* received from the vnmannery Bulls, was recompenced with a cleere and running Fountaine, which they found in a coole Groue, on whose Margen leauing *Rosinante* and Dapple loose without a bridle or Halter, the two way-beaten, Master and Man fate downe. *Sancho* repaired to the Cup-boord of his Wallers, and tooke out of them that which he called his sawce, and rensed his mouth: *Don Quixote* washt his face, with which refreshing his faint spirits, recovered breath.

*Don Quixote* ate nothing for pure grieve, neither durst *Sancho* touch any meate before him for pure mannerlinesse, and expected his Master should first bee his Taster: but seeing him carried on with his imaginations, not remembring to put a bit in his mouth, he neuer asked him: and ouer-running all kinde of manners, hee began to barrell vp all the Bread and Cheefe that was before him in his stomacke.

Eate, friend *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, hold life together; for thou hast more need then I, and leaue mee to dye by the hands of my sorrowes, and the force of my mis-fortunes. I was borne, *Sancho*, to liue dying, and thou, to dye eating: and that thou maist see I tell thee true; consider me printed in Histories, famous in Armes, well nurtured in mine Actions, respected by Princes, courted by Damozels: now at the end of all, when I hoped for Bayes, Triumphs and Crownes layd vp and merited by my famous exploits: this morning I haue seene my selfe trampled on and kicked, and bruised with the feet of base vncleane Beasts: the consideration of this duls my teeth, makes slow my grinders, and benummes my hands, and altogether bereaues me of my appetite; so that I thinke I shall dye with hunger, the cruellest of all deaths.

Se

So that, quoth *Sancho* (not leauing his fast chewing) you will not allow of that Prouerbe that sayes, Let *Martha* dye, so shee dye not empty: at least, I will not be cause of my death. I meane rather to doe as the Shoemaker doth, that stretcheth the Leather with his teeth, till he makes it reach as he list; He draw out my life by eating, till it come to the end that Heauen hath allotted it: and know, Sir, there is no greater madnesse in the world, then to despaire as you doe: and beleeue me, and after you haue eaten, rest your selfe a little vpon the Downe-beds of this greene grasse, and you shall see, that when you wake, you shall finde your selfe somewhat lightned.

*Don Quixote* tooke his counsell, taking his reasons to be rather Philosophicall, then senselesse, and said, If thou, O *Sancho*, wouldest doe, what I shall now tell thee for me, my lightsomenesse would be certaine, and my sorrowes not so great; which is, that whilst I (obeying thy counsell) sleepe, thou goe out of the way a litle, and with *Rosinantes* reines, turning thy flesh to the ayre, giue thy selfe three or foure hundred lashes vpon account of the three thousand, and so many that thou art to giue for the dis-enchanting *Dulcinea*, which is no small pitie, that that poore Lady should be enchanted by thy carelesnesse and negligence.

There is much to be said in this businesse (quoth *Sancho*) let's both sleepe now, and God will prouide afterward: Know, Sir, that this whipping in cold blood, is a cruell thing, especially, if it light vpon a weake body and worse fed; let my Lady *Dulcinea* haue patience, for when she least thinkes of it, shee shall see me a very sieue with lashes, and till death all is life, I meane, I liue with a desire to fulfill my promise.

*Don Quixote* giuing him thankes, ate something, and *Sancho* a great deale, leauing the two continuall friends and companions, *Rosinante* and Dapple to their *liberum arbitrium*, disorderly feeding vpon the pasture that was plentiful in that Meddow.

They awaked somewhat late, and vp they got againe, and went on their way, making haste to come to an Inne, vvhich seemed to be about a League off: I say an Inne; for *Don Quixote* called

called it so, contrary to his ordinary custom of calling all Innes Cattles. Well, so it they come, they asked mine Oast, if there were any lodging. Hee answered, Yes, with all the commodi-ousnesse and prouision that they might haue in the Towne of *Saragosa*.

They alighted, and *Sancho* retired with his Sumptry into a Chamber of which the Oast gaue him the Key: the Beasts hee carried to the Stable, and gaue them their stint, and so went to see what *Don Quixote* (who sat by vpon a Bench) would comānd him, giuing God particular thanks, that that Inne had not appeared to him a Cattle.

Supper time came on: so to their resting place they got.

*Sancho* asked mine Oast what he had for Supper? To which quoth he, Your mouth shall haue measure, aske what you will? a for from the Birds of the ayre, to the Poultry of the earth, and the fishes of the Sea, that Inne was prouided.

Not so much, quoth *Sancho*, for so we may haue a couple of roasted Chickens, 'twill be enough: for my Master is weake stomack, and eates little, and I am no very greedy-gut.

Mine Oast answered him, he had no Chickens, for the Kites had deuoured them. Why then let's haue a tender Pullet roasted, quoth he. A Pullet? My father as soone: trust me, trust mee, I sent aboute fiftie yellerday to the Citie to sell: sauing Pullets aske what you will.

Why then, quoth *Sancho*, you want no Veale, or Kid? We haue none in the house now, said my Oast, for it is all spent: but by next weeke we shall haue to spare.

The matter is mended (quoth *Sancho*.) I hold a wager all these wants are supplide with Egges and Bacon.

Assuredly (quoth mine Oast) here's fine doings with my ghest; I haue told him, we haue neither Pullet nor Hens, and yet he would haue Egges. Run, if you will, to other dainties, and leaue these gluttonies.

Resolue vs (Body of me, quoth *Sancho*) and tell me what we shall haue, and leaue you your running, mine Oast. The Oast said, The very truth is, I haue two Neats-feet, like Calues feet; or two Calues-feet, like Neats-feet, they are lod with their Pease,  
Bacon,

\* A good Character, of a lying beggarly vaine-glorious Spanish Oast in generall.

Bacon, and Onyons: and iust at this instant cry, Come eate me, Come eate me.

For mine I marke them henceforward, quoth *Sancho*, and let no man touch them; for Ile pay more for them then any body else, and there could haue beene no better meat for mee in the world.

No man shall touch them, said mine Oast: for other ghests I haue out of pure Gentilitie, bring their Cooke, Cater, and Butler with them. If it goe by gentle (quoth *Sancho*) none more gentle then my Master: but his Calling permits no Larders or Butteries: we clap vs down in the midst of a field, and sit our selues with Acorns and Medlars.

This discourse passed betweene *Sancho* and the Oast, without *Sancho's* answering him, who asked what Calling his Masters was of. Supper was ready, *Don Quixote* went to his Chamber, mine Oast brought the pot of meat iust as it was, and fate him faire & well down to supper: it seemed that in another Chamber next *Don Quixotes*, diuided only by a thin Lath-wall, hee might heare one say, By your life, Signior *Don Ieronimo*, whilst supper is to come in, let vs reade another Chapter in the second part of *Don Quixote*.

*Don Quixote* scarce heard himselfe named; when vp he stood, & watchfully gaue eare to their discourse concerning him; & he heard that the aforesaid *Don Ieronimo* answered, Signior *Don Iohn*, why should we reade these fopperies? he that hath read the first part of *Don Quixote*, it is impossible he should take any pleasure in reading the second.

For all that, quoth *Don Iohn*, 'twere good reading it: for there is no booke so ill, that hath not some good thing in it.

That which most displeaseth me in this is, that he makes *Don Quixote* dis-enamoured of *Dulcinea del Toboso*.

Which when *Don Quixote* heard, full of wrath and despight helisted vp his voice, saying, Whosoeuer saith *Don Quixote de la Mancha* hath forgotten, or can forget *Dulcinea del Toboso*, I will make him know with equall Armes, that hee is farre from the truth: for the peerelesse *Dulcinea del Toboso* cannot be forgotten; neither can forgetfulnes be contained in *Don Quixote*,  
his

his Scutchion is Loyaltie, his profession sweetly to keepe it, without doing it any violence.

Who is that answeres vs, said they in the next roome? Who should it be (quoth Sancho) but *Don Quixote* himselfe, that will make good all he hath said, or as much as he shall say? for a good Pay-maister cares not for his pawnes.

Scarce had *Sancho* said this, whē the two Gentlemen came in at the Chamber doore: for they seemed no lesse to them: & one of them casting his Armes about *Don Quixotes* neck, said, neither can your presence belye your name, or your name credit your presence. Doubtlesse you, Sir, are the right *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, North-starre, and Morning-starre of Knight-errantie, in spight of him that hath vsurped your name, and annihilated your exploits, as the Author of this Booke, I heere deliuer, hath done: and giuing him the booke that his companion had, *Don Quixote* took it, and without answering a word, began to turne the leaues, and a while after returned it, saying, In this little that I haue seene, I haue found three things in this

a This the Author of this Booke brings in by way of inuective against an Aragonian Scholler, that wrote a second part of *Don Quixote*, before this was published.

worthy of reprehension.

The first is, some words I haue read in his Prologue.

The second, that his language is *Aragonian*: for sometimes he wries without Articles: and the third which doth most confirm his ignorance, is, That he erres and strays from the truth in the chiefest of the History: for here he sayes that *Sancho Panza* my Squires wives name was *Mary Gutierrez*, which is not so: but she is called *Teresa Panza*: and therefore he that erres in so maine a matter, it may well be feared, he will erre in all the rest of the History.

To this *Sancho* said, Prettilly done indeed of the Historian; he knowes very well sure what belongs to our affaires, since he calls my wife *Teresa Panza*, *Mary Gutierrez*. Pray take the book againe, Sir, and see whether I be there, and whether hee haue chang'd my name. By your speech, friend, quoth *Don Ieronimo*, you should be *Sancho Panza* Signior *Don Quixotes* Squire I am (quoth *Sancho*) and I am proud of it.

Well, in faith (said the Gentleman) this modern Author doth not treat of you so neatly, as your Person makes shew for: he

paints you out for a Glutton, an Ideot, and nothing witty, and farre different from the *Sancho* that is described in the first part of your Masters History.

God forgiue him (said *Sancho* :) he should haue left me in my corner, and not remembred me; for, Every man in his ability, and Tis good sleeping in a whole skinne.

The two Gentlemen entreated *Don Quixote* to goe to their chamber, and Sup with them; for they knew well, that in that Inne he found not things fitting to his person.

*Don Quixote*, who was euer courteous, condescended to their requests, and supped with them: *Sancho* remained with his flesh-pot sole Lord and Gouvernour. *Sancho* sate at the vpper end of the Table, and with him the Inn-keeper, that vvas no lesse affectioned to his Neates-secre, then *Sancho*.

In the midt of supper, *Don Iohn* asked *Don Quixote*, vvhath newes he had of his Lady *Dulcinea del Toboso*, whether she were married, or brought a-bed, or great with childe, or being entire, vvhether (respecting her honesty and good decorum) she were mindefull of Signior *Don Quixote's* amorous desires? To which he answered,

*Dulcinea* is as entire, and my desires as firme as euer, our correspondency in the ancient barrenness, her beauty transformed into the complexion of a base milke-wench: and straight he recounted vnto them euery tittle of her Enchantment, and vvhath had befallne him in *Montesinos* Caue, with the order that the sage *Merlin* had giuen for her disenchanting, which was by *Sancho's* stripes.

Great was the delight the two Gentlemen receiued to heare *Don Quixote* tell the strange passages of his History, and so they wondred at his fopperies, as also his elegant manner of deliuering them; here they held him to be wise, there he slipped from them by the foole: so they knew not vvhath medium to giue him, betwixt vvisedome and folly.

*Sancho* ended his Supper: and leauing the Inn-keeper, passed to the chamber vvhich his Master was, and entering, said, Hang me, Sirs, if the Author of this booke that your Worships haue, vvhould that we should eat a good meale together; pray God, as

he calls mee Glutton, he say not that I am a Drunkard too.

Yes marry doth he, said *Don Ieronimo*; but I know not how directly, though I know his reasons doe not hang together, and are very erroneous, as I see by *Sancho's* Physiognomy here present. Belieue me (quoth *Sancho*) *Sancho* and *Don Quixote* are differing in this History, from vvhhat they are in that *Cid Hamete Benengels* composed; for wee are, my Master valiant, discrete, and amorous: I simple and conceited; but neyther Glutton nor Drunkard.

I belieue it (said *Don Iohn*) and were it possible, it should be commanded, that none should dare to treat of the Graund *Don Quixote's* affaires, but *Cid Hamete*, his first Author: as *Alexander* commanded that none but *Apelles* should dare to draw him.

Let whose will draw me (quoth *Don Quixote*;) but let him not abuse me; for oft times patience falls, when iniuries overload. None, quoth *Don Iohn*, can be done Signior *Don Quixote*, that he will not be reuenged of, if he ward it not with the shield of his patience, which in my opinion is strong and great.

In these and other discourses, they passed a great part of the night, and though *Don Iohn* would, that *Don Quixote* should haue read more in the booke, to see what it did descant on, yet he could not preuaile with him, saying, He made account he had read it, and concluded it to be but an idle Pamphlet, & that he would not (if it should come to the Authors knowledge that he had meddled with it) he should make himselfe merry to think he had read it; for our thoughts must not be busied in filthy and obscene things, much lesse our eyes.

They asked him, whither he purposed his voyage? He answered, to *Saragosa*, to be at the Iusts in Harnesse, that vs to be there yeerely.

*Don Iohn* told him, that there was one thing in that new History, which was, that he should be at a Running at the Ring in that City, as short of Inuention, as poore in Mottos, but most poore in Liueries, and rich in nothing but simplicities.

For this matter onely, quoth *Don Quixote*, I will not set foot in *Saragosa*: and therefore the world shall see what a lyar this moderne

moderne Historiographer is, and people shall perceiue, I am not the *Don Quixote* he speakes of.

You shall doe very well, quoth *Don Ieronimo*; for there bee other Iusts in *Barselona*, where Signior *Don Quixote* may shew his valour. So I meane to doe (quoth *Don Quixote*) and therefore let me take leaue of you (for it is time) to goe to bed, and so hold mee in the ranke of your greatest friends and Seruitors. And me too, quoth *Sancho*, for it may be I shall be good for somewhat.

With this they tooke leaue, and *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* retired to their chamber, leauing *Don Iohn* and *Don Ieronimo* in admiration, to see what a medley he had made with his discretion and madnesse; and they verily belieued, that these were the right *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, and not they whom the Aragonian Author described.

*Don Quixote* rose early, and knocking vpon the thinne wall of the other chamber, hee tooke leaue of those guests: *Sancho* payed the Oast royally, but aduised him, hee should cyther lesse praise the prouision of his Inne, or haue it better provided.

## CHAP. LX.

what happened to Don Quixote, going  
to Barselona.

**T**He morning was coole, and the day promised no lesse, when *Don Quixote* left the Inne, informing himselfe first, which was the ready way to *Barselona*, vvithout comming to *Saragosa*: such was the desire he had to proue the new Historian a lyar, who they said, dispraised him so much. It fell out so, that in sixe daies there fell out nothing worth writing to him; at the end of which, he was be-nighted, going out of his way, in a Thicket of Oakes or Corke trees; for in this *Cid Hamete* is not so punctuall, as in other matters he vseth to be.

The Master and man alighted from their beasts, and setting



themselves at the trees rootes : *Sancho* that had had his beaver that day, entred roundly the gates of sleepe ; but *Don Quixote*, whom imaginations kept awake much more then hunger, could not ioyn his eyes, but rather was busying his thoughts in a thousand severall places : Sometimes hee thought he found himselfe in *Montesino's* Cave, and that he saw *Dulcinea*, converted into a Country wench, leape vpon her Ass. Colt : Now the sage *Merlins* words rang in his eares, repeating vnto him the conditions that were to be obserued for her dis-enchanting : hee was starke madde to see *Sancho's* laziness, and want of Charity ; for, as he thought, he had onely giuen himselfe five stripes, a poore and vnequall number to those behinde, and he was so grieu'd and enraged with this, that he framed this discourse to himselfe :

If *Alexander* the Great did cut the *Gordian* knot, saying ; Cutting and vndoing is all one, and yet for all that, was Lord of all Asia ; no otherwise may it happen in the dis-enchanting of *Dulcinea*, if I should whip *Sancho*, *volens nolens* ; for if the condition of this remedy be, that *Sancho* receiue three thousand and so many ierkes, what care I whether he giue them, or that another doe, since the substance is in him that giues them, come they by what meanes they will ?

With this imagination he came to *Sancho*, having first taken *Rosinante's* reins, and so fitted them, that he might lash him with them, he began to vntruste his points : The opinion is, that hee had but one before, which held vp his Gally-Gascoynes. But he was no sooner approached, when *Sancho* awaked and came to himselfe, and said, Who is that ? Who is it toucheth and vntrusteth me ? Tis I, quoth *Don Quixote*, that come to supply thy defects, and to remedy my troubles ; I come to whip thee, *Sancho*, and to discharge the debt in part thou standest obliged in. *Dulcinea* perisheth, thou liuest carelessly, I dye desiring ; and therefore vntruste thy selfe willingly, for I haue a minde in these Defaults to giue thee at least two thousand lashes.

Not so, quoth *Sancho*, pray be quiet : and if not, I protest, deaf men shall heare vs : the stripes in which I engaged my selfe must be voluntary, and not enforced, and at this time I haue no minde to whip my selfe ; tis enough that I giue you my word

to beat my selfe, and fly-flappe mee when I haue a disposition to it.

There's no leauing of it to thy courtesie, *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) for thou art hard-hearted, and though a Clowne, yet tender of flesh ; and so he contended and strove to vnlace him : which when *Sancho Pansa* saw, he stood to it, and setting vpon his Master, closed with him, and tripping vp his heeles, cast him vpon his backe on the ground, hee put his right knee vpon his brest, and with his hands held his, so that hee neyther let him stirre nor breathe.

*Don Quixote* cryed out, How now, Traitor, rebellest thou against thy naturall Lord & Master ? presumest thou against him that feedes thee ? I neyther make King, nor depose King (quoth *Sancho*) I onely helpe my selfe that am mine owne Lord : promise me you, Sir, that you will be quiet, and not meddle vvith whipping of me now, and Ile set you loose and free ; and if not, here thou diest, Traitor, enemy to *Donna Sancha*. *Don Quixote* promised him, and swore by the life of his thoughts, hee would not touch so much as a haire of his head, and that hee would leaue his whipping himselfe, to his owne free-will and choise when he would.

*Sancho* gate vp, and went a pretty way from him, and going to leane to another tree, he perceiued something touch him vpon the head, and lifting vp his hands, hee lighted on two feet of a man, with hose and shooes on ; he quak'd for feare, and went to another tree, and the like befell him : so he cried out, calling to *Don Quixote* to helpe him. *Don Quixote* did so, and asking him what had befallne him ? and why he was afraid ? *Sancho* answered, That all those Trees were full of mens feet and legges. *Don Quixote* felt them, and fell strait into the account of what they might be, and said to *Sancho*, Thou needest not feare ; for these feet and legges thou feelest and seest not, doubtlesse are of some free-booters and robbers in troopes, that are hanged in these trees ; for here the Iustice hangs them by twenty & thirty at a clap, by which I vnderstand that I am neere *Barcelona* : and true it was as he supposed. They lifted vp their eyes, and to see to, the free-booters bodies hung as if they had beene clusters

vpon those trees: and by this it waxed day; and if the dead men feared them, no lesse were they in tribulation vwith the sight of at least forty liue *Sbanditi*, who hemmed them in vpon a sodain, bidding them in the *Catalan* tongue, they should be quiet, and stand till their Capraine came.

*Don Quixote* was on foot, his horse vnbridled, his Lance set vp against a tree, finally, voyd of all defence, and therefore he deemed it best to crosse his hands, and hold downe his head, reseruing himselfe for a better occasion and coniuncture.

The thecues came to flea Dapple, and began to leaue him nothing he had, cyther in his Wallets or Cloke-bag: and it fell out wel for *Sancho*, for the Dukes Crownes were in a hollow girdle girt to him, and those likewise that he brought from home vwith him, and for all that, those good fellowes would haue vvedded and searched him to the very entrailes, if their Captaine had not come in the *Interim*, who seemed to bee about thirty yeeres of age, strongly made, and somewhat of a tall stature; his looke was solemne, and his complexion swarthy: he vvas mounted vpon a powerfull Horse, with his Steele coat on, and foure Petronels (called in that Country *Pedrenales*) which hee wore two at each side: and now his Squires (for so they call those that are in that vocation) came to make spoyle of *Sancho*: he commanded them they should not, and he was strait obeyed, and so the girdle escaped: he wondred to see a Launce reared vp on a tree, a shield on the ground, and *Don Quixote* armed and pensatiue, with the saddest melancholiest visage, that sadnesse it selfe could frame. He came to him, saying, Be not sad, honest man; for you haue not falne into the hands of any cruell *Osiris*, but into *Roque Guinarts*, that haue more compassion then cruelty in them.

My sadnesse is not, quoth *Don Quixote*, to haue falne into thy power, oh valorous *Roque* (whose Fame is boundlesse) but that my carelesnesse was such, that thy Souldiers haue caught me without bridle, I being obliged (according to the order of Knight Errantry, which I professe, to keepe watch and ward, and at all houres to be my owne Centinell; for let me tell thee, Grand *Roque*, if they had taken mee on Horse-backe with my  
Lance

Lance and Shield, they should not easily haue made me yeeld; for I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, he, of whose exploits all the world is full. Strait *Roque Guinart* perceiued, that *Don Quixote's* infirmity proceeded rather of madnesse then Valour, and though hee had sometimes heard tell of him, yet hee neuer could beleue his deedes to be true, neither could he be perswaded that such a humour should reigne in any mans heart, and hee was wonderfully glad to haue met with him, to see by experience, what he had heard say of him, and therefore he said, Valorous Knight, vex not your selfe, neyther take this fortune of yours to be sinister; for it may be, that in these stumbling blocks your crooked lot may be straightned, for heauen doth vsually raise vp those that fall, and enrich the poore by strange and vnseene waies (by men not imagined.)

*Don Quixote* was about to haue rendred him thanks, when as they perceiued a noyse behind them, as if there had beene some troope of horse, but there was but one onely, vpon which there came with full speed, a Youth to see to, about some twenty yeeres of age, clad in greene Damaske; his Hose and loose Jerkin were layd on with gold lace, with a Hat turned vp from his band, with close fit boots, sword & dagger gilt, and a little birding-Peece in his hand, & two Pistols at his sides. *Roque* turned his head to the noyse, and saw this beautifull shape, who coming neere him, said, In quæst of thee I came, oh valorous *Roque*, to finde in thee, if not redresse, at least some lightsomenesse in this my misfortune: And to hold thee no longer in suspense, because I know thou knowest mee not, I will tell thee who I am; that is, *Claudia Ieronima*, daughter to *Simon Forte* thy singular friend, & onely enemy to *Clanquel Torellas*, who is also thine, as being one of thy contrary faction; and thou knowest that this *Torellas* hath a sonne, called *Don Vincente Torellas*, or at least was so called, not two houres since. Hee then, to shorten my vnfortunate tale, I will tell thee in few words what hath be-falne me: He saw me, courted me, I gaue care to him, & my Father vnwitting of it, I affectionated my selfe to him; for there is no woman, be she neuer so retired or looked to, but she hath time enough to put in execution and effect her hasty longing.

Finally, he promised me marriage, and I gave him my word to be his, so no more passed really: Yesterday I came to know, that, forgetfull of his obligation, he contracted to another, and that this morning he went to be married; a newes that troubled my braine, and made an end of my patience: and by reason my Father was not at home, I had opportunity to put my selfe in this apparell thou seest, and making speed with this horse, I overtook *Don Vincente* about a league from hence, and without making any complaint, or hearing his discharge, I discharged this Peece, and to boot, these Pistols, and I beleue I sent two bullets into his body, making way, thorow which, my honor enwrapped in his blood, might fall out: therefore I left him to his servants, who nor durst, nor could put themselves in his defence. I came to seeke thee, that thou mightest help to passe me into France, where I haue kindred, with whom I may live; and withall, to desire thee to defend my Father, that the number of *Don Vincentes* friends take not a cruell reuenge vpon him.

*Roque* wondring at the gallantry, brauery, handsomenesse & successe of the faire *Claudia*, said, Come, Gentlewoman, and let vs goe see if your enemy be dead, and afterward what shall bee most fitting to be done.

*Don Quixote*, that hearkened attentiuely to all that *Claudia* said, and *Roque Guinart* answered, said, No man need take pains to defend this Lady; let it be my charge: Giue me my horse and my Armes, and expect me here, and I will goe seek this Knight, and aliue or dead, will make him accomplish his promise to so great a beauty.

No man doubt it, quoth *Sancho*; for my Master hath a very good hand to be a marriage-maker: and not long since he forced another to marry, that denied his promise to a maid; and had it not bene that Enchanters persecuted him, and changed the true shape into the shape of a Lackey, by this time the said maid had bene none.

*Roque*, that attended more to *Claudia's* successe, then the reasons of Master or man, vnderstood them not; and so commanding his Squires, they should restore to *Sancho* all they had taken from Dapple, and commanding them likewise to retire where

where he lodged the night before, hee went straight with all speed with *Claudia*, to find the wounded or dead *Don Vincente*.

To the place they came, where *Claudia* met him, where they found nothing but late shed blood: but looking round about them, they discovered some people vpon the side of a Hill: and they thought, as true it was, that that was *Don Vincente*, whom his seruants carried aliue, or dead; to cure, or giue him buriall: they halted to ouertake them, which they easily might doe, the others going but softly. They found *Don Vincente* in his seruants Armes, whom hee entreated with a weake and weary voice to let him dye there: for the griefe of his wounds would not suffer him to goe any further.

*Claudia* and *Roque* flung themselves from their Horses, to him they came, the seruants feared *Roque's* presence; and *Claudia* was troubled to see *Don Vincente*: and so betwixt milde and mercifull, she came to him, and laying hold of his hands, shee said, If thou hadst giuen me these according to our agreement, thou hadst neuer come to this extremitie: The wounded Gentleman opened his halfe-shut eyes, and knowing *Claudia*, said, I well perceiue, faire and deceiued Mistris, that thou art shee that hast slaine me: a punishment not deserued, nor due to my desires, in which, nor in any action of mine, I neuer knew how to offend thee.

Then belike, 'tis false, that thou went'st this morning to bee married to *Leonora*, the rich *Baluasho's* daughter.

No verily, said *Don Vincente*, my ill fortune brought thee that newes, that being ieaious thou shouldest bereaue me of my life: which since I leaue it in thy hands, and embrace thee, I thinke my selfe most happy: and to assure thee that this is true, take my hand, and if thou wilt receiue me for thy Husband; for I haue no other satisfaction to giue thee for the wrong thou thinkest I haue done thee.

*Claudia* wrung his hand, and her selfe was wrung to the very heart; so that vpon *Don Vincente's* blood and brest, she fell into a swoond, and he into a mortall Paroxysme. *Roque* was in a maze, and knew not what to do. The seruants went to fetch water to fling in their faces, & brought it, with which they bathed them.

*Claudia* reuiued againe : but *Don Vincente*. neuer from his Paroxisme, with which he ended his life.

Which when *Claudia* saw, out of doubt, that her Husband was dead, shee burst the Ayre with her sighs, and wounded Heauen with her complaints : she tore her hayre, and gaue it to the winde : with her owne hands she dis-figured her face, with all the shewes of dolour and feeling, that might bee imagined from a grieued heart.

Oh cruell and inconsiderate Woman (saide shee) how easily wast thou moued to put so cruella designe in execution? Oh raving force of Iealousie, to what desperate ends dost thou bring those that harbour thee in their breasts? Oh my Spouse, whose vnhappy fortune, for being my Pledge, hath brought from bed to buriall.

Such and so sad were the complaints of *Claudia*, that euen from *Rogues* eyes drew teares, not vsed to shed them vpon any occasion : the seruants howled, and *Claudia* euery flitch-while swounded, and the whole circuit lookt like a field of sorrow, and a place of mis-fortune.

Finally, *Rogue Guinart* gaue order to *Don Vincentes* seruants, to carry his body to his Fathers towne, that was neere there, to giue him Buriall. *Claudia* told *Rogue*, she would goe to a Monastery, where an Aunt of hers was *Abbesse*, where she meant to end her dayes, accompanied with a better and an eternall Spouse.

*Rogue* commended her good intencion, and offered to accompany her whither she would, and to defend her Father, from her kindred, and from all the world that would hurt him.

*Claudia* would by no meanes accept of his company, and thanking him the best she could for his offer, she tooke leaue of him weeping. *Don Vincentes* seruants bore away his body, and *Rogue* returned to his people: and this was the end of *Claudia Ieronima's* loue : but no maruell if iealousie contriued the plot of her lamentable Story.

*Rogue Guinart* found his Squires where he had willed them to be ; and *Don Quixote* amongst them vpon *Rosinante*, making a large discourse to them, in which he perswaded them to leaue that

that kinde of life, dangerous as well for their soules, as bodies : but the most of them being Gascoignes, a wilde and vnuly people, *Don Quixotes* discourse preuailed nothing with them.

When *Rogue* was come, he asked *Sancho*, if they had restored his implements to him, and the Prize which his Souldiers had taken from Dapple. *Sancho* answered, Yes, onely that he wanted three Night-caps, that were worth three Cities. What say you fellow? Quoth one of them : I haue them, and they were not worth eightene pence.

Tis true (saide *Don Quixote*) but my Squire esteemes them in what he hath said, for the parties sake that gaue them me.

*Rogue Guinart* straight commanded they should be restored, and commanding his people to stand round, he willed them to set before them, all the apparell, Jewels, and money, and all that since their last sharing they had robbed : and casting vp the account briefly, returning that that was not to be re-parted; reducing it into mony, he diuided it amongst all his company, so legally, and wisely, that he neither added nor diminished, from an equal distributiu iustice.

This done, and all contented, satisfied, and payd, *Rogue* said to *Don Quixote*, If I should not bee thus punctuall with these fellowes, there were no liuing with them : To which saide *Sancho*, By what I haue heere seene, Iustice is so good, that it is fit and necessary, euen amongst theeuers themselves.

One of the Squires heard him, and lifted vp the snap-haunce of his Peece, with which he had opened his Mazer, if *Rogue Guinart* had not cryed out to bid him hold.

*Sancho* was amazed, and purposed not to vnswow his lips, as long as he was in that company.

Now there came one or more of the Squires, that were put in Centinell, vpon the wayes, to see who passed by, and to giue notice to their Chicfe, what passed; who said, Sir, not far hence, by the way that goes to *Barcelona* : there comes a great Troope of people. To which quoth *Rogue*, Hast thou markt whether they bee of those that seeke vs, or those wee seeke? Of the latter, saide the Squire.

VVell, get you out all quoth *Rogue*, and bring ym me hither straight,

straight, and let not a man scape. They did so, and *Don Quixote* and *Roque*, and *Sancho* stay'd, and expected to see what the Squires brought: and in the *Interim*, *Roque* said to *Don Quixote*, Our life will seeme to be a strange kinde of one to Signior *Don Quixotes* strange Aduentures, strange succelles, and dangerous all; and I should not wonder that it appeare so. For I confesse truely to you, there is no kinde of life more vnquiet, nor more full of feares than ours. I haue false into it by I know not what desires of reuenge, that haue power to trouble the most quiet hearts.

I am naturally compassionate, and well-minded: but as I haue said, the desire of reuenging a wrong done me, doth so dash this good inclination in me, that I perseuere in this estate, maugre my best iudgement: and as one horror brings on another, and one sinne: so my reuenges haue beene so linked together, that I not onely vndergoe mine owne, but also other mens: but God is pleased, that though I see my selfe in the midst of this Labyrinth of Confusions, I despayre not to come to a safe harbour.

*Don Quixote* admired to heare from *Roque* such good & sound reasons: for he thought, that amongst those of this profession of robbing, killing, and high-way-laying, there could bee none so well spoken, and answered him:

Signior *Roque*, the beginning of health consists, in knowing the infirmity & that the sick ma be willing to take the medicines that the Physician ordaines. You are sicke: you know your griefe and heauen; or (to say truer) God who is our Physician, will apply medicines that may cure you, which doe heale by degrees, but not suddenly, and by miracle: besides, sinners that haue knowledge, are neerer amendment then those that are without it: and since you, by your discourse haue shew'd your discretion, there is no more to be done: but bee of good courage, and despayre not of the recovering your sick conscience; and if you will saue a labour, and facilitate the way of your situation; come with me, and I will teach you to be a Knight Errant, and how you shall vndergoe so many labours, and misaduentures, that taking them by way of penance, you shall climbe Heauen in an instant.

*Roque*

*Roque* laughed at *Don Quixotes* counsaile, to whom (changing their discourse) hee recounted the Tragical successe of *Claudia Ieronimo*: at which *Sancho* wept exceedingly; for the beauty, spirit, and buck-fomencelle of the Wench mis-liked him not.

By this the Squires returned with their prize, bringing with them, two Gentlemen on horseback, and two Pilgrims on foot, and a Coach full of women, and some halfe doozen of seruants, that on horseback and on foote, waited on them, with two Mule-men that belonged to the two Gentlemen. The Squires brought them in triumph, the conquerours and conquered, being all silent, and expecting what the Grand *Roque* should determine: who asked the Gentlemen, who they were, whither they would, and what money they carried: One of them answered him, Sir, Wee two are Captaines of Spanish foot, and haue Companies in Naples, and are going to imbarke our selues in foure Gallies, that we heare are bound for Silicia: wee carry with vs two or three hundreth crownes, which we think is sufficient, as being the largest treasure incident to the ordinary penury of souldiours.

*Roque* asked the Pilgrims the same questions, who answered him likewise, that they were to bee imbarked towards Rome, and that they carried a matter of thirty shillings betweene them both: The same he likewise desired to know of those that went in the Coach, and one of them on horseback, answered,

My Lady *Donna Guimar de Quinones*, wife to a Iudge of Naples, with a little Girle and her Maids, are they that goe in the Coach; and some six seruants of vs wait on her: and vvee carry sixe hundreth Pistolets in gold. So that (said *Roque Guinarte*) we haue heere in all, nine hundreth crownes, and sixty Ryals: my souldiours are about a sixtie; let vs see what comes to each mans share: for I am a bad Arithmetician.

When the Theeues heard this, they cryed alowd, Long liue *Roque Guinarte*, in spight of the *Cullions* that seeke to destroy him.

The Captaines were afflicted, the Lady was sorrowfull, and the Pilgrims were neuer a whit glad, to see their goods thus con-

confiscated. *Rogue* awhile held them in this suspense : but hee would no longer detain them in this sadnesse, which he might see a gun-shoote off in their faces : and turning to the Captaines, said, Captaines, you shall doe me the kindnesse as to lend mee threescore ducats : and you, Madam, fourescore, to content my Squadron that followes me : for herein consists my reuenuc : and so you may passe on freely, onely with a safe-conduct that I shall giue you : that if you meet with any other Squadrons of mine, which are diuided vpon these Downes, they doe you no hurt : for my intent is not to wrong Souldiours, or any woman, especially Noble.

The Captaines infinitely extolled *Rogues* courteous liberality for leauing them their money. The Lady would haue cast her selfe out of the Coach, to kisse the Grand *Rogues* feet & hands : but he would by no means yeeld to it, rather asked pardon that he had presumed so farre, which was only to comply with the obligation of his ill employment.

The Lady commanded a seruant of hers, to giue him straight fourescore ducats, which were allotted him : the Captaines too disbursed their sixty, and the Pilgrims tendered their pouertie : but *Rogue* bade them be still : and turning to his people, said, Out of these Crownes, there are to each man two due ; and there remaine twenty : let the poore Pilgrims haue ten of them, and the other ten this honest Squire, that he may speake well of this Aduenture : and so bringing him necessaries to write, of which he euer went provided, hee gaue them a safe-conduct to the heads of his Squadrons ; and taking leaue of them, let them passe free : and wondring at the noblenesse of his braue and strange condition, holding him rather for a great *Alexander*, then an open robber : one of the Theeues said in his *Catalan* language, This Captaine of ours were fitter to be a Frier, then a Robber : and if he meane henceforward to bee so liberall, let it be with his owne goods, and not with ours.

This, the wretch spoke not so softly, but *Rogue* might overheare him ; who catching his sword in hand, almost cloue his pate in two, saying, This is the punishment I vse to sawcy knaues : all the rest were amazed, and durst not reply a word :  
such

such was the awe in which they stood of him *Rogue* then retired aside, and wrote a Letter to a friend of his to *Barselona*, aduising him how the famous *Don Quixote de la Mancha* was with him, that Knight Errant so notorious : and he gaue him to vnderstand, that he was the most conceited vnderstanding fellow in the world : and that about some foure dayes after, which was Mid-summer day, hee should haue him vpon the Citie Wharfe, armed at all points vpon his Horse *Rosinante*, and his Squire likewise vpon his Asse : & that he should let the *Niarros* his friends know so much, that they might solace themselves with him : but hee could wish the *Cadels* his Aduersaries might want the pastime, that the madness of *Don Quixote*, & his conceited Squire would make. Hee deliuered the Letter to one of his Squires, who changing his Theeues habit, for a Countreymans, went to the Citie, and deliuered it to whom it was directed.

## CHAP. LXI.

What hapned to Don Quixote at his entrance into Barselona, with other euents more true, then witty.

THREE daies & three nights was *Don Quixote* with *Rogue*, & had he bin so 300. yeeres, he should not haue wated matter to make him see & admire his kind of life : one while heere they lye ; another, there they dine : sometimes they fly from they know not whom ; other while, they wait for they know not whom.

They sleepe standing, a broken sleepe, changing from place to place : all was setting of Spies, listening of Sentinels, blowing Musket-matches, though of such shot they had but few : most of them carrying Petronels. *Rogue* himselfe slept apart from the rest, nor letting them know where he lodged ; because the many Proclamations which the Vice-Roy of *Barselona* had caused to be made to take him, made him vnquiet and fearfull, and so he durst trust no body, fearing his own people would either kill or deliuer him to the Iustice : a life indeed wretched, & irksome, at length by by-waies & crosse pathes *Rogue* and *Don Quixote* got to the Wharfe of *Barselona*, where *Rogue* gaue *Sancho* the ten crownes he promised him, & so they parted with many compliments on both parts.  
*Rogue*



Roque returned, and Don Quixote stayed there, expecting the day iust as he was on horseback: and awhile after, the face of the white *Aurora*, beganne to peepe thorow the Bay-windowes of the East, cheering the Hearbs and Flowers, in stead of delighting the eare, and yet at the same instant a noise of Hoboyes and Drums delighted their eares, and a noise of Morrisbells, with the Pat a pat of Horsemen running to see to out of the Citie.

*Aurora* now gaue the Sunne leaue to rise out of the lowest part of the East, with his face as bigge as a Buckler.

Don Quixote and Sancho spread their eyes round about, and they might see the Sea, which till that time they had neuer seen: it seemed vnto them most large and spacious, more by farre then the Lake of *Ruydera*, which they saw in the *Mancha*: they beheld the Gallies in the Wharfe, who clapping down their tilts, discovered themselves full of Flagges & Streamers, that waued in the winde, and kissed and swept the water: within, the *Clarinets*, Trumpets and Hoboyes sounded, that farre and neere filled the Ayre with sweet and warlike accents: they began to moue, and to make shew of skirmish vpon the gentle water; a world of Gallants answering them on Land, which came out of the Citie vpon goodly Horses, and braue in their Liveries.

The Souldiours of the Gallies discharged an infinitie of shot, which were answered from the walles and Forts of the Citie, and the great shot with fearefull noise cut the Ayre, which were answered with the Gallies fore-Castle Canons: the Sea was cheerefull, the Land iocund, the sky cleere, onely somewhat dimmed with the smoke of the Artillery, it seemed to infuse and ingender a sodaine delight in all men. Sancho could not imagine how those Bulks that moued vpon the Sea could haue so many feete. By this, they a-shore in the rich Liveries began to runne on with their Moorish out-cries, euen to the very place vvhether Don Quixote was wondring and amazed: and one of them, he who had the Letter from Roque, said to Don Quixote thus aloud, Welcome to our Citie is the Looking-glasse, the Lant-horne, and North-starre of all Knight Errantry, where it is most in practice. Welcome, I say, is the Valorous Don Quixote

*Quixote de la Mancha*: not the false, fictitious, or Apocryphal, that hath beene demonstrated to vs of late in false Histories; but the true, legall, and faithfull Hee, which *Cid Hamete* the flower of Historians describes vnto vs. Don Quixote answered not a word, neyther did the Gentlemen expect hee should; but turning in and out with the rest, they wheeled about Don Quixote: who turning to Sancho, said, These men know vs well: I lay a wager they haue read our History, and that too of the Aragonians lately printed. The Gentleman that spoke to Don Quixote, came backe againe, and said to him, Signior Don Quixote, come with vs, I beseech you; for we are all your seruants, and Roque Guinarte's deare friends. To which Don Quixote replied, If courtesies engender courtesies, then yours, Sir Knight, is daughter, or neere kindred to Roques: carry mee whither you will, for I am wholly yours, and at your seruice, if you please to command me. In the like Courtly straine, the Gentleman answered him, & so locking him in the midst of them, with sound of Drums and Hoboyes, they carried him towards the City, where at his entrance, as ill lucke would haue it, and the boyes that are the worst of all ill, two of them, bold Cracke-ropes, came among the thrust, & one of them lifting vp Dapples taile, & the other *Rosinantes*, they fastned each their handfull of Nettles. The poore beasts felt the new spurs, and clapping their tails close, augmented their paines; so that after a thousand winces, they cast downe their Masters.

Don Quixote all abashed and disgraced, went to take this Plume from his Coursers taile, and Sancho from Dapples. Those that guided Don Quixote, would haue punished the boyes for their sawcinelle, but it was not possible; for they got themselves into the thickest of a thousand others that followed. Don Quixote and Sancho returned to their seates, and with the same applause and Musike, they came to their Guides house, which was faire & large, indeed as was fit for a Gentleman of meanes; where wee will leaue him for the present, because *Cid Hamete* will haue it so.

## CHAP. LXII.

*The Adventure of the Enchanted head, with other flames that must be recounted.*

**D**On Quixote's Oasts name was *Don Antonio Morino*, a rich Gentleman and a discreet, and one that loued to be honestly and affably merry; who hauing *Don Quixote* now at home, began to inuent, how, without prejudice to him, he might divulge his madnesse; for ielts ought not to be too bitter, nor pastimes in detriment of a third person.

The first thing he did then, was to cause *Don Quixote* to be vnarmed, and to make him appeare in that straight Chamois apparel of his (as heretofore we haue painted and described him:) so he brought him to a Bay window which looked toward one of the chiefest streetes in the City, to be publicly scene by all commers, and the boyes that beheld him as if hee had beene a Monkey. They in the Liueries began a-fresh to fetch Careeres before him, as if for him onely, (and not to solemnize that festiuall day) their Liueries had beene put on: and *Sancho* was most iocund, as thinking he had found out, he knew not how, nor which way, a new *Camacho's* marriage, or another house like *Don Diego* and *Miranda's*, or the Dukes Castle.

That day some of *Don Antonio's* friends dined vvith him, all honouring *Don Quixote*, and obseruing him as a Knight Errant: with which, being most vaine-glorious, hee could scarce containe himselfe in his happinesse. *Sancho's* conceits were such & so many, that all the seruants of the house hung vpon his lippes, and as many also as heard him.

Being at Table, *Don Antonio* said to *Sancho*, We haue heard heere, honest *Sancho*, that thou louest Leech and roasted Oliues so well, that when thou canst eat no more, thou keepest the rest in thy bosome till another time. No, Sir, tis not so, said *Sancho*, for I am more cleanly then so, and my Master *Don Quixote* here present knowes well, that we are wont both of vs to liue eight daies with a handfull of Acornes or Walnuts: true it is, that  
now

now and then I looke not a giuen horse in the mouth (I meane) I eate what is giuen me, and make vse of the time present, and whosoeuer hath said that I am an extraordinary eater, and not cleanly, let him know he doth me wrong; and I should proceed farther, were it not for the company heere at Table.

Truely, said *Don Quixote*, the parsimony and cleanlinesse with which *Sancho* feedes, may be written and graued in sheetes of brasse, that it may be eternally remembred by ensuing Ages: True it is, that when he is hungry, he is somewhat rauenous, eates apace, and chawes on both sides; but for cleanlinesse, that he hath punctually obserued: and when he was a Gouvernour, learnt to eat most neatly; for hee would eat you Grapes, nay, Pomegranat seedes with his forke. How, quoth *Don Antonio*, hath *Sancho* beene a Gouvernour? I, said *Sancho*, and of an Iland called *Barataria*: tenne daies I gouerned to my will, in them I lost my rest, and learnt to contemne all the Gouvernements in the world. From thence I came flying, and fell into a pit, where I thought I should haue died, from whence I escaped miraculously.

*Don Quixote* recounted all the particulars of *Sancho's* Go-uernment, with which the hearers were much delighted. The cloth now taken away, and *Don Antonio* taking *Don Quixote* by the hand, carried him into a priuate chamber, in which there was no other kinde of furniture, but a Table that seemed to bee of Iasper, borne vp with feete of the same, vpon which there was set a Head, as if it beene of brasse, iust as your Romane Emperors are vsed to be, from the brest vpward. *Don Antonio* walked with *Don Quixote* vp and downe the chamber, and hauing gone a good many turnes about the Table, at last he said, Signior *Don Quixote*, now that I am fully perswaded no-body heares vs, and that the doore is fast, I will tell you one of the rarest Adventures, or rather Nouelties, that can be imagined; provided, that what I tell you, shall be deposited in the vttermost priuy Chambers of secrecie.

That I vow, said *Don Quixote*: and for more safety, I vvill clapa Tombe-stone ouer it; for let me tell you, Signior *Don Antonio* (for now he knew his name) you conuerse with one, that  
E c  
though

though he haue eares to heare, yet he hath no tongue to tell : so that what is in your brest, you may freely translate it into mine, and reassured, that you haue flung it into the *Abissus* of silence.

In confidence of this promise (answered *Don Antonio*) I will make you admire at what you shall heare and see, and so you shall somewhat ease me of the trouble I am in, in not finding one that I may communicate my secrets with ; with which, euery one is not to be trusted.

*Don Quixote* was in great suspence, expecting what vould be the issue of all these circumstances ; so *Don Antonio* taking him by the hand, he made him feele all ouer the brazen head & the Table, and Iasper feet, and then said, This head, Signior, was made by one of the greatest Enchanters or Magicians that hath beene in the world, and I beleue, by Nation he was a *Polander*, and one of that famous *Scotus* his disciples, of whom so many wonders are related, who was heere in my house, and for a thousand Crownes I gaue him, framed me this head, that hath the property and quality to answer to any thing that it is asked in your eare : he had his trickes & deuices, his painting of Characters, his obseruing of Starres, lookt to euery tittle, and finally, brought this head to the perfection that to morrow you shall see, for on the Fridayes still it is mute, which being this day, we must expect till to morrow ; and so in the meane time you may bethink you what you will demand ; for I know by experience, this head answers truly to all that is asked.

*Don Quixote* admired at the vertue and property of the head, and could scarce beleue *Don Antonio*, but seeing how short a time there was to the triall, he would not gain-say him, but thanked him for discovering so great a secret : So out of the roome they went : *Don Antonio* locked the doore after him, and they came into a Hall where the rest of the Gentlemen were : in this interim, *Sancho* had related to them many of the Aduentures & successes that befell his Master. That after-noon they carried *Don Quixote* abroad, not armed, but clad in the City garbe, with a loose coat of rawny cloth, that in that season might haue made frost it selfe sweat : they gaue order to their seruants to entertain

*Sancho,*

*Sancho*, and not to let him stirre out of dores. *Don Quixote* rode not vpon *Rosinante*, but on a goodly trotting Mule, with good furniture, they put his coat vpon him, and at his backe (hee not perceiuing it) they sowed a piece of Parchment, wherein vvas written in Text letters, *This is Don Quixote de la Mancha* : as they began their walke, the scrowle drew all mens eyes to looke on it, and as they read, *This is Don Quixote de la Mancha*, hee admired to see what a number beheld & named him, and knew him ; and turning to *Don Antonio* that went by him, said, Great is the Prerogatiue due to Knight Errantry, since ouer all the world, it makes its Professors knowne and renowned ; for looke you, Signior *Don Antonio*, euen the very boyes of this City hauing neuer seene mee before, know me. Tis true, Signior, quoth *Don Antonio* : for as fire cannot be hidden nor bounded, no more can vertue but it must be knowne ; and that vvhich is gotten by the profession of Armes, doth most flourish and triumph about the rest.

It hapned, that *Don Quixote* riding with this applause, a Castilian that read the scrowle at his backe, raised his voyce, saying, The Deuill take thee for *Don Quixote de la Mancha* : and art thou gotten hither without being killed with those infinite bastings thou hast borne vpon thy shoulders ? Thou art a madde man, and wert thou so in priuate, and within thy house, twere lesse euill ; but thy property is, to make all that conuerse or treat with thee, mad-men and Cox-combes, as may appeare by these that accompany thee : get thee home, Ideot, and looke to thy Estate, Wife, and Children, and leaue these vanities that wormente thy braines, and defile thy intellect. Brother, said *Don Antonio*, follow your way, and giue no counsaile to those that need it not : Signior *Don Quixote* is wise, and we that do accompany him, are no fooles, vertue is worthy to be honoured wheresoever she is, and so be gone with a poxe to you, and meddle not where you haue nothing to doe. I vow (quoth the Castilian) you haue reason ; for to giue counsaile to this man, is to strue against the streame : but for all that, it pitties me very much, that the good vnderstanding they say this blocke-head hath in all things else, should be let out at the pipe of his Knight Errantry.

E c 2

and

and a pox light on me (as you wish, Sir) and all my posterity, if from henceforward, though I should liue to the yeeres of *Methusalem*, I giue counsaile to any, though it be desired.

Thus the Counseller went by, and the shew went on: but the boyes, and all manner of people pressed so thicke to reade the scrowle, that *Don Antonio* was forced to take it off from him, as if he had done something else.

The night came on, and they returned home, where was a Reuels of women: for *Don Antonio's* wife, that was well bred, mirthfull, faire, and discreet, inuited other shee-friends of hers, to come to welcome her new ghest, and to make merry vvith his strange madnesse. Some of them came, and they had a royall Supper, and the Reuels began about ten a clocke at night. Among these Dames, there were two of anotable waggish disposition, and great scoffers; and though honest, yet they strained their carriage, that their trickes might the better delight without yrksomnes; these were so eager to take *Don Quixote* out to dace, that they wearied not onely his body, but his minde likewise: twas a goodly sight to see his shape, long, lanke, leane, his visage pale, the whole man shut vp in his apparell, vngracefull, and vnweildy. The Damozels wooed him as it were by stealth, and he by stealth disdained them as fast; but seeing himselfe much pressed by their courtings, he lifted vp his voyce, and said, *Fugite partes aduersa*, and leaue me, oh vnwelcoure imaginations, to my quiet: Get you further off with your wishes, Ladies; for she that is the Lady of mine, the peerelesse *Dulcinea del Toboso*, will haue none but hers subiect and conquer me: and so saying, he sat him downe in the middest of the Hall vpon the ground, bruised and broken with his dancing exercise. *Don Antonio* made him betaken vp in mens armes, & carried to bed; the first that layd hold on him was *Sancho*, saying, In the name of God, what meant you, Master mine, to dance? Thinke you that all that are valiant, must be dancers? and all Knights Errant, skip-jacks? I say, if you thinke so, you are deceiued; you haue some that would rather kill Gyants then fetch a caper: if you were to friske, I would saue you that labour, for I can doe it like a Ier-Falcon: but in your dancing, I cannot worke a slitch.

With

With this and such like discourse, *Sancho* made the Reuellers laugh, and laid his Master to bed, laying cloaths enough on him, that hee might sweat out the cold he had taken by dancing.

The next day, *Don Antonio* thought fit to try the Enchanted head, and so, with *Don Quixote*, *Sancho*, and others his friends, and the two Gentlewomen that had so laboured *Don Quixote* in the dance, that stayd all night with *Don Antonio's* wife, hee locked himselfe in the roome where the head was; he told them it's property, enioyning them to silence: and hee said to them, That this was the first time in which hee meant to make prooffe of the vertue of the Enchanted head, and except his two friends, no liuing creature else knew the tricke of that Enchantment; and if *Don Antonio* had not discouered it to them, they also would haue falne into the same admiration that the rest did; for it was not otherwise possible, the fabricke of it being so curious and cunning.

The first that came to the Heads hearing, was *Don Antonio* himselfe, who spoke softly, but so, that he might be heard by all: Tell me, Head, by the vertue that is contained in thee, What thinke I of now? And the head answered (not moouing the lips, with a loud and distinct voyce, that all the by-standers might heare this reason,) I iudge not of thoughts. Which when they all heard, they were astonisht, and the more, seeing neyther in all the roome, nor any where about the table, there was not any humane creature to answere. How many heere be there of vs (quoth *Don Antonio* againe?) And answere was made him in the same tenor voyce: There are thou and thy wife, with two of thy hee-friends, and two of her shee-friends, and a famous Knight called *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and a Squire of his that hight *Sancho Panza*. I marry, sir, heere was the wondring a-fresh, heere was euery ones haire standing on end with pure horror. And *Don Antonio* getting him aside from the head, said, Tis enough now for mee to know that I was not deceiued by him that sold thee mee, Sage Head, Talking Head, Answering Head, Admired Head! Come another now, & ask what he wil: & as your women for the most part are hallicst, & most inquisitiue, the first that came, was one of *Don Antonio's* wiues friends,

E e 3

and

and her demand was this, Tell me, Head, What shall I doe to make my selfe faire? The answer was, Be honest. I haue done, said she. Strait came her other companion, and said, I would faine know, Head, whether my Husband loue mee or no: and the answer was, Thou shalt know by his vsage. The married woman stood by, saying; The question might haue been spared: for good vsage is the best signe of affection. Then came one of *Don Antonio's* friends, and asked, Who am I? The answer was, Thou knowest. I aske thee not that said the Gentleman, but whether thou know me? I doe, it was answered; Thou art *Don Pedro Noris*. No more, O Head, let this suffice, to make mee know thou knowest all. And so stepping aside, the other friend came and asked, Tell me, Head, What desires hath my eldest sonne? I haue told you (it was answered) that I iudge not of thoughts; yet let mee tell you, your sonne desires to bury you; That (quoth the Gentleman) I know well, and daily perceiue, but I haue done. *Don Antonio's* wife came next, and said, Head, I know not what to aske thee, I would onely faine know of thee, if I shall long enioy my deare Husband: and the answer was, Thou shalt, for his health and spare diet promise him many yeeres, which many shorten by distempers.

Now came *Don Quixote*, and said, Tell me, thou that answerest, Was it true, or a dreame, that (as I recount) befell mee in *Montesino's* Caue? shall *Sancho* my Squires whipping be accomplished? shall *Dulcinea* be disenchanted? For that of the Caue, (quoth the Answerer) there is much to be said, it partakes of all: *Sancho's* whipping shall be prolonged: but *Dulcinea's* disenchancing shall come to a reall end. I desire no more, said *Don Quixote*; for so *Dulcinea* be disenchanted, I make account, all my good fortunes come vpon me at a clap.

*Sancho* was the last Demander, and his question vvas this; Head, shall I haply haue another Gouvernement? shall I be free from this penurious Squires life? shall I see my Wife and Children againe? To which it vvas answered him: In thy house shalt thou gouerne; whither if thou returne, thou shalt see thy Wife and children, and leauing thy seruice, thou shalt leaue being a Squire. Very good (quoth *Sancho*) this I could haue told before

before my selfe, and my fathers horse could haue said no more. Beast, quoth *Don Quixote*, what answer wouldst thou haue? Is it not enough, that the answeres this head giues thee, are correspondent to thy questions? Tis true, said *Sancho*: but I would haue knowne more.

And now the questions and answeres were ended: but not the admiration, in which all remained, but *Don Antonio's* friends that knew the conceit. Which *Cid Hamete Benengeli* vwould forthwith declare, not to hold the world in suspence, to thinke that some VVitch, or extraordinary myserie was inclosed in the said head: and thus saith he, that *Don Antonio Moreno*, in imitation of another head, which he saw in *Madrid*, framed by a Caruer, caused this to be made in his house, to entertaine the simple, and make them wonder at it, and the Fabricke was in this manner:

The table it selfe vvas of wood, painted and varnished ouer like Iasper, and the foot on vvhich it stood was of the same, with foure Eagles clawes standing out to vphold it the better.

The head that shewed like the Medall, or picture of a Roman Emperour, and of bras colour, was all hollow, and so was the Table too; to which, it was so cunningly ioyned, that there was no appearance of it: the foot of the Table was likewise hollow, that answered to the brest, and neck of the head: and all this answered to another Chamber, that was vnder the roome where the head was: and thorow all this hollownesse of the foote, the table, brest and neck of the Medall, there vvent a Tinne pipe, made fit to them, that could not be perceiued.

He that was to answer, set his mouth to the Pipe in the Chamber vnderneath, answering to this vpper roome; so that the voice ascended, and descended, as thorow a Trunk, cleerely and distinctly, and it was not possible to find the luggling out.

A Nephew of *Don Antonio's*; a Scholler, a good witty and discreet Youth, was the answerer: who hauing notice from his Vncle, of those that were to enter the Roome, it was easie for him to answer suddenly, and punctually, to their first questions, and to the rest he answered by discreet coniectures.

Moreouer, *Cid Hamete* sayes, that this maruellous Engine

lasted for some ten or twelue dayes : but when it was divulged vp and downe the Citie, that *Don Antonio* had an Enchanted head in his house, that answered to all questions ; fearing lest it should come to the notice of the waking Centinels of our Faith : hauing acquainted those Inquisitors with the businesse, they commanded him to make away with it, lest it should scandalize the ignorant Vulgar: but yet in *Don Quixote* and *Sancho's* opinion the head was still enchanted, and answering: but indeed not altogether so much to *Sancho's* satisfaction.

The Gallants of the Citie, to please *Don Antonio*, and for *Don Quixote's* better hospitalitie, and on purpose that his madness might make the more generall sport, appointed a running at the Ring, about a six dayes after, which was broken off vpon an occasion that after hapned.

*Don Quixote* had a minde to walke round about the Citie on foot ; fearing, that if he went on horsebacke, the Boyes would persecute him : so he & *Sancho*, with two seruants of *Don Antonio's*, went a walking. It hapned, that as they passed throu one street, *Don Quixote* looked vp, and saw written vpon a doore in great Letters, *Heere are Bookes printed*, which pleased him wonderously ; for till then he had neuer scene any Presse ; and he desired to know the manner of it.

In he went, with all his retinue, vvhether he saw in one place drawing of sheetes, in another Correcting, in this Composing, in that mending : Finally, all the Machine that is vsuall in great Presses.

*Don Quixote* came to one of the Boxes, and asked vvhether they had in hand there ? The Workmen told him : he wondred and passed further. To another he came, and asked one that was in it, what he was doing ? The workman answered, Sir, This Gentleman you see ; (and he shewed him a good comely proper man, and somewhat ancient) hath translated an Italian Booke into Spanish ; and I am composing of it heere to be printed.

What is the name of it (quoth *Don Quixote*) ? To which (said the Author) Sir, it is called *Le Bagatelle*, to wit, in Spanish, *The Trifle* : and though it beare but a meane name, yet it contains in it many great and substantiall matters.

I vii-

I vnderstand a little Italian, said *Don Quixote*, and dare venture vpon a Stanzo of *Ariosto's* : but tell me, Signior mine (not that I would examine your skill, but onely for curiositie) haue you euer found set downe in all your writing, the vvord *Pinna-ta* ? Yes, often quoth the Author : and how translate you it, said *Don Quixote* ?

How should I translate it, said the Author, but in saying, *Page-Pot* ? Body of me (said *Don Quixote*) and how forward are you in the Italian Idiom ? He lay a good wager that vvhere the Italian sayes, *Piace*, you translate it, *Please* ; and vvhere *Piu*, you say, *more*, and *Su*, is *aboue* ; and *Gin*, *beneath*.

Yes indeed doe I, said the Author : for these be their proper significations.

I dare sweare (quoth *Don Quixote*) you are not knowne to the world, which is alwayes backward in rewarding flourishing wits, and laudable industry : Oh what a company of rare abilities are lost in the vvorld ! What wits cubbed vp, what vertues contemned : but for all that, mee thinkes this translating from one language into another (except it be out of the Queenes of Tongues, Greeke and Latine) is iust like looking vpon the wrong side of Arras-Hangings : that although the Pictures be scene, yet they are full of threed ends, that darken them, and they are not scene with the plainenesse & smoothnesse, as on the other side ; and the translating out of easie languages, argues neither wit, nor elocution, no more then doth the copying from out of one paper into another : yet I inferre not from this, that translating is not a laudable exercise : for a man may be far worse employed, and in things lesse profitable.

I except amongst Translators our two famous ones: the one, Doctor *Christoual de Figueroa* in his *Pastor fido*, and the other, *Don Iohn de Xaurigni*, in his *Amyntas*, vvhere they haply leaue it doubtfull, which is the Translation or Originall. But tell me, Sir, Print you this Booke vpon your owne charge, or sell you your licence to some Booke-binder ? Vpon mine owne, said the Author, and I thinke to get a thousand crownes by it at least, vvith this first impression : for there will be two thousand Copies, and they will vent at three shillings apiece roundly.

You



You vnderstand the matter well, said *Don Quixote*: it seemes you know not the passages of Printers, and the correspondencies they haue betwixt one and the other: I promise you, that when you haue two thousand Copies lying by you, you'll be so troubled, as passeth; and the rather, if the booke be but a little dull, and not conceited all thorow.

Why, would you haue me (quoth the Author) let a Bookseller haue my Licence, that would giue me but a halfe-penny a sheete, and that thinkes he doth me a kindnes in it too? I print not my workes to get fame in the world: for I am by them vuell knowne in it, I must haue profit; for without that, fame is not worth a rush.

God send you good lucke, said *Don Quixote*; so he passed to another Box, where he saw some correcting a sheete of a Book, Intituled, *The Light of the Soule*: and in seeing it, he said, Such bookes as these (though there be many of them) ought to bee imprinted: for there be many sinners, and many lights are needfull, for so many be darkned.

Hee went on, and saw them correcting another Booke; and enquiring the Title, they answered him, that it was called, The second part of the Ingenious Knight, *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, made by such a one, an Inhabitant of *Tordesillas*.

I haue notice of this Book, said *Don Quixote*, and in my conscience, I thought before now, it had beene burnt and turned to ashes for an idle Pamphlet: but it will not, like Hogs, want it's Saint *Martin*: for your fained Histories are so much the more good and delightfull, by how much they come neere the truth, or the likenesse of it: and the true ones are so much the better, by how much the truer; and saying thus, with some shewes of distaste, he left the Presse: and that very day *Don Antonio* purposed to carry him to the Gallies, that vvere in the Wharfe: at which *Sancho* much reioyced; for hee had neuer in his life scene any.

*Don Antonio* gaue notice to the Generall of the Gallies, that in the afternoone he would bring his ghest, the famous *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, to see them: of whom all the Citie by this

this time had notice. And in the next Chapter, what hapned to him, shall be declared.

## CHAP. LXIII.

*Of the ill chance that befell Sancho at his seeing the Gallies, with the strange Adventure of the Morisca.*

Great were the Discourses that *Don Quixote* framed to himselfe, touching the answers of the Enchanted head, but none of them fell into the Imposture, and all concluded in the promise, which he held for certaine, of the disenchantment of *Dulcinea*: there his blood flowed within him, and he reioyced within himselfe, beleeuing he should soone see the accomplishment of it: and *Sancho*, though (as hath beene said) he abhorred to be a Gouvernour, yet he desired to beare sway againe, and to be obeyed: for such is the desire of rule, though it be but in iest.

In conclusion, that afternoone *Don Antonio Moreno* their Oast, with his two friends, *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, went to the Gallies. The Generall, who had notice of their comming, as soone as they were come neere the Sea side, made all the Gallies strike their Tilt-sayles, and the Hoboyes sounded, and they lanchd a Cock-boat to the water, which was all couered with rich clothes, and Cushions of crimson Veluet: and iust as *Don Quixote* entred into it, the Admirall Gally discharged her fore-Castle peece; and the rest of the Gallies likewise did the same: and as *Don Quixote* mounted at the right side Ladder, all the fry of the Slaues, as the custome is when any man of quality enters the Gally, cryed, *Hu, Hu, Hu*, thrise a-row.

The Generall, who was a man of qualitie, a *Valencian* Gentleman, gaue him his hand: & being entred, embraced him, saying, This day will I marke with a white stone, for one of the best that shall haue befallne me in all my life time: hauing scene Signior *Don Quixote de la Mancha*: the time and signes that appeare in him, shewing that all the worth of a Knight Errant, is

contained and summed vp in him. With the like courteous phrase, reply'd *Don Quixote*, iocund about measure, to see himselfe so Lord-like treated withall.

They all went a-Sterne, which was very well drest vp, and they sat vpon the Railes. The Boat-Swaine got him to the fore-Castle, and gaue warning with his whistle to the Slaues, to dis-robe themselves: which was done in an instant.

*Sancho* that saw so many naked men, was astonisht: and the more, when he saw them hoist vp their Tilt so speedily, that he thought all the Diuels in Hell laboured there. *Sancho* sat vpon the Pilots seate, neere the hindermost Rower, on the right hand: who being instructed what he should doe, laid hold on *Sancho*: and so lifting him vp, passed him to another; and the second to a third: so the whole rabble of the Slaues, beginning from the right side, passed and made him vault from one seat to another so violently, that poore *Sancho* lost his sight; and vndoubtedly beleeued, that the Fiends of hell carried him; and they gaue him not ouer, till they had passed him ouer all the left side too, and then set him againe on the Sterne: so the poore soule was sore brused, and bemauled, and scarce imagined what had hapned to him.

*Don Quixote*, that saw this flight of *Sancho's* without wings, asked the Generall if those were Ceremonies, that were vsed to such as came newly into the Gallies? for if they were, that he who intended not to professe in them, liked no such pastime: and he vowed to God, that if any came to lay hold on him, to make him tumble, he would kicke out his soule: and in so saying, he stood vp, and grasped his sword.

At this instant they let downe the Tilt againe, and with a terrible noise let fall the Maine-yard, so that *Sancho* thought Heauen was off the Hindges, and fell vpon his head, which he crouched together, and clapped it for feare betwixt his legges. *Don Quixote* was not altogether as he should be: for hee began to quake and shrink vp his shoulders, and grew pale. The Slaues hoisted the Maine-yard with the same fury and noise that they had formerly strooke it with, and all with such silence, as if they had had neither voice nor breath. The Boate-Swaine made

signes

signes to them, to weigh Anchor: & leaping toward the fore-castle, in the midst of them, with his whip or Buls-Fizzle, he began to fly-flap their shoulders.

When *Sancho* saw such a company of Red-feet mooue at once: for such he ghessed, the oares to be, he said to himselfe, I marry, heere bee things truely enchanted, and not those my Master speakes of. What haue these vnhappy soules committed, that they are thus lashed? and how dares this fellow that goes whistling vp and downe alone, whip so many? VVell, I say, This is Hell, or Purgatorie at least.

*Don Quixote*, that saw with what attention *Sancho* beheld all that passed, said, Ah friend, *Sancho*, how speedily, and vwith how little cost might you, if you would, take off your dubler, and clap your selfe amongst these fellows, and make an end of dis-enchanting *Dulcinea*? For hauing so many companions in misery, you would not be so sensible of paine: and besides, it might be, that the sage *Martin* might take euery one of these lashes, being well laid on for ten.

The Generall would haue asked what lashes those were, and what dis-enchantment of *Dulcinea's*: when a Marriner cryed out, *Momiri*, makes signes that there is a Vessell, with Oares towards the West-side of the Coast. (Which said) The Generall leapt vpon the fore-Castle, and cryed, Goe to, my Hearts, let her not scape: this Boat, that our watch-tower discouers, is some Frigot of Argiers Pirates.

And now the three other Gallies came to their Admirall, to know what they should do. The General commanded that two of them should lanch to the Sea: and he with the other would goe betwixt Land and Land, that so the vessell might not escape them.

The Slaues rowed hard, and so furiously draue on the Gallies, as if they had slowne: and those that lanchd first into the Sea, about a two miles off discovered a Vessell, which in sight they marked to haue about a fourteene or fifteene Oares, as it fell out to be true: which Vessell, when she discovered the Gallies, she put her selfe in chase, hoping by her swiftnesse to escape: but it pretailed nothing; for the Admiral Gally was one of the swif-

rest

tell vessels that layed in the Sea, and so got of the other, so much, that they in the Frigot plainly saw, that they could not escape; and so the Master of her would haue had them forsaken their Oares, and yeelded, for feare of offending our Generall: but fate that would haue it otherwise, so disposed the matter, that as the Admirall came on so nigh, that they in the Barke might heare a cry from the Gally that they should yeeld: two *Torquis*, that is, two drunken Turkes, that were in the Frigot with twelue others, discharged two Calieuers, with which they killed two Souldiours, that stood abaft our Gally. Which when our Generall saw, he vowed not to leaue a man aliue in the vessel: and comming in great fury to grapple vvith her, shee escaped vnder the Gallies Oares: the Gally passed forward a pretty way: they in the Vessell saw themselves gone, and beganne to set sayle, and to fly afresh, as they saw the Gally comming on them: but their industrie did them not so much good, as their presumption, hurt: for the Admirall ouertaking them vvithin one halfe mile, clapped his Oares on the Vessell, and so rooke her and euery man aliue in her.

By this the two other Gallies came, and all foure returned to the Wharfe with their prize, vvhere a vvorld of people expected them, desirous to see what they brought: the Generall cast Anchor neere Land, & perceiued that the Vice-Roy of the Citie was on the shore; he commanded that a Cock-boat should be lanchd to bring him; and that they should strike the Maineyard, to hang presently the Master of the Frigot, and the rest of the Turkes that they had taken in her, which were about six and thirty persons; all goodly men, and most of them Turkish shot.

The Generall asked, who was Master of the Barke? and answered was made him by one of the Captiues in Spanish, (who appeared after to bee a run-agate Spaniard:) This Youth you see heere is our Master: and he shewed him one of the goodliest comely Youths that could be deciphered by humane imagination.

He was not to see too, about twenty yeeres of age: the Generall asked, Tell me ill-advised Dogge, what moued thee to  
kill

kill my Souldiers, since thou sawest it was impossible to escape? is this the respect due to Admirals? Knowest not thou that rashnesse is not valour? Doubtfull hopes may make men bold, but not desperate.

The Master would haue repli'd, but the General could not as yet giue him the hearing, by reason of his going to welcome the Viceroy aboard, who entred now the Gally with some seruants of his, and others of the City.

You haue had a pretty chase on't, my Lord Generall, said the Viceroy. So pretty, said the Generall, that your Excellency shall see it hanged vp at the Maine-yard. How so (quoth the Viceroy?) Why, they haue killed mee (said he) against all Law of Armes, reason, or custome of Warres, two of the best Souldiers I had in my Gallies, and I haue sworne to hang them all, especially this youth; the Master of the Frigot and he shewed him one that had his hands bound, & the halter about his necke, expecting his death. The Viceroy beheld him, and seeing him so comely, hand some, and so humble vvithall, his beauty giuing him in that instant, as it were, a Letter of recommendation, the Viceroy had a minde to saue him, and therefore asked,

Tell me, Master, art thou a Turke borne, or a Moore, or a Runn-agate?

To which the Youth answered him in his owne language, Neyther of all. Why, what art thou, quoth the Viceroy? A Christian woman, said the young man. A Woman, and a Christian in this habit, in these employments? a thing rather to be wondred at, then beleued. My Lords, I beseech you quoth the Youth, let my execution be a little deferred, whilest I recount my life. What heart so hard that would not be softened with that reason, at least to heare the sad and griued Youth, to tell his story? The Generall bad him proceed, but that there was no hope for him of pardon for his notorious offence. So the Youth began in this manner: Of that linage, more vvnhappy then wife, on which a Sea of misfortunes in these latter times haue rained, am I, borne of Moriscan Parents, and in the current of their misery, was carried by two of my Vncles into Barbary; it nothing auailing me to say I was a Christian,

an, as I am indeed, and not seeming so, as many of vs; but truly Catholike: but this truth preuailed nothing with the Officers that had charge giuen them to looke to our banishment, neyther would my Vncles beleue I was a Christian, but that it was a trick of mine to stay in my native Country: and so rather forcibly, then by my consent, they carried me with them. My Mother was a Christian, and my Father discreet, and so likewise I sucked the Catholike faith in my milke: I was well brought vp, & neither in my language or fashion, made shew to be a Morisca. With these vertues, my beauty (if so be I haue any) increased also, and though my restraint and retirement was great, yet it was not such, but that a young Gentleman, called *Don Gaspar Gregorio* had gotten a sight of me: This Gentleman was sonne and heyre to a Knight that liued neere to our towne; hee saw me, and we had some speech; and seeing himselfe lost to me, but I not wonne by him, twere large to tell, especially fearing that as I am speaking, this halter must throttle mee: yet I say, that *Don Gregorio* would needs accompany mee in my banishment, and so mingling himselfe with Moriscos that came out of other places (for he vnderstood the language well) in our voyage hee got acquainted with my two Vncles that went with me; for my Father, wisely, when hee heard the Edict of our banishment, went out of our towne, and went to seeke some place in a foraine Country, where we might be entertained; and he left many pearles, precious stones, and some money in double Pistols hidden in a secret place (which I onely know of) but he commanded me, by no means to meddle with it, if we were banish'd before his returne. I did so, and with my Vncles and others of our kindred, passed into Barbary, and our resting-place was *Argiers*, I might haue said, Hell. The King there, had notice of my beauty, and likewise that I was rich, which partly fell out to be my happinesse. He sent for me, and asked me of what part of Spaine I was, and what money and iewels I brought? I told him the place, but that my iewels and monies were buried: but that they might easily be had, if I might but goe thither for them. All this I sayd, hoping his owne Couctousnesse would more blinde him then my beauty.

Whilest

Whilest we were in this discourse, they told him there came one of the goodliest faire Youths with me that could be imagined. I thought presently it was *Don Gregorio* they meant, whose comeliness is not to be paralleld. It troubled mee to thinke in what danger he would be; for those barbarous Turkes do more esteeme a handsome boy, then a woman, be shee neuer so faire. The King commanded straight, that hee should be brought before him, that he might see him, and asked me if it were true they said of the Youth. I told him Yes (and it seemed Heauen put it into my head) but that hee was no man, but a woman as I vvas, and I desired him he would giue me leaue to cloath her in her naturall habit, that her beauty might appeare to the full, and that otherwise too, she would be too shamesfast before him. Hee bad me doe so, and that on the morrow he would giue order for my returne to Spaine to seeke the hidden Treasure. I spoke vvith *Don Gaspar*, and told him what danger he had been in by being aman: so I clad him like a Moorish woman, and that afternoon brought him to the Kings presence, who seeing him, admired at her beauty, and thought to reserue him, & to send him for a Present to the *Grand Signior*: & so to auoid the danger in his *Serraglio* of women if he put her there, he commanded her to be kept in a house of certain Moorish Gentlewomen, whither he was carried. How this troubled vs both (for I cannot deny that I loue him) let them consider that haue been absent from their Loues. The King gaue order then, that I should come for Spaine in this Frigot, & that these two Turkes that killed your Souldiers, shuld accompany mee, and this Renegade Spaniard, pointing to him that had first spoken, who I know is in heart a Christian, and hath a greater desire to remaine heere, then to returne into Barbary, the rest are Moores and Turkes that onely serue for Rowers. The two couetous and insolent Turkes, not respecting the order we had, that they should set me and this runnagate Spaniard on the first shore, in the habits of Christians (of which we were provided) would needs first scowre the coast, & take some prize, if they could, fearing that if they first should set vs on land, by some mischance we might discover the Frigot to be vpon the coast: so that they might be taken by the Gallies, and ouernight

Ff

we

we descried this wharfe, and not knowing of these foure Gallies, we were discouered, and this hath betalne vs that you haue seene. In fine, *Don Gregorio* remaines in his womans habit amongst women, in manifest danger of his destruction, and I am heere prisoner, expecting, or to say truer, fearing the losing of my life, which notwithstanding wearies me. This, Sirs, is the conclusion of my lamentable History, as true as vnfortunate: my request is, that I may die a Christian, since (as I haue said) I am not guilty of that crime into which the rest of my Nation haue fallen: and with this she broke off, her eyes pregnant with teares, which were accompanied with many from the standers by also.

The Viceroy, all tender and compassionate, came to her, and vndid the Cord that bound the Moores faire hands. In the meane time, whilest this Christian Morisca related her Storie, an ancient Pilgrim that entred the Gally, had his eyes fastned vpon her; and she had no sooner ended her discourse, when he callt himselfe at her feet, and embracing them with interrupted words, sighes, and sobs, said; Oh my vnfortunate daughter *Ana Felix*, I am *Ricote* thy Father, that haue returned to seeke thee, as not being able to liue without thee; for thou art my very soule. At these words *Sancho* opened his eyes, and lifted vp his head (which he held downe, thinking vpon his ill-fauoured tossing in the Gally) and beholding the Pilgrim, knew him to be the same *Ricote* that hee met the same day hee left his Government, and it appear'd she was his daughter, when being vnbound, she embraced her Father, mingling her teares with his. Then said he to the General and Viceroy, This, my Lords, is my daughter, more vnhappy in her successe, then in her name, as famous for beauty, as I for wealth. I left my Country, to finde a resting-place in some strange Country, and hauing found one in Germany, returned in this Pilgrimes weed in company of other Germanes to seeke my daughter, and to dig out my hidden treasure, but found not her, and the treasure I bring with me, and now by strange chance haue lighted on my greatest treasure, that is, my beloued daughter: if so be our small offence, & her teares and mine together, with the integrity of your Iustice, may open the gates of mercy, shew it vs, that neuer had so much as a thought

thought once to offend you, nor conspired with those of our owne linage who were iustly banished. Then said *Sancho*, I know *Ricote* well, and know all is true he saith, concerning that *Ana Felix* is his daughter, but for other slim-flams, whether he had a good or bad intention, I intermeddle not.

The by-standers wondring all at this accident, the Generall said, Well, your teares will not let me accomplish my vow due, faire *Ana Felix*, as long as Heauen will giue thee leaue, and let those rash slaues die that committed the fault: so he commanded that the two Turkes that had killed his two Souldiers, should presently be hanged vpon the maine Yarde: but the Vice-roy desired him earnestly not to hang them, since they had shewed more madnesse then valour. The Generall condescended, for reuenge is not good in cold blood; and straight they contriued how to get *Don Gregorio* free. *Ricote* offered two thousand Ducats hee had in Pearles and Iewels towards it: Many meanes were thought on, but none so good, as that of the *Renegado* Spaniard that was mentioned, who offered to returne to Argiers in some small Barke, onely with some sixe Christian Oares; for he knew where, how, and when he might dis-embarke himselfe, & the house also where *Don Gaspar* was. The Generall and Vice-roy were in some doubt of him, or to trust him with the Christians that should row with him. But *Anna Felix* vndertooke for him, and *Ricote* offered to ransom the Christians if they were taken. And being agreed, the Vice-roy went ashore, and *Don Antonio Moreno* carried the Morisca and her Father with him, the Vice-roy enioyning him to vse them as well as possibly he might, and offered him the command of any thing in his house toward it. Such was the charity and beneuolence that the beauty of *Ana Felix* had infused into his brest.

## CHAP. LXIII.

*Of an Aduenture that most perplext Don Quixote, of any that hitherto befell him.*

**T**He History sayes, that *Don Antonio Morenos* wife took great delight to see *Ana Felix* in her house: shee welcommed her most kindly, enamoured as well on her goodnesse, as beauty and discretion; for in all, the *Morisca* was exquisite, and all the City came (as if by a warning bell) to see her. *Don Quixote* told *Don Antonio*, that they tooke a vwrong course for the freeing of *Don Gregorio*, which was more dangerous then conuenient, and that it had beene better, that he were set on shore in Barbary with his Horse and Armes; for that he would deliuer him in spight of the whole Moorisme there, as *Don Gayferos* had done his Spouse *Melisendra*.

Looke you, Sir, said *Sancho*, when he heard this, *Don Gayferos* brought his Spouse through firme Land, and so carried her into France; but here, though wee should deliuer *Don Gregorio*, we haue no meanes to bring him into Spaine, the Sea being betwixt vs and home.

There is a remedy for euery thing but Death, said *Don Quixote*; for tis but hauing a Barke ready at the Sea side, and in spite of all the world we may embarke our selues.

You doe prettily facilitate the matter, said *Sancho*, but tis one thing to say, and another to doe: and I like the Runnagate, for me thinkes he is a good honest plaine fellow. *Don Antonio* said, that if the Runnagate performed not the businesse, that then the Grand *Don Quixote* should passe ouer into Barbary. Some two daies after, the Runnagate embarkt in a litle boat with six oares on a side, manned with lusty tall fellows, and two daies after that, the Gallies were Eastward bound; the Generall hauing requested the Viceroy, that he would be pleased to let him know the successe of *Don Gregorio's* liberty, & likewise of *Ana Felix*. The Viceroy promised to fulfill his request.

And *Don Quixote* going out one morning to take the ayre vpon

vpon the wharfe, armed at all points; for as he often vsed to say, his Armes were his ornaments, and to skirmish his delight, and so he was neuer without them; hee saw a Knight come toward him, armed from top to toe, carrying vpon his shield a bright shining Moone painted, who comming within distance of hearing, directing his voyce to *Don Quixote* aloud, said, Famous Knight, and neuer sufficiently extolled *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, I am the Knight of the white Moone, whose renowned deeds perhaps thou hast heard of: I am come to combat vwith thee, and by force of Armes to make thee know and confesse, that my Mistresse, be she whom she will, is without comparison fairer then thy *Dulcinea del Toboso*; which truth if thou plainly confesse, thou shalt saue thy life, and me a labour in taking it: and if thou fight, and that I vanquish thee, all the satisfaction I will haue, is, that thou forsake thy Armes, and leaue seeking Aduentures, and retire thy selfe to thy home for the space of one whole yeere; where thou shalt liue peaceable and quietly, without laying hand to thy sword, which befits thy estate, and also thy soules health: and if thou vanquish me, my head shall be at thy mercy, and the spoyles of my Horse and Armour shall be thine, and also the fame of my exploits shall passe from mee to thee: Consider what is best to be done, and answer me quickly, for I haue onely this daies respite to dispatch this businesse.

*Don Quixote* was astonisht and in suspence, as well at the Knight of the white Moone his arrogance, as the cause of it, for which he challenged him, and so with a quiet and staied demeanour answered him;

*Knight of the white Moone*, whose exploits hitherto I haue not heard of, I dare sweare thou neuer sawest the famous *Dulcinea*; for if thou hadst, I know thou wouldst not haue entred into this demand: for her sight would haue confirmed, that there neyther hath beene, nor can be a beauty to be compared vwith hers: and therefore not to say you lye, but that you erre in your proposition, I accept of your challenge, with the aforesaid conditions; and strait, because your limited day shall not passe, and I onely except against one of your conditions, which is, that the fame of your exploits passe to me, for I know not what kinde of



ones yours be, and I am content with mine owne such as they be: begin you then your Carriere when you will, and I will doe the like, and God and S. George.

The Viceroy had notice of this, and thought it had been some new Adventure plotted by *Don Antonio Moreno*, or some other Gentleman: and so out of the City he went with *Don Antonio*, & many other Gentlemen that accompanied him to the wharfe, iust as *Don Quixote* was turning *Rosinantes* reines to take vp as much ground as was fit for him. When the Vice-roy saw in both of them signes to encounter, he put himselfe betwixt them, & asked what was the cause of their single combat. The Knight of the white Moone answered him, that it was about a precedency in beauty, and briefly repeated what hee had formerly done to *Don Quixote*, together with the conditions accepted by both parties.

The Vice-roy came to *Don Antonio*, and asked him in his eare, if he knew that Knight of the white Moone, or if it were some trick they meant to put vpon *Don Quixote*?

*Don Antonio* made answer, that he neyther knew the Knight, or whether the Combat were in iest or earnest.

This answer made the Vice-roy doubt whether he should let them proceed to the Combat; but being perswaded that it could not be but a iest, hee remoued, saying; Sir Knights, if there be no remedy but to confesse or dye, & that Signior *Don Quixote* be obblinate, and you Knight of the white Moone, more so then he, God haue mercy on you, and too't.

The Knight of the white-Moone most courteously thanked the Vice-roy for the licence he gaue them, and *Don Quixote* too did the like; vvhich heartily recommending himselfe to heaven, and his Mistresse *Dulcinea* (as he vsed vpon all such occasions) he turned about to begin his Carriere, as his enemy had done, and without Trumpets sound, or of any other warlike instrument that might giue them signall for the onser: they both of them set spurs to their Horses, and the Knight of the white-Moones being the swifter, met *Don Quixote* ere hee had ranne a quarter of his Carriere so forcibly (without touching him with his Lance, for it seemed he carried it aloft on purpose) that he tumbled

bled horse and man both to the ground, and *Don Quixote* had a terrible fall: so he got straight on the top of him; and clapping his Lances point vpon his Visor, said, You are vanquished, Knight, and a dead man, if you confesse not, according to the conditions of our combate. *Don Quixote* all bruised and amazed, without heauing vp his Visor, as if he had spoken out of a tombe, with a faint and weake voice, said, *Dulcinea del Toboso* is the fairest woman in the world, and I the vnfortunatell Knight on earth; and it is not fit that my weaknes defraud this truth: thrust your Lance into me, Knight, and kill mee, since you haue bereaued me of my honour. Not so truly, quoth he of the white-Moone, let the fame of my Lady *Dulcinea's* beauty liue in her entirenesse: I am onely contented that the Grand *Don Quixote* retire home for a yeere, or til such time as I please, as we agreed, before we began the battell.

All this, the Vice-Roy with *Don Antonio* and many others standing by heard; and *Don Quixote* answered, that so nothing were required of him in preiudice of his Lady *Dulcinea*, hee would accomplish all the rest, like a true and punctuall Knight.

This Confession ended, the Knight of the white-Moone turned his Horse, and making a low obeysance on horseback to the Vice-Roy, he rode a false gallop into the Citie. The Vice-roy willed *Don Antonio* to follow him, and to know by all meanes who he was.

*Don Quixote* was lifted vp, and they discovered his face, and found him discolour'd and in a cold sweate. *Rosinante* out of pure hard handling, could not as yet stirre.

*Sancho* all sad and sorrowfull knew not what to doe or say, and all that had hapned, to him seemed but a dreame: and all that Machine, a matter of Enchantment: he saw his Master was vanquished, and bound not to take Armes for a yeere. Now he thought the light of his glory was eclipsed, the hopes of his late promises were vndone, and parted as smoke with winde; he feared lest *Rosinante's* bones were broken, and his Masters out of ioynt: Finally, in a Chaire, which the Vice-Roy commanded to be brought, he was carried to the Citie, whither the Vice-

Roy too returned, desirous to know vvho the Knight of the White-Moone vvvas, that had left *Don Quixote* in so bad a taking.

## CHAP: LXV.

*vvho the Knight of the White-Moone was, with Don Gregorio's libertie, and other passages.*

**D**On *Antonio Moreno* followed the Knight of the White-Moone, and many Boyes too followed & persecuted him, til he got him to his Inne into the Citie. *Don Antonio* entred, desirous to know him; and hee had his Squire to vn-arme him: he shut himselfe in a lower roome, and *Don Antonio* with him, vvho stood vpon Thornes, till he knew who he was.

Hee of the White-Moone, seeing then that the Gentleman would not leaue him, said, I vvell know, Sir, wherefore you come, and to know who I am; and since there is no reason to deny you this, I will tell you, whil't my man is vn-arming mee, the truth without erring a iot. Know, Sir, that I am stiled the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, and am one of *Don Quixotes* town: whose wilde madnes hath moued as many of vs as know him to compassion; & me amongst the rest most: and beleeuing that the best meanes to procure his health, is to keep him quiet, & so to haue him in his own house. I thought vpon this deuice: and so about a three moneths since, I met him vpon the way, calling my selfe by the name of the Knight of the Looking-glasse, with a purpose to fight with him, and vanquish him, vvithout doing him any hurt; and making this the condition of our combat, that the vanquished should be left to the discretion of the vanquisher: and that which I would inioyne him (for I held him already conquered) was, that he should returne home, and not abroad againe in a vvhole ycere; in which time he might haply haue beene cured: but Fortune vvould haue it otherwise; for he vanquished me, and vn-horsed me, and so my proiect tooke

no effect: he went on his vvay, and I returned, conquered, ashamed, and bruised with my fall, that vvvas very dangerous: but for all that, I had still a desire to finde him againe, and to conquer him, as now you haue scene.

And hee beeing so punctuall, in obseruing the orders of Knight Errantry, will doubtlesse keepe his promise made to mee.

This, Sir, is all I can tell you, and I beseech you conceale me from *Don Quixote*, that my desires may take effect; and that the man who hath otherwise a good vnderstanding, may recouer it if his madnesse leaue him.

Oh, Sir, said *Don Antonio*, God forgive you the wrong you doe the whole world, in seeking to recouer the pleasantest mad man in the world.

Perceiue you not, that this recouery cannot bee so much worth, as the delight that his fopperies cause? but I imagine, Sir Bachelor, that all your Art will not make a man so irrecoverably mad, wife againe: and if it were not vncharitable, I would say, Neuer may he recouer: for in his health wee lose not onely his owne conceits, but *Sancho Pansa* his Squires too, each of which would turne melancholy it selfe into mirth: for all that, I will hold my peace, I will say nothing, and see whether I ghesse right, that Signior *Carrasco's* paines will be to no purpose. Who answered, that as yet the businesse was brought to a good passe, and he hoped for a happy successe: and so offering *Don Antonio* his seruice hee tooke leaue of him. And causing his Armor to be packed vpō a great hee Mule, at the instant he got himselfe vpon the Horse, with which hee entred the Lists; and the same day he went out of the Citie homeward, where by the way nothing hapned to him, worth the relating in this true Hiltorie.

*Don Antonio* told the Vice-Roy all that *Carrasco* said; at which he receiued not much cōtent, for in *Don Quixotes* retirement, was theirs also that euer had notice of his mad pranks.

Sixe dayes was *Don Quixote* in his bed, all muddy, sad and sorrowfull, and wayward, descanting in his thoughts vpon his ill fortune to be vanquished. *Sancho* comforted him, & amongst other

other reasons, told him, Signior mine, cheere vp, beluely, if you can, giue Heauen thanks, that though you came vvith a tumbling cast to the ground, yet you haue neuer a rib broken; and since you know that sweet meat must haue sowre sawce, and that there is not alwayes good cheere, vvhere there is a smoking Chimney, cry, A fig for the Physician, since you need not his help in this disease. Let's home to our houses, and leaue looking after these Aduentures thorow Countreys and places wee know not: and if you consider it vvell, I am heere the greatest loser, though you be in the worst pickle.

I, though when I left to be a Gouvernour, left also my desires that way; yet left not my desire of being an Earle, which vvill neuer be effected, if you leaue to be a King, by leauing the exercise of Chiuallrie, and so my hopes are like to vanish into smoke.

Peace, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, my retirement shall be but for a yeere, and then Ile straight to my honourable profession againe, and I shall not want a Kingdome for my selfe, and some Earledome for thee.

God grant it, said *Sancho*, and let sinne be deafe: for I haue alwayes heard, that a good hope is better then a bad possession. In this discourse they were, when as *Don Antonio* entred, with shewes of great content, saying, My reward, Signior *Don Quixote*, for the newes I bring; for *Don Gregorio* and the run-agate Spaniard with him, are vpon the Wharfe: the Wharfe, quoth I? In the Vice-Royes house, and will be here presently.

*Don Quixote* was somewhat reuiued, and said, Truly, I was about to haue said, I would it had beene otherwise, that I might haue gone into *Barbary*, and with the strength and vigour of this Arme, not onely haue giuen liberty to *Don Gregorio*, but to all the Christian captiues in *Barbary*.

But what say I, wretch that I am? Am not I vanquished? Am not I ouerthrowne? Am not I hee that must not touch Armes this twelue moneth? What then do I promising? Why doe I praise my selfe, since it were fitter for mee to vse a distaffe then a sword? No more of that, Sir, said *Sancho*: a man is a man, though he haue but a hofe on his head. To day for thee, and to morrow for me: and for these thumps and encounters there is

no heed to be taken: for he that falls to day, may rise to morrow, except it be that he meane to lye a-bed; I meane, to dismay and not take heart to fresh skirmishes: and therefore raise you your selfe now, to welcome *Don Gregorio*: for mee thinkes, the people of the house are in an vprore, and by this hee is come: and he said true; for *Don Gregorio* hauing giuen the Vice-Roy account of his going and comming, desirous to see *Ana Felix*, he came vvith the run-agate to *Don Antonio's* house: and though *Don Gregorio*, vvhen they brought him out of *Argiers*, were in a womans habit; yet by the vvay in the Boate hee changed it with a Captiue, that came with him: but in vvhatsoeuer habit he had beene in, hee vvould haue seemed a personage, vvorthy to be coueted, sought after, and serued: for he was extraordinary comely, and about some seuentene or eightene yeeres of age. *Ricote* and his Daughter went out to welcome him; the Father with teares, and the Daughter vvith honesty.

They did not embrace each other; for where there is loue, there is neuer much loosenesse.

The two ioynt beauties of *Don Gregorio*, and *Ana Felix* astonished all the by-standers.

Silence there spoke for the two Louers, and their eyes were tongues, that discovered their ioyfull, but honest thoughts: the run-agate told them the meanes and slight hee had vied to get *Don Gregorio* away. *Don Gregorio* told his dangers and straites he was put to, amongst the women with whom hee remained, not in tedious manner, but with much breuitie; where hee shewed that his discretion was aboue his yeeres.

Finally, *Ricote* paid and royally satisfied as well the run-agate, as those that had rowed with him. The run-agate was reduc't and re-incorporated with the Church, and of a rotten member, became cleane and sound, by penance and repentance.

Some two dayes after, the Vice-Roy treated with *Don Antonio* about meanes, that *Ricote* and his Daughter might remaine in Spaine; thinking it to be no inconuenience, that so Christianly a Father and Daughter should remaine, and to see too so vvell intentionated.

*Don Antonio* offered to negotiate it amongst other businesse, for

for which hee was to goe to the Court of necessitie, letting them know, that there by fauour and bribes many difficult matters are ended.

There is no trust in fauors or bribes, said *Ricote* then present; for with the *Grand Don Bernardino de Velasco*, Counte *Salazar*, to whom his Maiesty hath giuen in charge our expulsion, neither entreaties, promises, bribes or compassion can preuaile: for though true it be, that he mixeth his iustice with mercy, yet because he sees, that the whole body of our Nation is putrid and contaminated, he vseth rather Cauterizing that burnes it, then oyntment that softens it: and so with prudence, skill, diligence, and terror, he hath borne vpon his strong shoulders, & brought to due execution, the waight of this great Machine; our industries, tricks, slights and frauds, not being able to blinde his vvatchfull eyes of *Argus*, which vvake continually: to the end that none of ours may remaine; that like a hidden roote, may in time sprout vp, and scatter venemous fruit throughout all Spaine, now clenfed, and free from the feare, into which their multitude put her (a heroike resolution of the *Grand Philip* the third, and vnheard of wisedome, to haue committed it to *Don Bernardino* and *Velasco*).

Well, vvhen I come thither said *Don Antonio*, I will vse the best meanes I can, and let Heauen dispose vvhat shall bee fittest. *Don Gregorio* shall goe with me, to comfort the affliction of his parents for his absence; *Ana Felix* shal stay vvith my wife heere, or in a Monastery: and I know the Vice-roy will bee glad to haue honest *Ricote* stay vvith him, till he sees how I can negotiate.

The Vice-roy yeelded to all that was proposed: but *Don Gregorio* knowing what passed, said, that by no meanes he could or would leaue *Ana Felix*: but intending to see his friends, and to contriue how he might returne for her, at length he agreed. *Ana Felix* remained with *Don Antonio's* wife, and *Ricote* in the Vice-roy his house.

The time came that *Don Antonio* was to depart, and *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, which vvvas some two dayes after, for *Don Quixotes* fall would not suffer him to trauell sooner. When

Don

*Don Gregorio* parted from *Ana Felix*, all was teares, swooning, sighs and sobbs. *Ricote* offered *Don Gregorio* a 1000. crownes: but he refused them, and borrowed onely siue of *Don Antonio*, to pay him at the Court againe: with this they both departed, and *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* next (as hath beene said) *Don Quixote* disarmed, and *Sancho* on foote, because Dapple vvvas laden with the Armour.

---

CHAP. LXVI.

*That treats of what the Reader shall see, and hee that hearkens heare.*

As they went out of *Barselona*, *Don Quixote* beheld the place where he had his fall, and said, *Hic Troia fuit*, here vvvas my ill fortune, and not my cowardize, that bereaued mee of my former gotten glory: here Fortune vsed her turnes, and returnes with me: heere my exploits were darkned, and finally, my fortune fell, neuer to rise againe. Which *Sancho* hearing, said, Signior mine, 'Tis as proper to great spirits to be patient in aduersitie, as iocund in prosperity, and this I take from my selfe: for if when I my selfe being a Gouvernour was merry; now that I am a poore Squire on foot, I am not sad. For I haue heard say, that she you call vp and downe Fortune, is a drunken longing vvoman, and vvithall blinde, and so shee sees not what she doth; neither knowes whom she casts downe, or whom she raiseth vp.

*Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, thou art very Philosophicall: thou speakest maruellous wisely, I know not who hath taught thee. All I can tell thee, is, that in the world there is no such thing as Fortune; neither doeth things that happen in it, good or euill, fall out by chance, but by the particular providence of heauen: hence 'tis said, That euery man is the Artificer of his own Fortune, which I haue beene of mine, but not with the discretion that might haue beene fitting, and so my rashnes hath been required:

requited: for I might haue thought that it was not possible for *Rosinantes* weaknesse, to haue relitted the powerfull greatnesse of the Knight of the white-Moones Horse. In fine, I was hardy, I did vvhath I could: downe I came, and though I lost my honour; yet I lost not, nor can lose my vertue, to accomplish my promise. When I was a Knight Errant, bold and valiant, vvith my vvorkes and hands I ennobled my deedes: and now that I am a foot Squire, I vvill credit my workes, vvith the accomplishment of my promise: log on then, *Sancho*, and let vs get home there to passe the yeere of our Probationership: in which retirednesse, we vvill recouer new vertue, to returne to the neuer-forgotten exercise of Armes.

Sir, said *Sancho*, 'Tis no great pleasure to trauell great iourneys on foot: let vs leaue your Armour hanged vp vpon some tree, in stead of a hanged man: and then I may get vpon Dapple, and ride as fast as you vvill: for to thinke that I will vvake great iourneys on foote, is but a folly.

Thou hast said vvell, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*: hang vp my Armes, for a Trophy; and at the bottome, or about them we vvill carue in the Trees, that which in the Trophy of *Roldans* was vvritten.

*Let none these moone,  
That his Valour will not  
With Roldan prouue.*

All this (me thinks, said *Sancho*) is precious: and if it vv ere not that we should want *Rosinante* by the vvay, 'twere excellent good hanging him vp.

Well, neither he, nor the Armour, quoth *Don Quixote*, shall be hanged vp, that it may not be said, So a good seruant, an vngatefull Master.

You say marvellous well, quoth *Sancho*: for according to the opinion of wise men, the fault of the Ass must not bee layd vpon the pack-saddle: and since in this last businesse you your selfe were in fault, punish your selfe, and let not your fury burst vpon the hacked and bloody Armour, or the mildnesse of *Rosinante*, 'or the tendernes of my feet, making me walke more then is fitting.

All

All that day and foure more they passed in these reasons and discourses: and the fift after, as they entred a towne, they saw a great many of people at an Inne dore, that by reason of the heat were there shading themselves.

When *Don Quixote* approached, a Husbandman cried aloud, Some of these Gentlemen, that know not the parties, shall decide the businesse of our wager. That will I (said *Don Quixote*) with all vprightness, if I may vnderstand it. Well, good sir, said the Husbandman, this is the matter; Heere's one dwells in this towne so fatte, that he weighes eleuen <sup>a</sup> Arrobes, and hee challenged another to run with him that weighes but fve: the <sup>a Arroba, mea-</sup> <sup>sure of 25.</sup> <sup>pound waight</sup> <sup>the</sup> <sup>Challenger</sup> <sup>being</sup> <sup>asked</sup> <sup>how</sup> <sup>they</sup> <sup>should</sup> <sup>make</sup> <sup>equall</sup> <sup>waight</sup>, said, That the other that weighed but fve Arrobes, should carry sixe of Iron, and so they should both weigh equally.

No, no, said *Sancho*, before *Don Quixote* could answer, It concerns mee (that not long since left being a Gouvernour and a Iudge as all the world knowes) to decide doubts, and to sentence this businesse. Answer on Gods name, friend *Sancho* (said *Don Quixote*) for I am not in the humor to play at boyes-play, since I am so troubled and tormented in minde.

With this licence, *Sancho* said to the Husbandmen that were gaping round about him, expecting his sentence, Brothers, the fat mans demand is vnreasonable, and hath no appearance of equity; for if hee that is challenged may choose his weapons, the other ought not to chuse such as may make his contrary vneyldy and vnable to be Victor: and therefore my opinion is, that the fat Challenger doe picke, and cleanse, and with-draw, and pollish, and nibble, and pull away sixe Arrobes of his flesh, some-where or other from his body (as he thinkes best) and so hauing but fve remaining, hee will be made equall with his opposite, and so they may runne vpon equall termes.

I vow by me, said the Husbandman that heard *Sancho's* sentence, this Gentleman hath spoken blessedly, and sentenced like a Canon: but I warrant, the fat man will not lose an ounce of his flesh, much lesse sixe Arrobes.

The

\* A good  
with, as if hee  
would haue  
said, Let the  
burden light  
vpon him.

The best is, said another, not to runne, that the leane man straine not himselfe with too much waight, nor the fat man distresse himselfe, and let halfe the wager be spent in wine, and let vs carry these Gentlemen to the Tauerne that hath the <sup>a</sup> best, and giue me the cloke when it raines.

I thanke you Sir, said *Don Quixote*; but I cannot stay a iot: for my sad thoughts make mee seeme vnmanly, and trauell more then ordinarily. And so spurring *Rosinante*, he passed forward, leauing them to admire and note, as well his strange shape as his mans discretion; for, such they iudged *Sancho*. And another of the Husbandmen said; If the man be so wise, what think ye of the Master? I hold a wager, that if they went to study at *Salamanca*, they would be made Iudges of the Court in a trice, for all is foppery to your studying: study hard, and with a little fauour and good lucke, when a man least thinkes of it, hee shall haue a Rod of Iustice in his hand, or a Miter vpon his head.

That night the Master and man passed in the open field: and the next day being vpon their way, they saw a footman comming towards them with a paire of Wallets about his necke, & a Iauelin or Dart in his hand, iust like a footman, who comming neere *Don Quixote*, mended his pace, and beginning to runne, came and tooke him by the right thigh; for hee could reach no higher, and said with a great deale of gladnesse; Oh my Signior *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and how glad my Lord Duke will be, when he knowes you will return to his Castle? for he is there still with my Lady Duchesse.

I know you not, friend, said *Don Quixote*, who you are, except you tell me.

I, Signior *Don Quixote*, said the foot-man, am *Tosilos* the Dukes Lackey, that would not fight with your Worship about the marriage of *Donna Rodriguez* daughter.

God defend me, said *Don Quixote*, and is it possible? and are you he, into whom the Enchanters my enemies transformed my contrary, to defraud me of the honour of that combat?

Peace, Sir, quoth the Letter foote-post, there was no Enchantment, nor changing of my face, I was as much *Tosilos* the Lackey, when I went into the Lists, as when I came out: I thought

thought to haue married without fighting, because I liked the wench well; but it fell out otherwise. My Lord Duke caused me to be well banged, because I did not according as I was instructed before the battell was to begin: and the Conclusion is, the wench is turned Nun, and *Donna Rodriguez* is gone backe againe into Castile, and I am going now to Barcelona to carry a packet of Letters to the Vice-roy which my Lord sends him: and if it please you to drinke a sup (though it be hot, yet pure) I haue a little Gourd heere full of the best wine, with some slices of excellent cheese, that shall serue for a prouoker & Alarum to thirst if it be asleepe.

I see the Vy, said *Sancho*, and set the rest of your courtesie, and therefore skinke, honest *Tosilos*, in spight of all the Enchanters in the Indies.

Well, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, thou art the onely Glutton in the world, and the onely Aile aliue, since thou canst not bee perswaded that this foote-man is Enchanted, and this *Tosilos* counterfait; stay thou with him and fill thy selfe, Ile go on faire and softly before, and expect thee.

The Lackey laughed, and vnsheathed his bottle, & drawing out his bread and cheese, hee and *Sancho* sate vpon the greene grasse, and like good followes they cast Anchor vpon all the Wallets prouant so hungrily, that all being gone, they licked the very Letter-packet because it smelt of cheese.

*Tosilos* said to *Sancho*; Doubtlesse thy Master, friend *Sancho*, is a very mad-man. Hee owes no man nothing in that kinde, said *Sancho*; for if the money he were to pay, be in madnesse, he hath enough to pay all men. I see it well enough, and tell him of it, but tis to no purpose; for hee is now euen past recovery, since hee hath beene vanquished by the Knight of the white Moone. *Tosilos* desired him to tell him what had befallne him: but *Sancho* answered, it was a discourtesie to let his Master stay for him, but at some other time when they met, he should know: and so rising vp after he had well dusted himselfe, and shaken the crums from his beard, he caught hold of Dapple before, and crying farewell, left *Tosilos*, and ouertook his Master that stayed for him vnder the shade of a tree.



## CHAP. LXVII.

*Of the resolution Don Quixote had to turne Shepheard, and to leade a Country life, whilst the promise for his yeere was expired, with other accidents, truly, good, and sa-  
uourie.*

**I**F *Don Quixote* were much troubled in minde before his fall, he was so much more after it: Hee stood shading himselfe vnder the tree (as you heard) and there his thoughts set vpon him, as flies vpon hony; some tending to the disenchantment of *Dulcinea*, others to the life that he meant to lead in the time of his forced retirement.

*Sancho* now drew neere, and extolled the liberality of *Tosilos*.

Is it possible, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, that still thou thinkest that that was a true Lackey, and that thou hast forgotten too that *Dulcinea* was conuerted and transformed into a Country wench, and the Knight of the Looking-glasse, into the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*: all these by the doings of Enchanters my enemies that persecute me? But tell me now, didst thou ask that *Tosilos*, what became of *Altisidora*? did she lament my absence, or hath she forgotten her amorous passions, that when I was present troubled her?

I neuer thought on't (said *Sancho*) neyther had I leysure to aske after such fooleries. Body of me, Sir, you are now in a humour of asking after other folkes thoughts, and amorous ones too.

Look thee, *Sancho*, there is a great deale of difference betwixt loue and gratefulnesse; it may well be that a Gentleman may not be amorous: but it cannot be (speaking in all rigour) that he should be vngratefull: *Altisidora* in likelihood loued me very well, she gaue me the three night-caps thou wotest of, she cried at my departure, cursed mee, reuiled mee, and without modestly railed publicly, all signes that she adored me; for the anger of louers often ends in maledictions. I could giue her no comfort, nor no treasure, all I haue being dedicated to *Dulcinea*, and the  
treasure

treasure of Knights Errant is like that of Fairies, false and apparant onely, and all I can doe, is but to remember her; and this I may doe without preiudice to *Dulcinea*, whom thou wrongest with thy slacknesse in whipping thy selfe, and in chastising that flesh of thine, that I wish I might see deuoured by wolues, that had rather preserue it selfe for wormes, then for the remedy of that poore Lady.

Sir, said *Sancho*, if you will haue the truth, I cannot perswade my selfe that the lashing of my posteriors can haue any reference to the disenchanting of the Enchanted, which is as much as if you should say, If your head grieue you, anoint your knees, at least, I dare sweare, that in as many histories as you haue read of Knight Errantry, you neuer saw whipping disenchant any body: but howsoeuer, I will take it when I am in the humour, and when time serues Ile chastise my selfe.

God grant thou dost, said *Don Quixote*, and heaven giue thee grace to fall into the reckoning and obligation thou hast to help my Lady, who is thy Lady too, since thou art mine.

With this discourse they held on their way, till they came iust to the place where the Bulls had ouer-runne them: and *Don Quixote* called it to minde, and said to *Sancho*; In this field we met the braue shepherdesse, and the lusty swaines, that would here haue imitated and renewed the Pastorall Arcadia: an inuention as strange as witty; in imitation of which, if thou thinkest fit, *Sancho*, wee will turne Shepherds for the time that wee are to liue retired: Ile buy sheepe, and all things fit for our pastorall vocation; and calling my selfe by the name of the Shepheard *Quixotiz*, and thou the Shepheard *Pansino*, we will walke vp and downe the Hills, thorow Woods and Meadows, singing and versifying, and drinking the liquid Christall of the fountaines, sometimes out of the cleere springs, and then out of the swift running riuers; The Oakes shall afford vs plentifully of their most sweet fruit, & the bodies of hardest Corke-trees shall be our seates, the willowes shall giue vs shade, the roses their perfume, and the wide medowes carpets of a thousand flourished colours: the Ayre shall giue vs a free and pure breath: the Moone and Starres in spight of Nights darkenesse shall giue vs  
G g 2 light.

light, our songs shall afford vs delight, and our wailing, mirth, *Apollo*, verses, and Loue-conceits, with which we may be eternalized and famous, not onely in this present age, but ages to come also. By ten, quoth *Sancho*, this kinde of life is very futable to my desires, and I beleue the Bachelor *Samson*, and Master *Nicholas* the Barber will no sooner haue seene it, but they will turn shepheards with vs: and pray God the Vicar haue not a minde to enter into the sheep-coat too, for he is a merry Lad and iolly. Thou hast said very wel, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, & the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, if so be he enter the Pastorall lap (as doubtlesse he will) may call himselfe the shepheard *Samsonino*, or *Carrascon*. Mr. *Nicholas* may call himselfe *Niculoso*, as the ancient *Boscan* called himselfe, *Nemoroso*. I know not what name wee shuld bestow vpon the Vicar, except it were some deriuatiue frō his own, calling him the shepheard *Curiambro*. The shepheardesse on whom we must be enamoured, we may chuse their names as amongst Peares: and since my Ladies name serues as well for a shepheardesse as for a Princesse, I need not trouble my selfe to get her another better, giue thou thine what name thou wilt.

Mine, said *Sancho*, shall haue no other name but *Teresa*, which will fit her fatnesse well, and it is taken from her Christian name, which is *Teresa*, and the rather I celebrating her in my verses, doe discouer my chaste thoughts, since I seeke not in other mens houses better bread then is made of wheat: twere not fit that the Vicar had his shepheardesse, to giue good example, but if the Bachelor will haue any, tis in his owne free choice.

Lord blesse me, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, and what a life shall we haue on't? what a world of horne-pipes, and *Zamora* bag-pipes shall we heare? what Tabouring shall we haue? what iangling of bells and playing on the *Rebecke*? and if to these different musikes we haue the *Albogne* too, we shall haue all kinde of pastorall instruments.

What is *Albogne* (quoth *Sancho*?) It is, said *Don Quixote*, a certaine plate made like a Candlestick, and being hollow, giues, if not a very pleasing or harmonious sound, yet it displeaseth not altogether, and agrees well with the rusticke Tabor and bag-pipe; and this word *Albogne* is Moorish, as all those in

▪ Alluding to the word *Bosque* for a Wood.

our Castilian tongue are, that begin with *Al*, to wit, *Almouza*, *Almorzar*, *Alhombra*, *Alguazil*, *Alucena*, *Almazon*, *Alfancia* and the like, with some few more; and our language hath onely three Moorish words that end in *I*, which are *Borcegni*, *Zagucami*, and *Meranedi*: *Albeli* & *Alfaqui* are as well known to be Arabicke by their beginning with *Al*, as their ending in *I*.

This I haue told thee by the way, the word *Albogne* hauing brought it into my head, and one maine helpe wee shall haue for the perfection of this calling, that I, thou knowest, am somewhat Poeticall, and the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco* is a most exquisite one; for the Vicar I say nothing, but I lay a wager he hath his sinacke, and so hath Master *Nicholas* too: for all these, or the most of them play vpon a Gittern, and are Rimers, I vwill complaine of absence: thou shalt praise thy selfe for a Constant Louer, the shepheard *Carrascon* shall mourn for being disdain'd, and let the Vicar *Curiambro* do what he pleaseth, and so there is no more to be desired.

To which (said *Sancho*) Sir, I am so vnlucky, that I feare I shall not see the day, in which I may see my selfe in that happy life: oh what neat spoones shall I make when I am shepheard! what hodge-potches and creame! what garlands and other pastorall trumperies? that though they get me not a fame of being wise, yet they shall, that I am witty. My little daughter *Sanhica* shall bring our dinner to the flocke: but soft, she is handsome, and you haue shepheards more knaues then fooles, and I vould not haue her come for wooll, and returne shorne: and your loose desires are as incident to the fields as to Cities, and as well in shepheards Cotages, as Princes Palaces, and the cause being remoued, the sin will be saued, and the heart dreames not of what the eye sees not, & better a fair paire of heels, then die at the gallows.

No more Prouerbs, *Sancho*, (said *Don Quixote*) since each of these is enough to make vs know thy meaning, and I haue often aduised thee, not to be so prodigall of thy Prouerbs, but more sparing: but tis in vaine to bid thee; for the more thou art bid, the more thou wilt doe it. Mee thinkes, Sir, said *Sancho*, you are like what is said, that the Frying-pan said to the Kettle, *Auant*, blacke-browes; you reprehend me

for speaking of Prouerbs, and you thred vp yours by two and two.

Look you, *Sancho*, quoth *Don Quixote*, I vse mine to purpose, and when I speake them, they fitte as well as a little ring to the finger: but thou bringest in thine so by head and shoulders, that thou rather draggest then guidest them: and if I forget not, I told thee heretofore, that Prouerbs are brieue sentences, drawne from the experience and speculation of our Ancient Sages, and a Prouerbe ill applied, is rather a soppery then a sentence: but leaue we this now; and since night comes on vs, let's retire a little out of the high-way, where we will passe this night, & God knowes what may befall vs to morrow. So they retired, and made a short supper, much against *Sancho's* will, who now began to thinke of the hard life of Knight Errantry in Woods and Mountaines, especially calling to his remembrance, the Castles and houses as well of *Don Diego de Miranda*, and vvhether the rich *Camacho's* mariage was, and likewise *Don Antonio Moreno's*: but he considered with himselfe, that nothing could last euer: and so he slept away the rest of that night, which his Master passed watching.

---

CHAP. LXVIII.

*Of the Bristled Aduenture that befell  
Don Quixote.*

**T**He night was somewhat darke, though the Moon were vp, but she was obscured; for sometimes my Lady *Diana* goes to walke with the *Antipodes*, and leaues the Mountaines blacke, and the Vallies darkened. *Don Quixote* complide with Nature, hauing slept his first sleepe, he broke off his second, contrary to *Sancho's*, for his lasted from night till morning: a signe of his good complexion, and few cares. These kept *Don Quixote* waking in such sort, that he awakened *Sancho*, and said to him;

I wonder, *Sancho*, at thy free condition: I imagine thou art made

made of Marble, or of hard Brasse, vvhich neither mooues, or hath any feeling. I wake, when thou sleepest; I vveepe, when thou singest; I am ready to faint vwith fasting, vvhether thou art lazy, and vnweildy vvhich pure cramming in: 'twere the part of good seruants, to haue a fellow-feeling of their Masters griefes, if it were but for decency: behold this nights brightness, and the solitude we are in, which inuites vs to intermingle some watching with sleepe: rise by thy life, and get thee a little apart, and with a good courage and thankfull cheere, giue thy selfe three or foure hundred lashes vpon account, for *Dulcinea's* dis-enchanting: and this I intreat of thee; for I will not now, as heretofore, come to handy-gripes with thee; for I know, thou hast shrewd Clutches: and after thou hast done, we will passe the rest of the night; I, chanting my absence, and thou thy constancy, beginning from henceforward our Pastorall exercise, which we are to keep in our Village.

Sir, said *Sancho*, I am of no Religious order, that I should rise out of the midst of my sleepe to discipline my selfe; neither doe I thinke it possible, that from the paine of my whipping, I may proceed to Musick. Pray, Sir, let mee sleepe, and doe not presse me so to this whipping; for you wil make me vow neuer to touch so much as a hayre of my coat, much lesse of my flesh. O hard heart! oh vngodly Squire! oh ill giuen bread, and fauours ill placed which I bestowed, and thought to haue more and more conferred vpon thee: by me thou wast a Gouverneur, and from me thou wast in good possibilitie of being an Earle, or hauing some aquiualent Title, and the accomplishment should not haue failed, when this our yeere should end: for I *post tenebras spero lucem*. I vnderstand not that, said *Sancho*, only I know that whilest I am sleeping, I neither feare nor hope, haue neither paine nor pleasure: and well fare him that inuented sleepe, a cloke that couers all humane thoughts; the foode that slakes hunger; the water that quenchem thirst; and the fire that vvarmeth cold; the cold that tempers heate; and finally a currant coine, with which all things are bought, a ballance and weight that equals the King to the Shepheard; the foole to the wise-man: onely one thing (as I haue heard) sleepe hath ill, which is,

that it is like death, in that betweene a man asleepe, and a dead man, there is little difference.

I haue neuer, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, heard thee speake more elegantly then now : whereby I perceiue, the Prouerbe thou often vliest is true ; You may know the man, by the conuersation he keeps. Gods me, Master mine, I am not onely hee now that threeds on Prouerbs : and they come freer from you (methinkes) and betwixt yours and mine, there is this onely difference, that yours are fitly applyed, and mine vnseasonably.

In this discourse they were, when they perceiued a deafe noise thorow all the Valleys. *Don Quixote* stood vp, and laid hand to his sword, and *Sancho* squatted vnder Dapple, and clapt the bundle of Armour, and his Asses Pack-saddle on each side of him, as fearefull, as his Master was outrageous : still the noyse encreast, and drew neerer the two timorous persons (at least one) for the others valour is sufficiently knowne.

The Businesse was, that certaine fellows draue some fixe hundreth Swine to a Fayre to sell, with whom they trauelled by night ; and the noise they made, with their grunting and squeaking was so great, that it deafed *Don Quixote* and *Sancho's* eares, that neuer marked what it might be. It fell out, that the goodly grunting Herd were all in a troope together, and without respect to *Don Quixote* or *Sancho's* person, they trampled ouer them both, spoiling *Sancho's* Trenches, and ouerthrowing not onely *Don Quixote*, but *Rosinante* also : the fury of the sudden comming of these vncleane beasts, made a confusion, and laid on ground the pack-saddle, Armour, *Rosinante*, *Sancho*, and *Don Quixote*. *Sancho* rose as well as he could, and desired his Masters sword, telling him, he would kill halfe a doozen of those vnmanly Hogs, for now he knew them to be so.

*Don Quixote* said, Let them alone, friend, for this affront is a penalty for my fault, and a iust punishment it is from Heauen, that Dogs and Wasps eate a vanquisht Knight Errant, and that Swine trample ouer him.

And it is a punishment of Heauen too, belike, said *Sancho*, that Flyes doe bite the Squires of vanquished Knights, that Lice eate them, and hunger close with them.

If

If we Squires were sonnes or neere Kinsmen to the Knights we serue, 'twere not much wee were partakers with them, euen to the fourth generation : but what haue the *Pansa's* to do with the *Quixotes*?

Well : yet let's goe fit our selues againe, and sleepe the rest of the night, and 'twill be day, and we shall haue better lucke.

Sleepe thou, *Sancho*, said *Don Quixote*, for thou wast borne to sleepe, and I was borne to wake : betwixt this and day-breake, I will giue reines to my thoughts, and vent them out in some Madrigall, that without thy knowledge I composed this night.

Me thinkes, said *Sancho*, that thoughts that giue way to Verses, are not very troublesome : and therefore versifie you as much as you list, and Ile sleepe as much as I can : and so taking vp as much of the ground as he would, he crowched vp together, and slept liberally : Debts, nor suretiship, nor any other affliction disturbing him.

*Don Quixote* leaning to the body of a Beech or Cork-tree (for *Cid Hamete Benengeli* distinguisheth not what tree it was) to the Musick of his owne sighes, sung as followeth : *Loue, when I thinke*, &c. Each of which Verses were accompanied with many sighs, and not few teares, fit for a vanquisht Knight, and one who had his heart pierc't thorow with griefe, and tormented with the absence of his *Dulcinea*.

Now day came on, and *Sir Sol* vvith his beames playd in *Sancho's* eyes ; who awoke, and lazed himselfe, shaking and stretching out his lither limbs, he beheld the hauock the Swine had made in his Sumpterie, and he cursed & re-cursed the Herd.

Finally, both of them returned to their commenced iourney ; and toward Sun-set, they saw some ten Horse-men comming toward them, and foure or fve foot-men. *Don Quixote* was agast at heart, and *Sancho* shiuered, for the troope drew neerer to them, who had their Speares and Shields all in warlike array.

*Don Quixote* turned to *Sancho*, and said, If, *Sancho*, it vvere lawfull for me to exercise Armes, and that my promise had not bound my hands, I should thinke this were an Aduenture of Cake-bread : but perhaps it may bee otherwise then vvee thinke for.

By

By this the Horse-men came, and lifting vp their Lances, without a word speaking, they compassed in *Don Quixote* before and behinde; one of the foot-men threatening him with death, and clapping his finger to his mouth, in signe hee should not cry out; and so he laid hold on *Rosinante's* bridle, and led him out of the way: and the rest of the foot-men catching *Sancho's* Dapple, all of them most silently followed after those that carried *Don Quixote*; who twice or thrice would haue asked, whither they carried him, and what they would with him? but he no sooner began to moue his lips, when they were ready to close them with their Lances points: & the same hapned to *Sancho*, when one of the foot-men pricked him with a Goad, he offering but to speake, and Dapple they punched too, as if he would haue spoken: it now beganne to grow darke, so they mended their pace: the two prisoners feares encreased; especially when they might heare that sometimes they were cryed out on, On, on, ye *Troglodites*, peace, ye barbarous Slaues: Reuenge, ye *Anthropophagi*: complaine not, ye *Scythians*; open not your eyes, ye murderous *Polyphemans*, ye Butcherous Lyons, and other such names as these, with which they tormented the eares of the lamentable Knight and Squire.

Sancho's mistakes.

*Sancho* said within himselfe, a We *Tortelites*? We Barbers Slaues? we Poppingeyes? we little Bitches to vvhom they cry, *Hist, Hist*: I doe not like these names, this winde winnowes no corne, all our ill comes together, like a whip to a Dogge: and I would to God this Aduenture might end no worse.

*Don Quixote* was embeseld: neither in all his discourse could he finde, vvhhat reprochfull names those should be, that were put vpon him, whereby hee plainly perceiued there was no good to be hoped for; but on the contrary much euill.

Within an houre of night they came to the Castle: which *Don Quixote* well perceiued to be the Dukes, where but awhile before they had beene.

Now God defend (said he) as soone as hee knew the place: what haue we heere? Why, in this house, all is courtesie & good vsage: but for the vanquished, all goes from good to bad, and from bad, to worse.

They

They entred the chiefe Court of the Castle, and they saw it so dressed and ordered, that their admiration increased, and their feare re-doubled; as you shall see in the following Chapter.

## CHAP. LXIX.

*Of the newest and strangest Aduenture, that in all the course of this History befell Don Quixote.*

**T**He Horsemen all alighted, and the footmen taking *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* forcibly in their Armes, they set them in the Court, where roundabout were burning a hundreth Torches in their Vessels of purpose; and about the Turrets about fife hundreth lights; so that in spite of darke night, they might there see day.

In the midst of the Court there was a Hearse raised some two yards from the ground, couered with a Cloth of State of blacke Veluet, and round about it there burned a hundred Virgin Waxe Candles in siluer Candlestickes; on the top of it there lay a faire Damozell, that shewed to be dead, that with her beauty made death her selfe seeme faire: her head was laid vpon a Pillow-beare of Cloth of gold, crowned with a Garland, wouen with diuers odoriferous Flowers: her hands were crossed vpon her brest, and betwixt them was a bough of flourishing yellow Palme.

On one side of the Court there was a kinde of Theater set vp, and two Personages in their Chaires, who with their crownes on their heads, and Scepters in their hands, seemed to be eyther reall or fained Kings: at the side of this Theater where they went vp by steps, there were two other Chayres, vvhether they that brought the prisoners, *Don Quixote* and *Sancho*, and all this with silence and signes to them that they should bee silent too: but without that they held their peace: for the admiration of what they there saw, tyed their tongues: After this two other principall Personages came vp, vvhom *Don Quixote* straight

straight knew to be the Duke and Duchesse, his Oast and Oastelle, who sat downe in two rich Chaires, neere the two seeming Kings. Whom would not this admire? especially hauing scene that the body vpon the Hearse, was the faire *Alisidora*? When the Duke and Duchesse mounted, *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* bowed to them, and the Dukes did the like, nodding their heads a little: and now an Officer entred athwart them, and comming to *Sancho*, clapt a Coat of blacke Buckram on him, all painted vvith flames of fire: and taking his Cap off, hee set a Miter on his head, iust such a one as the Inquisition causes to be set vpon Heretikes, and bade him in his care, he should not vn-sowe his lips, for they would clap a gagge in his mouth, or kill him.

*Sancho* beheld himselfe all ouer, and saw himselfe burning in flames: but since they burned not indeed, he cared not a rush for them: he tooke off his Miter, and saw it painted with Diuels: he put it on againe, and said within himselfe, Well yet, neither the one burnes me, nor the others carry me away.

*Don Quixote* beheld him also, and though feare suspended his senses, he could not but laugh at *Sancho's* Picture: and now from vnder the Harse there seemed to sound, a low and pleasing sound of Flutes; which being vn-interrupted by any mans voice (for there it seemed Silence selfe kept Silence) was soft and amorous.

Straight there appeared suddenly on the Pillow of the Hearse, a Carkeise of a goodly Youth, clad like a Romane, who to the sound of a Harpe himselfe playd on, with a most sweet and cleere voice, sung these two *Stanza's* following. Enough said one of the two, that seemed to be Kings: Enough, diuine singer: for it were to proccede in *infinitum*, to paint vnto vs the misfortunes and graces of the peerelesse *Alisidora*, not dead, as the simple world surmiseth; but living in the tongues of Fame, and in the penance that *Sancho* is to passe, to returne her to the lost sight: and therefore thou, oh *Radamanthus*, that iudgeth with mee in the darksome Caues of *Dis*, since thou knowest all that is determining in the inscrutable Fates, touching the restoring of this Damozel, tell and declare it forthwith, that

Which I likewise omit as being basely made on purpose, & so not worth the translation.

that the happinesse we expect from her returne, may not be deferred.

Scarce had Iudge *Minos* said this, when *Radamanthus* standing vp, said, Goe too, Ministers of this house, high and low, great and small, come one after another, and seale *Sancho's* Chin with foure and twenty tuckes, twelue pinches, and vvith pins pricke his armes and buttocks sixe times, in which *Alisidora's* health consists.

When *Sancho Panza* heard this, he broke off silence, and said, I vow, you shall as soone tucke me, or handle my face, as make me turne Moore. Body of me, vvhat hath the handling my face to doe with this Damozels resurrection? The old Woman tasted the Spinage, &c. *Dulcinea* is enchanted, and I must be whipped to dis-enchant her: *Alisidora* dyes of some sicknesse it pleased God to send her; and her raising must bee with foure and twenty tuckes giuen me, and with grinding my body with pins thrusts, and pinching my armes blacke and blue: away with your tricks to some other, I am an old Dogge, and there's no hissing to me.

Thou dyest, quoth *Radamanthus* alowd: relent, thou Tyger, humble thy selfe proud *Nembroth*, suffer and be silent, since no impossibilities are required of thee; and stand not vpon difficulties in this businesse: thou shalt be tuckt, and see thy selfe grinded, thou shalt grone with pinching. Goe too, I say, Ministers, fulfill my command; if not, as I am honest man, you shall rue the time that euer you vvere borne.

Now there came thorow the Court, sixe like old Waiting-women, one after another in Procession, foure with Spectacles, and all vvith their right hands lifted aloft, with foure fingers breadths of their wrists discovered, to make their hands seeme larger (as the fashion is.)

No sooner had *Sancho* scene them, vvhen bellowing like a Bull, he said, Well might I suffer all the world else to handle me; but that Waiting-vvomen touch mee, I vvill never consent: Let vm Cat-scratch my face, as my Master was serued in this Castle: let vm thrust me thorow with Bodkin-pointed Daggers: let vm pull off my flesh vvith hote burning Pincers, and I will



will beare it patiently, and serue these Nobles: but that Waiting-women touch me, let the Diuell take me, I will not consent.

*Don Quixote* then interrupted him, saying, Haue patience soone, and please these Lordings, and thanke God, that hee hath giuen such vertue to thy person, that with the martyrdom of it thou mayst dis-enchant the Enchanted, and raise vp the dead.

And now the Waiting-women drew neere *Sancho*; who being wonne and perswaded, settled in his Chaire, offered his face and chin to the first that came, who gaue him a well-sealed tuck, and so made him a curtsie. Lesse curtsie, and lesse stabber-saues, good Miltris *Mumpsimus*, quoth *Sancho*: for, I protest your hands smell of Vineger.

At length all the Waiting-women sealed him, and others pinched him: but that which hee could not suffer, was the Pins pricking; and therefore he rose out of his Chaire very moody, and laying hold of a lighted Torch that was neere him, he ran after the women, and his Executioners, saying, Auant, infernall Ministers, for I am not made of Brasse, not to be sensible of such extraordinary martyrdom.

By this *Altisidora* that was weary with lying so long vpon her backe, turned on one side: which when the by-standers saw, all of them cryed out ioyntly, *Altisidora liues, Altisidora liues.*

*Radamantus* commanded *Sancho* to lay aside his choller, since now his intent was obtained.

And as *Don Quixote* saw *Altisidora* stirre, he went to kneele downe to *Sancho*, laying, Sonne of my entrailes: 'Tis now high time, that thou giue thy selfe some of the lashes to vvvhich thou art obliged, for the dis-enchanting of *Dulcinea*.

Now, I say, is the time, wherein thy vertue may be seasoned, and thou mayst with efficacie effect the good that is expected from thee.

To which (quoth *Sancho*) Heida: this is sowre vpon sowre: 'twere good after these pinchings, Tucks & Pins-prickings, that lashes should follow; there's no more to be done, but euen take a good stone, and tie it to my necke, and cast me into a Well: for which I should not grieue much; if so bee that to cure other folkes ills, I must be the Pack-horse: let mee alone, if not, I shall  
marre

marre all; and now *Altisidora* fate vp in the Herse, and the Hoboyes, accompanied with Flutes and Voyces, began to sound, and all cryed out, Liue *Altisidora*, *Altisidora* liue. The Dukes rose vp, & with them *Mimos* & *Radamantus*, and all together with *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* went to receiue *Altisidora*, and to helpe her out of the Herse, who faining a kinde of dis-maying, bowed downe to her Lords, and to the two Kings, and looking askonce on *Don Quixote*, said; God pardon thee, discourteous Knight, since by thy cruelty I haue remained in another world, methinkes at least these thousand yeeres, and thee I thanke, the most compassionate Squire in the world, I thanke thee for the life I possesse: and now dispose of sixe of my smockes, which I giue thee to make sixe shirts; and if they be not all whole, yet they are cleane at least.

*Sancho* killed her hands with his Miter off, and his knees on the ground, and the Duke commanded they should return him his cap, and instead of his gowne with the flames, they should returne him his Gaberdine. *Sancho* desired the Duke that they would leaue him both, which he would carry into his Country, in memory of that vn-heard-of successe. The Duchesse answered, they should, and that he know how much she was his friend. The Duke commanded all to auoid the Court, and to retire to their lodgings, and that *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* should be carried to theirs they knew of old.

---

## CHAP. LXX.

*Of diuers rare things, which serue for the better illustration and clearing of this History.*

*Sancho* slept that night vpon a Quilt & in *Don Quixote's* owne chamber, which he would faine haue auoyded, had it beene in his power; for he knew full well, that his Master would hardly let him sleepe all night, by reason of the many questions he would demand of him, to which he must of necessity

sity make answer. Now was hee in no good humour to talke much; for hee felt yet the smart of his fore-past torments, which were an hindrance to his tongue. And without doubt, he would rather haue layne alone in any poore Shed, then with company in that goodly house; so true was his feare, and so certaine his doubt, as he was scarce laid in his bed, but his Master began this discourse vnto him.

*Sancho*, what thinkest thou of this nights successe? Needes must a man confesse, that great and powerfull is the force of disdaine, since as thou thy selfe hast seene with thine owne eyes, *Altisidora* had surely died, and that by no other arrowes, nor by any other sword, nor other instrument of warre, no, nor by the force of poyson, but by the apprehension of the churlish rigor, and the disdaine wherewith I haue euer vsed her.

She might (answered *Sancho*) haue died in good time, and at her choice and pleasure, so she would haue let me alone in mine owne house, since I was neuer the cause that shee became a Louer, nor did I euer in all my life scorne or disdaine her. But I wot not, nor can I imagine how it may be, that the health or welfare of *Altisidora*, a Gentlewoman more fantasticall then discreet, hath any reflection (as I haue said heeretofore) vpon the afflictions of *Sancho Panza*. Now I plainly and distinctly perceine, that there be both Enchanters and Enchantments in the world, from whom God deliuer me, since I cannot well deliuer my selfe from them. And therewithall I intreat you to let mee sleepe, and except you wil haue me throw my selfe out of a window, aske me no more questions.

Sleepe, my friend *Sancho* (replied *Don Quixote*) vnlesse the nipping scoffes and bitter frumps which thou hast receiued, will not permit thee so to doe.

There is no griefe (answered *Sancho*) comparable vnto the affront of scoffing frumps, and so much the more sensible am I of such affronts, as that I haue receiued them by olde women; a mischief take them: I beseech you once more that you will suffer mee to sleepe, since that sleepe is an easing of all miseries. Be it as thou sayest, quoth *Don Quixote*, and God accompanie thee.

So they both fell a-sleepe, and whilest they slept, *Cid Hamete*, Author of this great History, would needs write and relate, why the Duke and the Duchesse had caused this monument to be built, and inuented all that you haue seene about.

He writes then, that the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, hauing not forgotten what had hapned vnto him, at what time; vnder the name of the *Knight of the Looking-glasses*, he was vanquished and ouerthrown by *Don Quixote*: and therewithall how all his designs and purposes were vanished into smoake; yet neuertheless would he (hoping for better successe) attempt the combat againe: Therefore is it, that being informed by the Page who brought the Letter, and with it the Present vnto *Teresa Panza*, the wife of *Sancho*, from the place where *Don Quixote* made his residence, he recouered new Armes and a Horse.

Then caused he the white Moone to be painted in his shield: A Muler carried all this equipage, and a Lob or Swaine led the same, and not *Thomas Ceciall* his ancient Esquire, for feare hee should be known of *Sancho* and *Don Quixote*.

He so well bestirred himselfe in his iournies, that at last hee came to the Dukes Castle, who taught him the way or tract that *Don Quixote* had taken, and how he had a great desire to be present at the Tiltings and Turnaments of *Saragosa*. He likewise related vnto him the gullings or gudgeons that hee had giuen him, with the inuention of *Dulcinea's* dis-enchantment, which should be accomplished at the charges of *Sancho's* buttocks. In summe, he vnderstood from him the fob or iest that *Sancho* had vsed toward his Master, in making him beleue that *Dulcinea* was Enchanted and transformed into a Country Lasse, and how the Duchesse his wife had giuen *Sancho* to vnderstand, that himselfe was the man that deceiued himselfe, for so much as *Dulcinea* was verily Enchanted.

The Bachelor could not containe himselfe from laughing, and therewithall to be amazed, considering the quaint subtilty, and plaine simplicity of *Sancho*, equall vnto the extreme folly of *Don Quixote*. The Duke desired him, that if hee met with him, and eyther vanquished him or not, he would be pleased to come that way againe, to the end hee might aduertise him of it.

The Bachelor promised him to doe it, and so tooke his leaue of the Duke, to goe and see whether hee could finde *Don Quixote*. He found him not a *Saragosa*, but went further, and then befell him what you haue already heard.

He came afterward to the Dukes Castle, and there made report of all, together with the conditions of the combat. Hee moreouer told them, that *Don Quixote* came againe to accomplish, as a perfect Knight Errant, the promise which hee had made, to retire himselfe to his owne Village, and there to abide the full space of one full yeere. And that during the said time, it might peradventure be brought to passe (said the Bachelor) that he might be cured of his folly. That he neuer had other intention, and that for this onely cause he had thus disguised himselfe; for, it was great pittie that a Gentleman, so well skilled and versed in all things as *Don Quixote* was, should become a foole.

With that he tooke leaue of the Duke, and went to his Burrough, where he staid for *Don Quixote*, who was comming after him. Whereupon the Duke tooke occasion to put this trick upon him; for, he tooke a wondrous pleasure of what succeeded vnto *Sancho* and *Don Quixote*: and therefore hee caused all the approches and high-waies about his Castle to be layd and watched, especially where he imagin'd our Knight might come. And for the said cause, he placed diuers of his seruants, as well on foot as on horse-backe, to the end that if they met with him, willed hee, or nilled hee, they should bring him to the Castle.

Now it fortun'd that they met with him, and forth-with they gaue the Duke knowledge of it, who was already resolved what he would doe. As soone then as he knew of his comming, he caused all the torches and lights that were in the Court to be lighted, and *Altisidora* to bee placed vpon the Tombe with all the preparation that you haue scene before; and that so liuely represented, as one would haue found very little difference betweene the truth, and that which was counterfeit.

*Cid Hamete* goeth yet further; for he saith, That he assuredly beleeueth, that the mockers were as foolish as the mocked: and  
that

that there wanted not two inches of the Dukes and Duchesses utter priuation of common vnderstanding, since they tooke so much paines to mocke two fooles, whereof the one was then found asleepe; and the other broad awake, transported with his rauing and ranging thoughts.

In the meane time the day surprized them, and they desired to rise; for the sluggish feathers were neuer pleasing vnto *Don Quixote*, were he conquered or conqueror.

*Altisidora*, who, as *Don Quixote* supposed, being risen from death to life, conforming her selfe to her Master and Mitrelles humour, being crowned with the very same garland which she had in the tombe; attired in a loose gowne of white Taffata, all beset with flowers of gold: her haire loose, and dangling down her shoulders, leaning vpon a staffe of fine Ebony wood; shee entred into *Don Quixote's* chamber, who so soone as he saw her, was so amazed and confounded at her presence, as he shrunke downe into his bed, all couered with the clothes, and hid with the sheetes and counterpoint, that hee neither spake word, nor vsed any manner of gesture towards her, as might witnesse that he desired to shew her any courtelie.

*Altisidora* sat downe in a chayre, which was neere vnto *Don Quixote's* head, & after fetching a deepe deepe sigh, with a low, sweet, and milde voyce, she thus bespake him:

Sir *Don Quixote*, whensoever women of quality, or maidens of discretion trample their honor vnder their feet, and giue their tongue free liberty and scope to exceed the bounds of conueniency or modesty, publishing the secrets lurking in their hearts, they then shall finde themselves brought to extreme misery and distresse.

Now am I one of those, pressed, vanquished, and also enamoured: All which notwithstanding I suffer patiently, and continue honest. So that hauing beene so too much, silence was the cause that my soule went out of my body, and I lost my life. It is now two daies since, that the consideration and remembrance of therigor, which thou (oh more stony-minded then any marble, and inexorable Knight, so to reiect my plaints) which you haue vsed towards me, brought me to my liues end,

H li 2

or

or at least I haue beene deemed and taken for dead by all those that saw me. And had it not beene, that Loue, who taking pity of me, depose my recovery among the grieuous torments of this good Esquire, I should for euer haue remained in the other world. Loue might well depose it (replyed *Sancho*) in those of my Affe, and I would haue beene very glad of it. But tell me, I pray you good Damozell, euen as Heauen may provide you of another more kind-louing-Louer then my Master, what is it that you haue scene in the other world? What is there in Hell, that he who dyeth desperate, must necessarily vndergoe? I must needs (quoth *Altisidora*) tell you the plaine truth of all. So it is, that I was not wholly or thorowly dead, since I came not into Hell: for had I once beene therein, there is no question, but I had neuer beene able to come out of it at my pleasure.

True it is, that I came euen vnto the gate thereof, vvhether I met with a doozen of Diuels, who in their hosen and doublets were playing at Tennis-ball; they did weare Falling-bands set with peakes of Flemmish Bone-lace, with Cuffs vnto them of the very same, so deep, as they appeared foure good inches longer then the arme, to the end their hands might seeme the greater. Their Battledors or Rackets were of fire. But that vvhich made me wonder most, was, that they vsed Bookes in stead of Balls, which bookes were full-stuff with winde and stifning, a thing both wondrous and newly-strange, yet did not that so much astonie me: for, as it is proper vnto those, that winne at any game, to reioyce and be glad; whereas those that lose, are euer sad and discontent: there, all grumbled, chafed, fretted and bitterly cursed one another.

That's no wonder (quoth *Sancho*) since the Diuels, vvhether they play, or play not; whethery they vvinne, or winne not, at that play they can neuer be content.

Belike it is euen so (replyed *Altisidora*): but there is also another thing, which likewise bred some amazement in me; that is to say, brought me into admiration. Which is, that the ball, that was but once toiled or stricken, could not serue another time, so that at every stroke, they were forced to change bookes vvhether they were old or new, which was a marvellous thing to behold.

Now

Now it hapned, that they gaue so violent a stroke vnto a moderne booke, and very fairely bound, that it made the very guts to fly out of it, and scattered the leaues thereof vp and downe.

Then said one Diuell vnto another, I prethee looke vvhether that booke treateth of. It is (answered the other Diuell) the second part of the History of *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, not composed by *Cid Hamete*, it's first Authour, but by an *Aragonis*, vvhich braggeth to be borne at *Tordesillas*. Now he vpon it (quoth the other Diuell) out of my sight with it, and let it be cast into the very lowest pit of Hell, so deepe as mine eyes may neuer see it againe. But why (said the other Diuell?) is it so bad a booke? It is so vile a booke (replyed the first Diuell) that had I my selfe expressely composed it, I could neuer haue encountred worse.

In the meane time they followed on their game, tossing other bookes to and fro; but hauing heard the name of *Don Quixote*, he whom I loue so passionately, I haue laboured to engraue that vision in my memory.

Now without doubt then (said *Don Quixote*) it was a right vision: for, there is no other man of that name in the vvhole vvhorld but my selfe: And that History doth already goe from hand to hand thorow all parts of the Vniuerse: and yet staves in no place, for so much as euery one will haue a kicke at it. Now I haue not been angry or vexed, when I haue heard that I wander vp and downe like a fantasticke body, amidst the pitchy shades of Hell, and not in the light of the earth; since I am not the man that History speaketh of. If it be true and faithfully compiled, it will liue many ages; but if it be nothing worth, it will dye euen at it's birth.

*Altisidora* would haue continued her complaints, accusing *Don Quixote* of rigour and vnkindnes; but hee said thus vnto her, Madame, I haue often told you, that I am very angry, that you haue settled your thoughts on me; since you can draw nothing from me but bare thanks, and no remedy at all. I was onely borne for *Dulcinea of Toboso*, and to her onely haue the Destinies (if there be any) wholly dedicated me. To thinke, that any other beauty can possesse or vsurpe the place, which she possesseth

Hh 3

seleth

seileth in my soule, were to beleue an impossibility. And this should suffice to dis-abuse you, and to make you to retire your selfe within the bounds of your honesty, since no creature is tyde vnto impossibilities.

*Altisidora* hearing these words, made a semblance to be very angry: so that, as it were in a great anger, she thus bespake him, I swear by the Prince of the Mumps, the soule of a Morter, and stone of a Date; more obstinate and hard-hearted, then a rude and base Peasant when one sueth vnto him, and when he addresseth his leuell to the Butt or Marke: if I take you in hand, I will plucke your very eyes out of your head.

Doe you haply suppose, Sir vanquished, and *Don* Knockedowne with Bats and Cudgels, that I would haue dyed for you? No, no, Sir, whatsoeuer you haue seen this night, hath been nothing but a fiction, or thing fained. I am not a Maiden, that would suffer so much as the least-least paine at the tip of my nailes for such a Camell as you are; much lesse that I would dye for such a grosse animall.

I beleue it well (quoth *Sancho* then) for all these louers deaths are but to cause sport and laughter. Well may they say, that they dye: but that they will hasten their deaths, *Iudas* may beleue it if he list.

As they were in these discourses, the Musician and Poet, who had sung the fore-going *Stanza's*, entred into the Chamber, and making a very low reuerence vnto *Don Quixote*, hee thus said vnto him, Sir Knight, I beseech you to hold me in the number of your humblest seruants. I haue long since been most affectionate vnto you, as wel by reason of your farre-bruied renowne, as for your high-raised feates of Armes.

Tell me (answered *Don Quixote*) who you are, that my courtesie may answere your merit.

The Yongman gaue him to vnderstand, that he was the Musician and the Panegiricke of the fore-past night.

In good sooth (replide *Don Quixote*) you haue a very good voice: Neuerthelesse it seemes, that what you sing, was not greatly to the purpose: for, what haue the *Stanza's* of *Garcilasse* to doe with the death of this Damosell? My faire Sir, said the Musi-

Musician, you ought not to wonder at that: The best & choicest Poets of our age doe practice it: so that euery man writes as best pleaseth his fantasie, and stealeth what, and from vvhom he lists, whether it cohere with the purpose or not. By reason whereof, all the follies, absurdities, or topperies that they sing, indite, or write, they ascribe vnto a Poeticall licence.

*Don Quixote* would haue answered, but he was hindred by the Duke and Duchesse, who both entred the Chamber to see him. Amongst whom there passed so long a discourse, and pleasant a conference, in which *Sancho* alledged so many ready quips, witty conceits, merry Prouerbs, and therewithall so many wyly shifts, and subtile knaueries, as the Duke and the Duchesse were all astonished againe; as well by reason of his simplicity, as of his subtilty.

*Don Quixote* besought them to giue him leaue to depart the very same day; since that Knights subdued as he was, ought rather to dwell in an homely Cottage, or simple Shed, then in Kingly Palaces: which they most willingly granted him: And the Duchesse demanded of him, whether *Altisidora* was in his good fauour, or no. Madame, (answered *Don Quixote*) you are to vnderstand, that all the infirmities of this Damosell, takes its beginning and being from idlenesse, and that an honest occupation, and continuall exercise is the onely remedy for it. She was euen now telling me, that in hel they are working Tapitry worke, and that there are made Tyrings and Net-workes.

I thinke that she is skilfull in such workes, and that's the reason she therein employes her selfe, neuer ceasing to handle small Spindles or Spooles: and thus the images of him she loueth will neuer be removed in her imagination.

What I tell you is most certaine: It is my opinion, it is my counsell.

And mine also, quoth *Sancho*, since I neuer saw any workeman, that applide or busied himselfe about such workes, that dyed for loue. The Maidens, I say, occupied about such workes, thinke more on the accomplishing of their taske, then on that of their Loues. I iudge of it by my selfe, whilst I am digging or deluing, I neuer thinke on my Pinkaney at all; I speake of my

*Teresa Panfa*, whom I loue better a thousand times, then my very eye-lids.

*Sancho*, you speake very well, said the Duchesse: and I will take such order, as my *Altisidora* shall henceforward occupy her selfe about such workes: for, she can worke them excellently well.

Madame (quoth *Altisidora*) I shall not need to vse such a remedy, since the remembrance or consideration of the cruelties and vnkindnesses which this Robber and rousing Thiefe hath vsed towards me, will be of force, without any other deuice or artifice, to blot and deface them out of my memory. In the meane while, with your Highnesses permission, I will be gone from hence, that so mine eyes may not behold not onely his filthy and gasty shape; but his vgly and abominable countenance.

The words (replyde the Duke) which you vtter, make me remember the old Prouerbe, which teacheth vs, that he vvho sharply chides, is ready to pardon.

*Altisidora* made a shew to dry vp the teares from her eyes with a Handkercher; and then making a very low curtisie vnto her Master and Mistresse, she went out of the Chamber.

Alas, poore Damozel (said then *Sancho*) I send thee ill lucke, since thou hast already met with it, in lighting vpō a soule made of a Skuttle, and a heart of Oake. Hadst thou had to doe vvith me, thou shouldst haue found a Cock of me, that would haue crowed after another fashion.

Thus their discourse brake off; *Don Quixote* took his clothes, dined with the Duke and Duchesse, and in the afternoone went his way.

## CHAP.

## CHAP. LXXI.

Of what befell Don Quixote and his Squire Sancho Panfa, in their trauell towards their Village.

**T**He vanquished Knight Errant, *Don Quixote de la Mancha* went on his iourney, very sad and pensieue on the one side, and most glad and buck-some on the other. From his being conquered proceeded the cause of his sadnesse; and his gladnes, in considering the worth and vertue of *Sancho*, whereof he gaue manifest euidence in the resurrection of *Altisidora*; although with some scruple he perswaded himselfe, that the enamored Damozell was not verily dead.

*Sancho* was no whit well pleased; but chafed to himselfe, because *Altisidora* had not kept promise with him, and giuen him the Shirts he expected at her hands. And therefore musing and pondering on them, he said to his Master, By my faith, Sir, I am the most vnfortunate Physician, that may be found in the world. There be some Leaches, that kill a sick man vvhom they haue vnder cure, and will neuertheless be well paid for their paines. Now all they doe, is but to write a short Bill of certaine medicines, which the Apothecary, and not they, doth afterward compound: Whereas I, cleane contrary, to whom the recovery and health of others doth cost many a clod of bloud, many a flint and bob, many a bitter frump, and many a lash with whips and rods, reape not so much as one poore farthing.

But certainly I promise you, if any diseased or sicke body fall into my hands againe, before I cure vni, I'll be very well greazed for my paines. For, the Abbot liueth singing, and I can not thinke, that the heauens haue endowed me with the vertue and knowledge I haue, to the end I should communicate and impart the same vnto others for nothing.

My good friend *Sancho* (answered *Don Quixote*) thou art in the right, & *Altisidora* hath done very ill, that she hath not giuen thee the shirts, which she promised thee, although that vertue & pro-



proprietie which thou hast, haue beene giuen thee *gratis*, and that in learning and studying it, thou hast not beene at a penny charge: neuertheless, the troubles and vexations, vvhich thou hast receiued, and endured in thine owne person, are farre more, then all the studies that thou couldest haue vndergone or employed about it. As for mee, I can tell thee, that if thou wouldest haue had the full pay for the whip-lashes, that thou shouldest giue thy selfe for disenchanting of *Dulcinea*, thou hadst already fully receiued it. Yet know I not whether the wages or hire, will answere the cure, or recouerie, and I would not haue it be an hindrance to the remedy. Me seemes notwithstanding, that one shall lose nothing in the tryall.

Consider, *Sancho*, what thou wilt haue, and forthwith whip thy selfe, and with thine own hands pay thy selfe downe-right, since thou hast money of mine in thy keeping.

*Sancho* presently opened his eyes and eares a foote wide at these kinde offers, and tooke a resolution with a cheerefull heart to whip and lash himselfe: and therefore said vnto his Master, Now is the time, my Noble Sir, that I will wholly dispose my selfe to giue you satisfaction, since I shall reape some benefit by it. The loue of my children and my wife, induceth me to haue no regard at all vnto the harme or ill, that may thereby come vnto me.

Tell me then, what will you giue me for euery stripe or lash? If I were bound to pay thee (replied *Don Quixote*) equiualent to the greatnesse and qualitie of the remedy, the treasure of *Venice*, and the rich Mynes of *Pera*, would not suffice to recompence thee. Looke well thy selfe, what thou hast of mine, and value euery lash as thou wilt. The whip-lashes (quoth *Sancho*) are in number three thousand, three hundred and odde: I haue already giuen my selfe five, the other remaine behinde. Let the five serue to deduct the odde number remaining, and let all be reduced to three thousand and three hundred. My meaning is, to haue for euery lash a piece of three blanks, (and lesse I will not haue, should all the world command me the contrary) so that they will amount to 3300. pieces of three blankes. The three thousand, make a thousand and five hundred halfe

Ryalls,

Ryalls, and they make seuen hundred and fifty whole Ryalls; and the three hundred make one hundred & fifty halfe Ryalls, which amount vnto the summe of three score and fifteen Ryalls, which, added vnto the seuen hundred and fifty, the whole sum amounteth vnto eight hundred and five and twenty Ryalls.

I will reckon this summe, and deduct it from that I haue of yours in my keeping, and by this meanes shall enter into my house both rich and well satisfied, albeit well whipt and scourged: for, Trouts are not caught with nothing, and I say no more.

Oh thrice-happy *Sancho*! oh amiable *Sancho* (said *Don Quixote*) how am I and *Dulcinea* bound to serue thee, so long as the Heauens shall be pleased to giue vs life? If she recouer her first being, and if it be impossible to continue still in that state, her misfortune shall prooue most fortunate, and my defeat or conquest, a most glorious and happy triumph. Then look, *Sancho*, when thou wilt begin this discipline, and I will giue thee one hundred Ryalls ouer and aboue, that so I may binde thee to begin betimes. When (replied *Sancho*?) Euen this very night. Be you but pleased, that this night we meet in the open fields, and you shall see me open, gash, and slay my selfe.

To be short, the night came, which *Don Quixote* had with all manner of impatience long looked for: to whom it seemed that the wheelles of *Apollo's* Chariot had beene broken, and that the day grew longer then it was wont, euen as it happeneth vnto Louers, who thinke that they shall neuer come to obtaine the accomplishment of their desires. At last they entred a groue of delightfome trees, which was somewhat remote, and out of the high way. After they had taken off the Saddle and Pack-saddle of *Rosinante* and Dapple, they sate downe vpon the green grasse, and supped with such victuals as *Sancho* had in his Wallets.

This good Squire hauing made of Dapples halter or headstall, a good big whip or scourge, he went about twenty paces from his Master, and thrust himselfe among bushes and hedges.

*Don Quixote* seeing him march thus all naked, and vvith so good a courage, began thus to discourse vnto him, Take heed,

good

good friend, that thou hack not thy selfe in pieces, and that the stripes and lashes stay the one anothers leasure; thou must not make such haste in thy Careere, that thy winde or breath faile in thy course. My meaning is, that thou must not lash thy selfe so hard and fast, that thy life faint, before thou come to thy desired number: But to the end that thou lose not thy selfe for want of a paire of writing-tables, more or lesse, I will stand aloofe off, & vpon these my prayer-beades will number the lashes that thou shalt giue thy selfe. Now the heauens fauour thee, as thy good meaning well deserueth.

A good Pay-master (answered *Sancho*) will neuer grudge to giue wages; I thinke to curry or so be-labour my selfe, that without endangering my life, my lashes shall bee sensible vnto me, and therein must the substance of this miracle consist. And immediately *Sancho* stripped himselfe bare from the girdle vppward, and taking the whip in his hand, began to ribbe-baste and lash himselfe roundly; and *Don Quixote* to number the strokes. When *Sancho* had giuen himselfe seuen or eight stripes, hee thought he had killed himselfe; so that pawling awhile, hee said to his Master, that he was very much deceiued, and would therefore appeale, forsomuch as euery whip-lash did in lieu of a piece of three Blanks, deserue halfe a Ryall.

Make an end, my friend *Sancho*, (quoth *Don Quixote*) and be not dismaid; for I will redouble thy pay.

Now by my life then (quoth *Sancho*) blowes shall showre vpon me as thicke as haile: but the Mountibanke and cheating companion, in stead of lashing his shoulders, he vvhipped the trees, and so sighingly groaned at euery stroake, that you would haue thought his soule had flowne out of his body.

*Don Quixote*, who was now full of compassion, fearing hee would kill himselfe, and that, through the folly of *Sancho*, his desires should not be accomplished, began thus to say vnto him, Friend, I coniure thee, let this businesse end heere: This remedy seemes to mee very hard and sharpe. It shall not be amisse that we giue time vnto Time; for, *Rome* was neuer built in one day. If I haue told right, thou hast already giuen thy selfe more then a thousand lashes: it now sufficeth, let mee vse a homely phrase,

phrase) that the Alfe endure his charge, but not the sur-charge.

No, no, my good Sir, answered *Sancho*, it shall neuer be said of me, Money well paid, and the Armes broken. I pray you goe but a little aside, and permit me to giue my selfe one thousand stripes more, and then we shall quickly make an end, yea, and we shall haue more left behinde. Since thou art so well disposed, replyde *Don Quixote*, I will then withdraw my selfe, may the heauens assist and recompence thee.

*Sancho* returned to his taske, with such an earnest passion, that the barke of many a tree fell off, so great was the rigour and fury wherewith he scourged himselfe. Now in giuing such an exceeding and outrageous lash vpon a hedge, hee cryde out aloud, Heere is the place where *Samson* shall dye, with all those that are with him.

*Don Quixote* rair presently at the sound of that wofull voice, and at the noise of that horrible whip-stroke. Then laying fast hold on the Halter, which serued *Sancho* in lieu of an Oxe-pizell, he said to him, Friend *Sancho*, let Fortune neuer permit, that thou, to giue me contentment, hazzard the losse of thy life, which must serue for the entertainment of thy Wife and Children. I will containe my selfe within the bounds of the next hope, and will stay vntill thou haue recouered new strength, to the end this businesse may be ended, to the satisfaction of all parties.

My good Sir (quoth *Sancho*) since you will needs haue it so, in good time be it. In the meane while, I beseech you, Sir, cast your Cloke vpon my shoulders. I am all in a sweat, and I would be loth to take cold. Our new disciplinants runne the like danger.

*Don Quixote* did so, and leauing himselfe in his doublet, he couered *Sancho*, who fell asleepe, and slept vntill the Sunne awakened him. They kept on their way so long, that at last they arriued to a place three Leagues off, and at last staid at an Inne.

*Don Quixote* knew it to be an Inne, and not a Castle round enuironed with ditches or trenches, fortified with Towers, with Port-cullisses, and strong draw-bridges: for, since his last defea-

ture,

ture he discerned and distinguished of all things that presented themselves vnto him with better iudgement, as we shall presently declare.

Hee was lodged in a low chamber, to which certaine old-worne curtaines of painted Serge serued in lieu of Tapistry hangings, as commonly they vse in Country Villages. In one of the pieces might be seene painted by a bungling and vnskilfull hand, the rape of *Helen*, at what time her fond-hardy ghest stole her from *Menelaus*. In another was the history of *Dido* and *Aeneas*; Shee on an high Turret, with a sheet making signe vnto her fugitiue ghest, who on the Sea, carried in a Ship, vvas running away from her.

*Don Quixote* obserued in these two stories, that *Helen* seemed not to be discontented with her rape; for so much as shee leered and smiled vnder-hand; whereas beauteous *Dido* seemed to trickle downe teares from her eyes as big as Walnuts. *Don Quixote* in beholding this painted worke, said; These two Ladies were exceedingly vnfortunate; that they were not borne in this age, and I most of all thrice-vnhappy, that I vvas not borne in theirs; In faith I would so haue spoken to these Lordly gallants, as Troy should not haue beene burned, nor Carthage destroyed, since that onely by putting *Paris* to death, I should haue beene the occasion that so many mischiefes would neuer haue hapned.

I hold a wager (quoth *Sancho*) that ere long there shall be neuer a Tippling-house, Tauerne, Inne, Hostery, or Barbers shop, but in them all we shall see the History of our famous acts painted: neuertheles I would wish with all my hart, that they might bee drawne by a more cunning and skilfull hand, then by that which hath pourtraid these figures.

Thou hast reason, *Sancho* (answered *Don Quixote*;) for, this Painter is like vnto *Orbanegia*, who dwelled at *Vbeda*, vvhoe when he was demanded what hee was painting, made this answer, That which shall come forth to light: And if perchance hee drew a Cocke, hee would write a aboue it, This is a Cocke, lest any man should thinke it to be a Foxe. Now me thinks, *Sancho*, that such ought to be the Painter or the Writer: (for

(for all is one same thing) who hath set forth the History of this new *Don Quixote*, because he hath painted or written that which may come forth to the open light. He hath imitated a certaine Poet named *Manteon*, who the last yecere was at the Court, who suddenly would make answer to whatsoeuer vvas demanded him. And as one asked him one day, what these words *Deum de Deo* signified, he answered in Spanish, *De donde diere*. But omitting all this, tell me *Sancho*, Hast thou a mind to giue thy selfe another touch this night, and wilt thou haue it to be vnder the roofe of a house, or else in the open ayre?

Now I assure you (quoth *Sancho*) for the stripes and lashes that I intend to giue my selfe, I loue them as well in the house as in the open fields: yet with this *Promiso*, that I would haue it to be amongst trees; for me thinks, that they keepe me good company, and doe exceedingly help me to indure and vndergoe my trauell and paines.

Friend *Sancho* (said *Don Quixote*) that shall not be: rather reserve them, that you may exercise them when we shall be arriued at our Village, whither at the furthest we shall reach the next day after to morrow; and in the mean time thou shalt haue recovered new strength.

*Sancho* answered, that he might doe what best pleased him; but notwithstanding he desired to dispatch this businesse in hot bloud, and whilest the Mill was going; for, dangers consist often in lingring and expectation, and that with prayers vnto God, a man must strike with his mallet; that one; Take it, is more worth then two, Thou shalt haue it: and better is one sparrow in the hand, then a vulture flying in the ayre.

Now for Gods sake, *Sancho* (replied *Don Quixote*) let vs not alledge so many Prouerbs; me thinks thou art still returning vnto *Sicut erat*. I prethee speake plainely, cleerly, and goe not so about the bush with such embroyling speeches, as I haue often told thee: and thou shalt see, that one loafe of bread will yeeld thee more then an hundred.

I am so vnlucky (quoth *Sancho*) that I cannot discourse without Prouerbs, nor can I alleage a Prouerbe, that seemes not to be a reason vnto mee; Neuertheles, if I can, I will correct my selfe:

seife, and with that they gaue ouer their enterparlie at that time.

## CHAP. LXXII.

*How Don Quixote and Sancho arrived  
at their Village.*

**D**On Quixote and Sancho looking for night, staid in that Inne: the one to end in the open fields, the taske of his discipline; and the other to see the successe of it, whence depended the end of his desires. During which time, a Gentleman on horsebacke, followed by three or foure seruants, came to the gate of the Inne, to whom one of his attendants said thus; My Lord *Don Aluaro Tarfe*, you may heere rest your selfe, and passe the great heat of the day. This Inne seemeth to be very cleanly and coole.

Which speech *Don Quixote* hearing, he said vnto *Sancho*, Thou oughtest to know, that when I turned ouer the booke of the second part of my history, me thought that in reading of the same, I met with this name of *Don Aluaro Tarfe*.

That may very well be, said *Sancho*: but first let vs see him alight from his horse, and then we will speake vnto him.

The Knight alighted, and the Hostelle appointed him a low chamber, neere vnto that of *Don Quixote*, and which was furnished with like figures of painted Serge. The new-come Knight did forth-with put off his heauy cloathes, and now going out of the Inne-porch, which was somewhat spacious and fresh, vnder which *Don Quixote* was walking, he demanded of him, Whither goe you, my good Sir Gentleman? I am going (answered *Don Quixote*) vnto a certaine Village not farre off, where I was borne. And you, my Lord, whither goe you? I trauell (said the Knight) towards Granada, which is my native Country. Sir, you were borne (replied *Don Quixote*) in a very good Country; In the mean time, I pray you in courtesie, tel me your name; for it stands me very much vpon to know it, yea

more

more then can well be imagined. I am called *Don Aluaro Tarfe* (answered the Knight.) Then are you vndoubtedly (quoth *Don Quixote*) that *Aluaro Tarfe*, whose name is imprinted in the second part of the History of *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, which a moderne Author hath lately set forth. I am the very same man of whom you speake (said the Knight) and that *Don Quixote* who is the principal subiect of such an History, was my very great friend.

It was euen I that drew him first out of his village, or at least that perswaded him to beat the lusts and Tiltings which were then kept at *Saragosa*, and whither I was going: and in good truth I did him a great fauour; for I was the cause that the hangman did not well claw and burn-baste his backe, hauing rightly deserued such a punishment, because he had beene ouer-rash and foole-hardy.

But tel me, I beseech you then (quoth *Don Quixote*) my Lord *Don Aluaro*, do I in any thing resemble the said *Don Quixote* of whom you speake? Nothing at all, answered the other. And did that *Don Quixote* (replied our Knight) conduct with him a Squire named *Sancho Panza*? Yes verily, (quoth *Don Aluaro*) And the report went, that this Squire was very blithe, pleasant, and game some; but yet I neuer heard him speak any thing with a good garbe or grace, nor any one word that might cause laughter.

I beleue it well, said *Sancho* then; for, it suits not with all the world to be pleasant and iesting: and the very same *Sancho* of whom you speake (my Lord the Gentleman) must be some notorious rogue, some greedy-gut, and notable theefe. It is I that am the right *Sancho Panza*, that can tell many fine tales; yea more then there are drops of water when it raineth. If so you please, my Lord, you may make experience of it, and follow me at least one yeere, and you shall then see, that at every step I shall speake so many vnpleasant things, that very often without knowing what I vtter, I make all them to laugh that listen vnto me. In good sooth, *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, the farre renowned, the valiant, the discreet, the amorous; he who is the redresser of wrongs, the reuenger of outrages, the tutor of in-

I i

fests,

fants, the Gardian of Orphanes, the Rampire or fortresse of Widdowes, the Defender of Damozels and Maidens: he who hath for his onely Mistresse, the matchlesse *Dulcinea del Toboso*, is the very same Lord whom you see heere present, and vvho is my good Master. All other *Don Quixotes*, and all other *Sancho Panfa's* are but dreames, fopperies, and fables.

Now by my holydom I beleue as much (answered *Don Aluaro*;) for, in those few vvords by you euen now vttered, you haue shewed more grace then euer did the other *Sancho Panfa*, in al the long & rattling discourfes that I haue heard come from him. He fauoured more of the Gourmand, then of a well-spoken man; more of a Coxe-combe, then of a pleasant. Without doubt I beleue, that the Enchanters, which persecute the good *Don Quixote*, haue also gone about to persecute me, in making me to know the other *Don Quixote*, who is of no worth or merit at all. Neuerthelesse, I wot not well what to say of it, since I durst swear, that I left him at Toledo in the Nuncio his house, to the end he might be cured and healed, and behold heere another *Don Quixote*, but farre different from mine.

As for me (quoth *Don Quixote*) I know not whether I be good or no, but well I wot I am not the bad. And for a manifest triall of my saying, my Lord *Don Aluaro Tarse*, if you please, you shall vnderstand, that in all my life-time I was neuer at *Saragosa*. And hauing of late vnderstood, that the imaginary *Don Quixote* had beene present at the Turnaments and Tiltings in that City, I would by no meanes come or goe into it, that in view of all the vvorld I might manifest his false tale: Which was the reason that I went strait vnto *Barselona*, the treasury or store-house of all courtesie, the retreat and refuge of all strangers, the relieuing harborough of the poore and needy, the natiue home of valorous men, vvhere such as bee wronged or offended, are auenged; and where true friendships are reciprocall, and in summe, a City that hath no peere, be it eyther for beauty, or for the faire situation of it.

And albeit what hath befallne me bring me no great contentment, I doe notwithstanding somewhat allay the griefe vvith the pleasure, vvhich by the sight thereof I haue receiued & felt.

To

To conclude, my Lord *Don Aluaro Tarse*, I am *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, and the very same man of whom Fame speaketh, and not he, that vnhappy wretch, who to honour himselfe with my designes, hath gone about to vsurpe my name.

In the meane while I humbly beseech you, by the profession which you make to be a Noble Knight, that before the ordinary Iudge of this place, you will be pleased to make me a declaration and certificate, how, so long as you haue liued, euen vntill this present howre, you neuer saw me, & that I am not the said *Don Quixote* imprinted in this second part, and likewise that this *Sancho Panfa* my Squire is not hee whom you heeretofore haue knowne.

I shall doe it with all my heart, (quoth the Knight *Don Aluaro*) although I be very much amazed to see two *Don Quixotes*, and behold, two *Sancho's* at one very instant, so conformable in name, and so different in actions. But I tell you againe and againe &, I assuredly beleue that I haue not viewed vvhat I haue seene, and that what hath hapned vnto me concerning this subiect, hath not befallne at all.

Without doubt, my Lord, then said *Sancho*, it is very likely that you are enchanted, euen as my Lady *Dulcinea of Toboso* is: would to God that your dis-enchanting might be brought to passe with giuing other three thousand and odde whip-lashes, as I doe for her; I would most willingly giue them vnto my selfe, vvithout any interest at all.

I know not what you meane (quoth *Don Aluaro*) by these whip-lashes. To whom *Sancho* said, that it vvould be too long a discourse to relate; but yet hee would make him acquainted with the whole story, if peradventure they should both trauell one same vvay.

By this time the houre of dinner was at hand, and they fed and ate together. At the very same time the Iudge of the place came into the Inne, attended on by a Clerke or Notary, whom *Don Quixote* required that he would take a certificat or declaration, vvhich this Knight *Don Aluaro Tarse* would declare vnto him: forsomuch as it did highly concerne his honor and reputation.

Now the Tenor of this Declaration was, that the said Gentleman did in no sort know *Don Quixote*, who vvas there present, and that hee was not the man, vvwhose name they had lately imprinted in an History, entituled, *The second Part of Don Quixote de la Mancha*, composed by *Abellaneda*, borne at *Tordesillas*.

To conclude, the Iudge engrossed all according to the forme of Law. The Declaration vvas made in forme and manner as all Notaries are accustomed to be, in such and the like cases. By vvwhich meanes *Don Quixote* and *Sancho* rested very glad, and well apaid, as if such a declaration had beene of very great moment and consequence vnto them, & as if their actions & speeches had not apparently shewed the difference and ods that was betweene the two *Don Quixotes*, and the two *Sancho's*.

Diuers complements, and many offices & offers of courtesie did mutually enterpasse betweene *Don Aluaro*, & *Don Quixote*, wherein our heroyke Knight *de la Mancha*, declared so much wisdome, and such discretion, that he resolved *Don Aluaro* of the doubt wherein he was: For, he perswaded himselfe that he vvas enchanted, since with his owne hands hee felt and touched two *Don Quixotes* so different and contrary one to another.

Mid-day being past, and the heat allayed, they departed from that place all together. They had not gone aboue halfe a league, but they met vvith two seuerall paths, the one led to *Don Quixotes Village*, and the other to the place vvither *Don Aluaro* was going.

During vvwhich little space, *Don Quixote* related at large vnto him, the disaster of his ouer-throw, the enchantment, and the remedy of *Dulcinea*. All vvwhich things bred and caused a new admiration in the minde of *Don Aluaro*, vvho kept on his vvay, and *Don Quixote* his.

Our Knight passed that night among the trees, to the end he might giue *Sancho* meanes and leysure to fulfill his penance, vvwhich he accomplished euen as hee had done the fore-past night, more at the charges of the hedges, shrubs, and trees there growing, then of his backe and shoulders. For hee kept them

so safe and vvell, that the lashes which he gaue himselfe, would not haue caused a flye to stirre, had shee taken vp her stand there.

*Don Quixote* thus abused, lost not one stroke vvith misreckoning, and found that those of the fore-going night, ioyned vnto these, vvvere iust the summe of three thousand, nine and twenty.

It seemed the Sunne rose that morning earlier then his wont, to behold this sacrifice, and they perceiuing that it was bright day, vvvent on their iourney, discoursing of the error vvherein *Don Aluaro* vvas, and how they had done very well in taking a declaration before the Iudge, and that so authentically.

They vvandred all that day, and the night succeeding, without encountering any thing worthy the relation, vvntill it be, that the very same night *Sancho* finished his vvhipping taske, to the great contentment of *Don Quixote*, vvho greedily longed for peepe of day, to see if in their trauels they might meete with his sweet Mistresse *Dulcinea*, vvho vvas now disenchanting.

Thus vvandring, they met no vvoman, but they would approach & close vvith her, to take perfect view of her, and to discern vvwhether it were *Dulcinea* of *Toboso*, confidently assuring themselves, as of an infallible truth, that the promises of the prophet *Merlin* could not possibly proue false.

Whilest they vvvere musing on these things, and their longings encreasing, they vnawares ascended a little hillocke, whence they discovered their Village. Which *Sancho* had no sooner perceiued, but hee prostrated himselfe on his knees, and vttered these words;

Oh my deare-dearely-beloued, and long desired native countrey, open thine eyes, and behold how thy sonne *Sancho* returns at last to thee againe: who if he be not very rich, yet is he at least very well whipt and lashed. Open thine armes likewise, and friendly receiue thy sonne *Don Quixote*. And if he returneth to thee vanquished by the force of a strange arme, he yet at least returneth conquerour of himselfe. And as himselfe



hath often told me, it is the greatest victory, that any man can desire, or wish for. I haue good store of money : for, if they gaue me sound whip-lashes, I found much good in being a worthy Knight.

Let vs leaue these fooleries, said *Don Quixote*, and forthwith wend vnto our Village, where we will giue free passage vnto our imaginations and prescribe vnto our selues the forme and method, that we are to keepe and obserue in the rurall or pastorall life, which we intend to put in practise. Thus reasoning together, they faire and gently descended the hillock, and approached to their Village.

---

CHAP. LXXIII.

*Of the presages and fore-boadings, which hapned to Don Quixote, at the entrance into his Village; with other Aduentures, which serue for grace and ornament vnto this famous History, and which giue credit vnto it.*

**C** I D *Hamete* reporteth, that as they were come neere vnto the entrance into their Village, *Don Quixote* perceived how in the Commons thereof there were two yong Lads, who in great anger contended and disputed together. The one said to the other, *Pierrot*, thou must not chafe nor bee angry at it: For, as long as thou liuest, thou shalt neuer set thine eyes vpon her. Which *Don Quixote* hearing, he began this speech vnto *Sancho*; Friend (said he) dost not thou vnderstand what yonder yong Lad saith? So long as thou liuest thou shalt neuer set eyes vpon her.

And what imports (quoth *Sancho*) what that yong Lad hath spoken? What (replied *Don Quixote*?) seest thou not, how that applying the words vnto mine intention; his meaning is, that I shall neuer see my *Dulcinea*? *Sancho* was about to answere him, but he was hindred by an Hare, which chafed, crossed their way. She vvas eagerly pursued by diuers Gray-hounds and

and Hunts-men, so that fearfully amazed she squatted down betweene the feete of Dapple.

*Sancho* boldly tooke her vp, and presented the same vnto *Don Quixote*, who cryed out aloud, *Malum signum, malum signum*: A Hare runnes away, Gray-hounds pursue her, and *Dulcinea* appears not. You are a strange man (then quoth *Sancho*, let vs imagine that this Hare is *Dulcinea*, and the Gray-hounds which pursue her, the wicked Euanterers, that haue transformed her into a Country-Lasse. She runnes away, I take her vp, and deliuer her into your owne hands: you hold her in your armes, you hugge and make much of her. What ill-boading may this be, and what misfortune can be implide vpon this?

In the meane while, the two yong Boyes came neere vnto them to see the Hare: and *Sancho* demanded of one of them the cause or ground of their brabbling controuersie? Then he, who had vttered the words, So long as thou liuest, thou shalt neuer set eyes vpon her, related vnto *Sancho*, how that he had taken from the other Boy a little Cage full of Crickets, and that he neuer purposed to let him haue it againe. Then *Sancho* pul'd out of his pocket a piece of sixe Blankes, and gaue it to the other Boy for his Cage, which he put into *Don Quixotes* hands, saying thus vnto him, Behold, good Sir, all these fond Sooth-sayings and ill presages are dashed and ouerthrowne, and haue now nothing to doe with our Aduentures, (according to my vnderstanding, although I be but a silly gull) no more then with the last yeeres snow. And if my memory faile mee not, I thinke I haue heard the Curate of our Village say, that 'tis not good Christians and wise folkes to stand vpon such foolish supereries.

It is not long since you told me so your selfe, and gaue me to vnderstand, that all such Christians, as plodded & amused themselves vpon Augures or Diuinations, were very fooles. And therefore let vs no longer trouble our selues with them, but let vs goe on, and enter into our Village. There whilest the hunters came in, they demanded to haue their Hare, and *Don Quixote* deliuered the same vnto them.

Then he and *Sancho* kept on their way; and at the entrance

into the Village, in a little meddow, they met with the Curate, and the Bachelor *Carraſco*, who with their Beads in their hands were ſaying their prayers.

It is to be vnderſtood, that *Sancho Panſa* had placed vpon Dapple, and vpon the fardell of their weapons the Iacket or Gberdine of *Boccaſin* all painted ouer with fierie flames, which was vpon him in the Dukes Caſtle; the night that *Altifidora* roſe againe from death to life: which iubb or iacket ſerued them in ſtead of a Carpet or Sumpter-cloth.

They had likewiſe placed vpon the Aſſes head the Myter, whereof we haue ſpoken before. It was the neweſt kinde of transformation, and the fitteſt decking or array, that euer Aſſe did put vpon his head.

The Curate and the Bachelor knew them incontinently, and with wide-open armes ranne towards them.

*Don Quixote* alighted preſently and very kindly embraced them. But the little children, who are as ſharpe-ſighted as any Linx, hauing eyed the Aſſes Myter, flocke ſuddenly about them to ſee the ſame, ſaying the one to the other, Come, come, and runne all you *Camarados*, and you ſhall ſee *Sancho Panſa's* Aſſe more braue & gallant then *Mingo*: and *Don Quixote's* Palfry leaner, fainter, and more flaggy then it was the firſt day.

Finally, being enuironed with a many yong children, and attended on by the Curate and Bachelor, they entred the Village, and went directly vnto *Don Quixote's* houſe. At the dore whereof they met with his Maid ſeruant, and with his Neece, who had already heard the newes of their comming.

*Tereſa Panſa*, the wife of *Sancho*, had likewiſe been aduertified thereof. She ranne all diſheueled and halfe naked to ſee her Husband, leading her Daughter *Sanchica* by the hand. But when ſhe ſaw, that he was not ſo richly attired as ſhe imagined, and in that equipage a Gouvernour ſhould be, ſhe thus began to diſcourſe with him, My Husband, after what faſhion doeſt thou come home? Mee thinkes thou commelt on foot, and vvith toyleſome traueilling all tyred and faint-hearted: Thou rather beareſt the countenance of a miſerable wretch, then of a Gouvernour.

Hold

Hold thy peace *Tereſa* (quoth *Sancho* :) for, oftentimes, when there be Bootes, there be no Spurres. Let vs goe vnto our houſe, and there thou ſhalt heare wonders. So it is, that I haue money, which is of more conſequence, and I haue gotten it by mine owne induſtry, without doing wrong to any body.

Why then you haue money, my good Husband (replyed *Tereſa*?) That's very well. It is no matter how you came by it, be it by hooke or crooke. For, after what manner ſoeuer you haue laid hands on it, you bring no new cuſtom into the world. *Sanchica* embraced her Father, and asked him whether he had brought her any thing; and that ſhe had as earneſtly looked for him, as men doe for dew in the moneth of May.

Thus his Wife holding him by the one hand, and his Daughter by the one ſide of his girdle, and with the other hand leading Dapple, they entred into their Cottage, leauing *Don Quixote* in his owne houſe in the power of his Neece and Maid ſeruant, and in the company of the Curate, and the Bachelor.

*Don Quixote*, without longer delay, at that very inſtant drew the Bachelor and the Curate aſide, and in few words related his being defeated vnto them, and the Vow, which he had been forced to make, not to goe out of his Village during the ſpace of one whole yeere: how his purpoſe was fully to keep the ſame, without tranſgreſſing it one iot or atome: ſince that by the rules of Knight Errantry, and as he was a true Knight Errant, he was ſtrictly obliged to performe it. Which was the reaſon that he had reſolued, during the time of that yeere, to become a Shepheard, and entertaine himſelfe among the Deſarts and ſolitarie places of that Countrey, where he might freely vent out and giue ſcope vnto his amorous paſſions, by exerciſing himſelfe in commendable and vertuous paſtorall exerciſes: And now beſought them, if they had no greater affaires in hand, and vvere not imployed in matters of more importance, they would both be pleaſed to become his companions, and fellow-Shepheards. For, he would buy ſtore of ſheepe, and get ſo ſufficient a flock together, as they might vvell take vpon them the name of ſhepheards.

And in the meane time, he gaue them to vnderſtand, that the chie-

chiefest point of this businesse was already effected : for, he had already appointed them so proper and conuenient names, as if they had been cast in a mould.

The Curat would needs know these names. *Don Quixote* told him, that himselfe would be called, the Shepheard *Quixotis* : the Bachelor, the Shepheard *Carrasco* ; and the Curat, the Shepheard *Curambro* ; and as for *Sancho Pansa*, hee should be stiled *Pansino*.

They were all astonished at *Don Quixotes* new folly : Neuer-thelesse, that he might not another time goe out of his Village, and returne to his Knight-hoods, and Caualliers tricks : and therewithall supposing, that in the space of this yeere he might be cured and recouered : they allowed of his deligne and new inuention, and in that rurall exercise offered to become his companions.

We shall leade a pleasant life, said *Samson Carrasco*, since, as all the world knoweth, I am an excellent Poet, and shall euery hand-while be composing of Pastorall Ditties and Eglogues, or els some Verses of the Court, as best shall agree to our purpose. Thus shall we entertaine our selues by the wayes we shall passe and goe.

But good Sirs, the thing that is most necessary, is, that euery one make choise of the name of the Shepheardesse, whom he intendeth to celebrate in his Verses : and that there be no Tree, how hard and knurry focuer, but therein we shall write, carue, and engraued her name, euen as amorous Shepheards are accustomed to doe.

In good sooth, that will doe passing well (quoth *Don Quixote*) albeit I neede not goe farre to finde out the name of an imaginary Shepheardesse ; since I haue the neuer-matched or paralleled *Dulcinea of Toboso*, the glory of all these shores ; the ornament of these meddowes ; the grace and comeliness of beauty ; the creame and prime of all gracefulness : and (to be short) the subiect, on which the extremitie of all commendations may rightly be conferred, how hyperbolicall focuer it be.

It is most true, said the Curate. But for vs, we must seek out some barren Shepheardesses, and at least, if they bee not fit  
and

and proper for vs, yet one way or other they may stead vs, if not in the maine, yet in the by. Although we haue none (quoth *Samson Carrasco*) yet will we giue them those very names as we see in print, and wherewith the world is full. For we will call them *Phillis*, *Amarillis*, *Diana*, *Florinda*, *Galathea*, and *Telisarda*. Since they are publikely to be sold in the open market-place, we may very well buy them, and lawfully appropriate them vnto our selues.

If my Mistresse, or, to say better, my Shepheardesse haue to name *Anna*, I will celebrate her vnder the stile of *Anarda* ; if she be called *Francis*, I will call her *Francina* ; and if she hight *Lucie*, her name shall be *Lucinda* : for, all such names square and encounter. As for *Sancho Pansa*, if he will be one of our fraternitie, he may celebrate his wife *Teresa Pansa* vnder the name of *Teresaina*.

*Don Quixote* burst out a laughing at the application of these names, whilst the Curat did infinitely commend and extoll his honourable resolution, and againe offered to keepe him company all the time that he could spare, hauing acquitted himselfe of the charge vnto which he was bound.

With that they tooke leaue of him, perswading, and entreating him to haue a care of his health, and indeuour to be merry.

So it hapned, that his Neece and his Maid-seruant heard all the speeches, which they three had together : And vvhhen the Bachelor and the Curat were gone from him, they both came neere vnto *Don Quixote*, and thus his Neece bespake him :

What meanes this (my Lord, mine Vncle ? ) Now vvhhen we imagined, that you would haue continued in your owne house, and there liue a quiet, a reposed and honourable life, you goe about to cast your selfe headlong into new Labyrinths and troubles, with becomming a Swaine or Shepheard ? Verily the corne is already ouer-hard to make Oaten-pipes of it.

But how (quoth the Maid-seruant) can you indure and vndergoe in the open fields the scorching heate of Summer, and the cold and frost of winter nights, and heare the howlings

lings of Wolues, without quaking for very feare? No truly, for so much as that belongs onely to such as are of a robult and Surly complexion, of a hard and rugged skinne, and that from their Cradles are bred and enured to such a trade and occupation. If the worst come to the worst, it were better to bee still a Knight Errant, then a Shepheard.

I beseech you, good my Lord, follow my counsell, which I giue you, not as being full of wine and bread, but rather fasting, and as one, that haue fifty yeeres vpon my head. Abide still in your house, thinke on your domestlike affaires, confesse your selfe often, serue God, doe good vnto the poore, and if any harme come to you of it, let mee take it vpon my soule.

Good Wenches hold your peace (replied *Don Quixote* :) for I know what I haue to doe. In the meane while, let me be had to bed. Meethinkes I am not very well: yet assure your selues, that whether I be an Errant Knight, or a Shepheard, I will carefully prouide for all that you may stand in need of, and you shall see the effects of it.

The Neece and the Maidseruant, vwho without doubt were two merry good Wenches, layd him in his bed, and attended, and lookt so well vnto him, as they could not possibly haue done better.

## CHAP.

## CHAP. LXXIIII.

*How Don Quixote fell Sicke: of the Will he made, and of his death.*

All humane things being transitorie, and not eternal, are euer declining from their beginnings, vntill they come vnto their last end and period; but more especially the liues of men. And as that of *Don Quixote* had no priuledge from Heauen to continue in one estate, and keepe it's course, his end surprised him, at what time he least thought of it. I wot not whether it proceeded of the melancholy, which the sad remembrance of his being vanquished caused in him; or whether the disposition of the heauens had so decreed: so it is, that a burning Feuer seized vpon him, which forced him to keepe his bed sixe dayes.

During which time, the Curate, the Bachelor, and the Barber, who were all his good friends, did very often visit him: and *Sancho Panza* his good Squire neuer went from his bedside.

They supposing, that the vexation and fretting, which he felt for hauing bin conquered; as also because he saw not the accomplishment of his desires, touching the disenchantment of *Dulcinea*, caused this sicknes in him, endeuoured by all possible meanes to make him merry.

The Bachelor desired him to be of good courage, and to rise, that they might begin their Pastorall Exercise, and how he had already composed an Eglogue, which was nothing behinde those that *Sanazaro* had compiled: That for the same purpose he had bought two goodly and faire dogges, and of great renowne, for to keepe their flocke, whereof the one was called *Bardino*, and the other *Butron*; and how a Shepheard of Quintanar had sold them to him.

But for all this *Don Quixote* quitted not his sorrow, nor left off his sadnesse.

His friends called for a Phisician, who was nothing well pleased

pleased with his pulse which he felt. And therefore hee told him, that whatsoever might happen, he should not doe amisse to begin to thinke on the saluation of his soule; for, the health of his body was in very great danger.

*Don Quixote*, without being any whit amazed, did very quietly listen vnto this discourse, which neyther his Niece, his maid, nor his Squire did: for, they were so deeply plunged in teares & weeping, as, had they seene gastly death in the face, they could haue done no more.

The Physician told them plainly, that onely melancholy, and his troublesome cares were the cause of his death.

*Don Quixote* entreated the company to leaue him alone, because he had a great desire to sleepe a while. They did so, and he had a sound nap (as they say) of sixe houres, so that the maid and his Niece thought hee would neuer haue waked againe. Well, hee waked at last, and vvith a loud and audible voyce, he vttered these words; The Almighty God be for euer blessed, that hath done so much good for mee. To be short, his mercies haue no bounds, they are neyther shortned nor hindred by the sinnes of man.

The Neece listned vvith heedy attention vnto her Vncles words, and perceiuing that they were better couched, and wiser disposed then those he was accustomed to pronounce in al his sickneses, she proposed this question vnto him: My Lord and Vncle, what is that you say? Is there any new matter befallne? what mercies doe you speake off? or what sinnes of men? My good Niece, (replied *Don Quixote*) the mercies I talke of, are those which God of his goodnes hath at this instant conferred vpon me wretched sinner, and my sinnes haue beene no stop or let vnto them. I possesse now a free and cleere iudgement, and nothing ouershadowed vvith the mysty clouds of ignorance, which the continuall reading and plodding on bookes of Chiuallry had ouer-cast mee withall.

I acknowledge all these extrauagancies, and confesse them to be but coozening tricks; and am aggrieved that this disabuse hath hapned so late vnto me, as it affords me no leysure  
to

to make amends for my ouersight, by reading of other good bookes, and which might serue and tend to the enlightning of my soule. My deare Niece, I feele my selfe neere vnto death, but I would not haue it to be such, as the surname of foole should rest vpon mee; for, although I haue beene foolish in my life, I desire not to confirme the truth of it in my death. And therefore my deare friend, goe and cause the Curate, the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco*, and Master *Nicholas* the Barber to come immediately vnto me. I desire to confesse my selfe, and to make my last Will and Testament. His Niece was eased of this labour, by the comming of them all three, who euen then entred the Chamber. *Don Quixote* no sooner saw them, but said thus vnto them;

My good Sirs, giue me some new yecres gift, I am no more *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, but rather *Alonso Quixano*, vnto whom my honest life and ciuill conuersation hath heretofore appropriated the surname of *Good*. I am now a professed enemy to *Amadis de Gaule*, and of all the infinit rabble of his race. Now are all the prophane Histories of Errant Chiuallry hateful vnto me; I now acknowledge my folly, and perceiue the danger whereinto the reading of them hath brought me. But now, by the meere mercy of my God, become wise, at my owne proper cost and charges, I vtterly abhorre them. When these three friends heard him speake so, they belieued vndoubtedly, that he was possessed with some new-kind of foolishnesse. My Lord *Don Quixote* (said *Samson* vnto him) now that the newes are come vnto vs, that the Lady *Dulcinea* of *Toboso* is disenchantred, doe you speake in this manner? And now that we are so neere hand to become shepheards, that so vve may in singing mirth and iollity lead a kinde of Princely life, doe you intend to become a Hermite?

Hold your peace, I pray you (replied *Don Quixote*) recollect your wits together, and let vs leaue all these discourses: That, which hath hitherto serued mee to my hurt and detriment, my death, by the assistance of heauen, shall turne to my good, and redound to my profit. Good sir, I perceiue and feele death to follow mee at my heeles. Let vs leaue off, and quit

quit all increments and iesting, and let mee haue a Confessor to shrift mee, and a Notary to draw my last Will and Testament. In the extremity whereunto I now finde and feele my selfe, a man must not make a iest of his soule: and therefore whilest Master Curate is taking of my Confession, let mee haue a Scriuener fetcht.

They stood all gazing one vpon another, wondring at *Don Quixote's* sound reasons, although they made some doubt to belieue them. One of the signes which induced them to coniecture, that he was neere vnto Deaths dore, was, that vwith such facility hee was from a starke foole become a wise man. For, to the words already alleadged, he added many more so significant so Christian-like, and so well couched, that without doubt they confidently beleueed that *Don Quixote* was become a right wise man. The Curate made all those who were in the Chamber to auoid, and being left alone with him, tooke his Confession. The Bachelor *Carraasco* went to finde out a Notary, who not long after came with him, and with *Sancho Panza*. This good Squire hauing vnderstood from the mouth of the Bachelor, that his Master was in a very bad estate, and finding his Maid-seruant and his Neece weeping very bitterly, began like a mad-man with his owne fists to thump and beate himselfe, and to shed brackish teares.

The Confession being ended, the Curate came forth, and was heard to vtter these words; Verily, verily, he is at his last gaspe, and verily the good *Alonso Quixano* is become wise, and it is high time for him to make his last Will and Testament.

These heauy newes opened the sluices of the teares-full and swolne-blubbering eyes of the maid, of the Nieces, and of his good Squire *Sancho Panza*; so that they showed forth whole fountains of teares, and fetched from the very bottom of their aggrieued hearts, a thousand groaning sighes. For, in effect (as we haue already declared elsewhere) whilst *Don Quixote* was simply the good *Alonso Quixano*, and likewise vwhen he was *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, he was euer of a milde and affable disposition, and of a kinde and pleasing conuersation: and

and therefore was he not onely beloued of all his houshold, but also of all those that knew him.

In the meane space the Notary came, who after hee had written the beginning of his Will; and that *Don Quixote* had disposed of his soule, with all the circumstances required and necessarie in a true Christian: and that hee was come vnto the Legacies, he caused this to be written. *Item*, concerning a certaine summe of money, which *Sancho Panza*, whom I made my Squire, whilest my folly possessed me, hath yet in his custody. For so much as betweene him and me, there remaine certaine odde reckonings and accounts to bee made vp, of what he hath receiued, and laid out, my will and pleasure is, that he be not tyde to yeeld any account at all, nor bee in any bond for it: Nay rather, if any ouer-plus remaine in his hands, hauing first fully paid and satisfied him of what I owe and am endebed to him (which is no great matter,) my purpose is, that it be absolutely his owne, and much good may it do him.

And as being then a foole, I was the cause that hee had the Gouernment of an Iland giuen him, I would to God (now I am wise and in my perfect senses) it were in my power to giue him a Kingdome: For, the sinceritie of his minde, and the fidelitie of his comportments doe well deserue it. Then addressing himselfe vnto *Sancho*, he made this speech vnto him, My deare friend, pardon mee, that I haue giuen thee occasion to seeme a foole as I was, in making thee to fall into the same errour wherein I was false, that in the world there haue beene, and still are Errant Knights.

Alas and welladay, my good Sir, answered *Sancho* throbbing and weeping; yeeld not vnto death I pray you, but rather follow my counsell; which is, that you endeouour to liue many faire yeeres. The greatest folly that any man can commit in this world, is to giue himselfe ouer vnto death without apparent cause, except he be wilfully slaine, or that no other hand bring him to his end, but that of melancholy.

Once more I beseech you, suffer not remissionne or faint-heartednes to ouercome you. Rather rise out of your bed, and let vs go into the fields attired like Shepheards, as we were



once resolved to doe. It may come to passe, that we behinde some bush or shrub shall finde the Lady Madame *Dulcinea* dis-enchanted, so that we shall haue no more businelle. If the vexation or irkesomenesse you feele to haue been vanquished, attempt to bring you vnto death, let me vndertake the blame, who will stoutly maintaine in all places, and before all men, that you were ouerthrowne and quelled, because I had not well gyrt your Palfrey *Rosinante*.

And you haue seene and read in your Bookes of Chiuallry, that it is an ordinarie thing for one Knight to thrust another out of his saddle; and that he who is to day conquered, is to morrow a conquerour.

It is most true (quoth *Samson*) and *Sancho Panza* relates the very truth of such accidents.

My Sirs, (replied *Don Quixote*) I pray you goe not on so fast, since that in the nests of the last yeere, there are no birds of this yeere. Whilome I was a foole, but now I am wise: Sometimes I was *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, but am now (as I haue already told you) the good *Alonso Quixano*. Let my vnfaigned repentance, and the truth of what I say, obtaine this fauour at your courteous hands, that you will haue the same estimation of me now, which you haue had heretofore. And so let Master Notary proceed.

Item, I make and institute my Neece *Antoinette Quixana*, (who is heere present) generall heyre of all my goods whatsoever, hauing first deducted out of them all, that shall be necessary for the full accomplishment of the Legacies which I haue bequeathed: And the first thing I would haue discharged, I purpose, shall bee the wages which I owe vnto my Maid-seruant; and that, ouer and besides, she haue twenty ducats deliuered vnto her, to buy her some good clothes withall.

Item, I appoint and institute Master Curate, and Master *Samson Carrasco* the Bachelor heere present, to be the ouerseers and Executors of this my last Will and Testament.

Item, my will and pleasure is, that if *Antoinette Quixana* my Neece chance to marry, that it be to a man of whom diligent enquiry shall first be made, that he is vtterly ignorant of

bookes

bookes of Chiuallrie, and that he neuer heard speech of them. And if it should happen, that hee haue read them, and that notwithstanding my Neece will, or take him to her Husband, that she vtterly lose, and neuer haue any thing that I haue bequeathed her as an inheritance, all which, my Executors and Assignes may, at their pleasure as shall seeme good vnto them, imploy and distribute in pious vses.

Item, I intreat the said Executors and Ouer-seers of my Will, that if by good fortune, they come to the knowledge of the Author, who is said to haue composed an History, which goes from hand to hand, vnder the Title of The second part of the heroike feates of Armes of *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, they shall in my behalfe most affectionately desire him to pardon me; for that I haue vnawares giuen them occasion to write so infinite a number of great extrauagancies and idle impertinencies: for so much as I depart out of this life with this scruple vpon my conscience, to haue giuen him subiect and cause to publish them to the world.

He had no sooner ended his discourse, and signed and sealed his Will and Testament, but a swooning and faintnesse surprising him, he stretched himselfe the full length of his bed. All the company were much distracted and mooued thereat, and ranne presently to help him: And during the space of three dayes, that he liued after he had made his will, he did swoune and fall into trances almost euery houre.

All the house was in a confusion and vprore: All which notwithstanding the Neece ceased not to feede very deuoutly; the Maid-seruant to drinke profoundly, and *Sancho* to liue merrily. For, when a man is in hope to inherit any thing, that hope doth deface, or at least moderate in the minde of the inheritor the remembrance or feeling of the sorrow and grieve, which of reason he should haue a feeling of the Testators death.

To conclude, the last day of *Don Quixote* came, after he had receiued all the Sacraments; and had by many and goodly reasons made demonstration to abhorre all the Booke of Errant Chiuallry.

The Notary was present at his death, and reporteth, how he had neuer read or found in any book of Chiualrie, that any Errant Knight died in his bed, so mildly, so quietly, and so Christianly as did *Don Quixote*.

Amidst the wailefull plaints, and blubbering teares of the by-standers, he yeelded vp the ghost, that is to say, hee died, which the Curate perceiuing, he desired the Notary to make him an attestation or certificate, how *Alonso Quixano*, surnamed the good, and who was commonly called *Don Quixote de la Mancha*, he was deceased out of this life vnto another, and dyed of a naturall death. Which testificate he desired, to remoue all occasions from some Authors, except *Cid Hamete Benengeli* falsely to raise him from death againe, and write endlesse histories of his famous acts.

This was the end of the ingenious Gentleman *de la Mancha*, of whose birth-place *Cid Hamete* hath not beene pleased to declare manifestly the situation vnto vs, to the end that all Villages, Townes, Boroughs and Hamlets of *la Mancha* should contest, quarrell, and dispute among themselues the honor to haue produced him, as did the seuen Cities of Greece for the loue of *Homer*: wee haue not beene willing to make mention and relate in this place, the dolefull plaints of *Sancho*; nor those of the Neece and Maid-seruant of *Don Quixote*, nor likewise the sundry new and quaint Epitaphs which were grauen ouer his tombe; Content your selfe with this which the Bachelor *Samson Carrasco* placed there.

*Heere lyes the Gentle Knight, and stout,  
That to that height of valour got,  
As if you marke his deeds throughout,  
Death on his life triumphed not  
With bringing of his death about.*

*The world as nothing hee did prize,  
For as a Scar-crow in mens eyes,  
He liu'd, and was their Bug-beare too;  
And had the luck with much adoe,  
To line a foole, and yet die wise.*

In

In the meane while, the wise and prudent *Cid Hamete Benengeli* addrest this speech vnto his writing pen: Heere it is (oh my slender quill, whether thou be ill or well cut) that thou shalt abide hanged vpon those racks whereon they hang spits and broaches, being there-unto fastned with this copper wire: There shalt thou liue many ages, except some rash, fond-hardy and lewd Historian take thee downe to profane thee. Neuerthelesse, before they lay hands vpon thee, thou maist, as it were by way of aduertisement, and as well as thou canst, boldly tell them, Away, packe hence, stand a farre off, you wicked botchers, and vngracious Souters, and touch me not, since to me onely it belongs to cause to be imprinted *Cum bono Privilegio Regia Maiestatis*. *Don Quixote* was born for me alone, and I had my birth onely for him. If he hath been able to producethe effects, I haue had the glory to know how to write & compile them well. To be short, He & I are but one selfe-same thing, maugre & in despite of the fabulous Scribler *de Tordesillas*, who hath rashly and malapertly dared with an Estridge course and bungling pen, to write the prowesse and high Feates of Armes of my valorous Knight.

This fardle is too-too heauy for his weake shoulders, and his dull wit ouer-cold & frozen for such an enterprife. And if peraduenture thou know him, thou shalt also aduise him to suffer the weary and already rotten bones of *Don Quixote* to rest in his Sepulcher: For, it would be too great a cruelty, if contrary to all Orders and Decrees of Death, he should go about to make shew of him in Castila the olde, where in good sooth he lyeth within a Sepulchre, layd all along, and vnable to make a third iourney and a new outrode. It is sufficient to mocke those that so many wandring Knights haue made, that those two whereof he hath made shew vnto the world, to the generall applause, and vniuersall content of all Peoples and Nations that haue had knowledge of them, as well thorow the whole Countries of Spaine, as in all other forreigne Kingdomes. Thus shalt thou performe what a good Chrillian is bound to do, in giuing good counsell to him that wissheth thee euill. As for mee, I shall rest contented and well satisfied to

K k 3

haue

haue beene the first that hath fully enioyed the fruites of his writings, and that according to my desires; since I neuer desired any other thing, then that men would vtterly abhor the fabulous impertinent and extrauagant bookes of Chiuallries: And to say truth, by meanes of my true *Don Quixote*, they begin already to stagger; for, vndoubtedly such fables and flim-flam tales will shortly faile, and I hope shall neuer rise againe.  
Farewell.

**F I N I S.**